This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

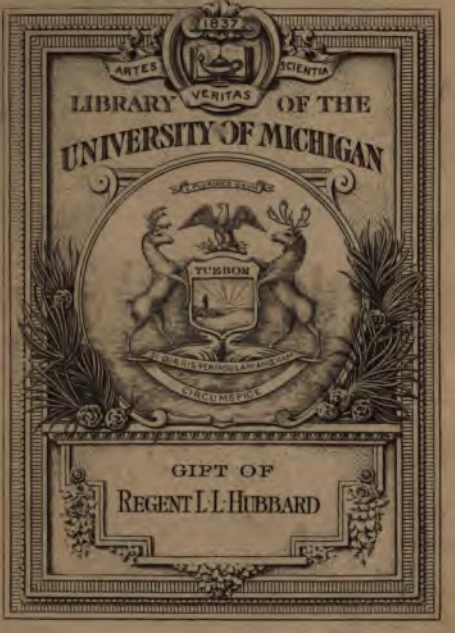
+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`


1837
ARTES
SCIENTIA
VERITAS
LIBRARY OF THE
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
TUEBOR
GIFT OF
REGENT L. L. HUBBARD

PR
V.2

ARTES
LIBRARY
UNIVERSITY
GIFT O
REGENT L·L·HU

THE

WORKS

OF

Dr JONATHAN SWIFT,

Dean of St PATRICK's, DUBLIN.

VOL. II.

EDINBURGH:

Printed for G. HAMILTON, J. BALFOUR, & L. HUNTER.

M,DCC,LVII.

CONTENTS.

Gulliver's travels 1
The publisher to the reader 3
Gulliver's letter to his cousin Sympson 5

PART I.

A VOYAGE TO LILLIPUT.

Chap. I. The author gives some account of himself and family. His first inducements to travel. He is ship-wrecked and swims for his life; gets safe on shore in the country of Lilliput; is made a prisoner, and carried up the country 10

Chap. II. The Emperor of Lilliput, attended by several of the nobility, comes to see the author in his confinement. The Emperor's person and habit described. Learned men appointed to teach the author their language. He gains favour by his mild disposition. His pockets are searched, and his sword and pistols taken from him 21

Chap. III. The author diverts the Emperor and his nobility of both sexes in a very uncommon manner. The diversions of the court of Lilliput described. The author has his liberty granted him upon certain conditions 31

Chap. IV. Mildendo, the metropolis of Lilliput, described, together with the Emperor's palace. A conversation between the author and a principal secretary concerning the affairs of that empire. The author's offers to serve the Emperor in his wars 38

Chap. V. The author, by an extraordinary stratagem, prevents an invasion. A high title of honour is conferred upon him. Ambassadors arrive from the Emperor of Blefuscu, and sue for peace. The Empress's apartment on fire by an accident; the author instrumental in saving the rest of the palace. 43

Chap. VI. Of the inhabitants of Lilliput; their learning, laws, and customs, the manner of educating their chil-

dren. The author's way of living in that country. His vindication of a great lady 49

Chap. VII. The author, being informed of a deſign to accuſe him of high treaſon, makes his eſcape to Blefuſcu. His reception there 59

Chap. VIII. The author, by a lucky accident, finds means to leave Blefuſcu; and, after ſome difficulties, returns ſafe to his native country 67

PART II.

A VOYAGE TO BROBDINGNAG.

Chap. I. A great ſtorm deſcribed, the longboat ſent to fetch water, the author goes with it to diſcover the country. He is left on ſhore, is ſeized by one of the natives, and carried to a farmer's houſe. His reception, with ſeveral accidents that happened there. A deſcription of the inhabitants 74

Chap. II. A deſcription of the farmer's daughter. The author carried to a market-town, and then to the metropolis. The particulars of his journey 86

Chap. III. The author ſent for to court. The Queen buys him of his maſter the farmer, and preſents him to the King. He diſputes with his Majeſty's great ſcholars. An apartment at court provided for the author. He is in high favour with the Queen. He ſtands up for the honour of his own country. His quarrels with the Queen's dwarf 91

Chap. IV. The country deſcribed. A propoſal for correcting modern maps. The King's palace, and ſome account of the metropolis. The author's way of travelling. The chief temple deſcribed 101

Chap. V. Several adventures that happened to the author. The execution of a criminal. The author ſhews his ſkill in navigation 106

Chap. VI. Several contrivances of the author to pleaſe the King and Queen. He ſhews his ſkill in muſic. The King inquires into the ſtate of England, which the author relates to him. The King's obſervations thereon 115

Chap.

Chap. VII. The author's love of his country. He makes a propoſal of much advantage to the King, which is rejected. The King's great ignorance in politics. The learning of that country very imperfect and confined. The laws, and military affairs, and parties in the ſtate. 123

Chap. VIII. The King and Queen make a progreſs to the frontiers. The author attends them. The manner in which he leaves the country very particularly related. He returns to England 130

PART III.

A VOYAGE TO LAPUTA, BALNIBARBI, LUGGNAGG, GLUBBDUBDRIB, and JAPAN.

Chap. I. The author ſets out on his third voyage, is taken by pirates. The malice of a Dutchman. His arrival at an iſland. He is received into Laputa 142

Chap. II. The humours and diſpoſitions of the Laputians deſcribed. An account of their learning. Of the King, and his court. The author's reception there. The inhabitants ſubject to fear and diſquietudes. An account of the women 149

Chap. III. A phænomenon ſolved by modern philoſophy and aſtronomy. The Laputians *great* improvements in the latter. The King's method of ſuppreſſing inſurrections 157

Chap. IV. The author leaves Laputa, is conveyed to Balnibarbi, arrives at the metropolis. A deſcription of the metropolis, and the country adjoining. The author hoſpitably received by a great lord. His converſation with that lord 161

Chap. V. The author permitted to ſee the grand academy of Lagado. The academy largely deſcribed. The arts wherein the profeſſors employ themſelves 164

Chap. VI. A further account of the academy. The author propoſes ſome improvements, which are honourably received 175

Chap. VII. The author leaves Lagado, arrives at Maldonada. No ſhip ready. He takes a ſhort voyage to Glubbdubdrib. His reception by the governor 181

Chap. VIII. A further account of Glubbdubdrib. Antient and modern history corrected 191

Chap. IX. The author returns to Maldonada. Sails to the kingdom of Luggnagg. The author confined. He is sent for to court. The manner of his admittance. The King's great lenity to his subjects 202.

Chap. X. The Luggnuggians commended. A particular description of the Struldbrugs, with many conversations between the author and some eminent persons upon that subject 205.

Chap. XI. The author leaves Luggnagg, and sails to Japan. From thence he returns in a Dutch ship to Amsterdam, and from Amsterdam to England 215.

PART IV.

A VOYAGE TO THE COUNTRY OF THE HOUYHNHNMS.

Chap. I. The author sets out as Captain of a ship. His men conspire against him, confine him a long time to his cabin, set him on shore in an unknown land. He travels up into the country. The Yahoos, a strange sort of animal, described. The author meets two Houyhnhnms 219

Chap. II. The author conducted by a Houyhnhnm to his house. The house described. The author's reception. The food of the Houyhnhnms. The author in distress for want of meat, is at last relieved. His manner of feeding in this country 230

Chap. III. The author studious to learn the language; the Houyhnhnm, his master, assists in teaching him. The language described. Several Houyhnhnms of quality came out of curiosity to see the author. He gives his master a short account of his voyage. 236

Chap. IV. The Houyhnhnms notion of truth and falsehood. The author's discourse disapproved by his master. The author gives a more particular account of himself, and the accidents of his voyage 241

Chap. V. The author, at his master's commands, informs him of the state of England. The causes of war among the Princes of Europe. The author begins to explain the English constitution 246.

Chap.

Chap. VI. A continuation of the ſtate of England under Queen Anne. The character of a firſt miniſter of ſtate in European courts 253

Chap. VII. The author's great love of his native country. His maſter's obſervations upon the conſtitution and adminiſtration of England, as deſcribed by the author, with parallel caſes and compariſons. His maſter's obſervations upon human nature 259

Chap. VIII. The author relates ſeveral particulars of the Yahoos. The great virtues of the Houyhnhnms. The education and exerciſe of their youth. Their general aſſembly 266

Chap. IX. A grand debate at the general aſſembly of the Houyhnhnms, and how it was determined. The learning of the Houyhnhnms. Their buildings. Their manner of burials. The defectiveneſs of their language 272

Chap. X. The author's œconomy, and happy life, among the Houyhnhnms. His great improvement in virtue by converſing with them. Their converſations. The author hath notice given him by his maſter, that he muſt depart from the country. He falls into a ſwoon for grief; but ſubmits. He contrives and finiſhes a canoe by the help of a fellow-ſervant, and puts to ſea at a venture 277

Chap. XI. The author's dangerous voyage. He arrives at New Holland, hoping to ſettle there. Is wounded with an arrow by one of the natives. Is ſeized, and carried by force into a Portugueſe ſhip. The great civilities of the Captain. The author arrives at England 284

Chap. XII. The author's veracity. His deſign in publiſhing this work. His cenſure of thoſe travellers who ſwerve from the truth. The author clears himſelf from any ſiniſter ends in writing. An objection anſwered. The method of planting colonies. His native country commended. The right of the crown to thoſe countries deſcribed by the author, is juſtified. The difficulty of conquering them. The author takes his laſt leave of the reader; propoſes his manner of living for the future; gives good advice, and concludes 292

A tritical eſſay upon the faculties of the mind 299
Predictions for the year 1708; by Iſaac Bickerſtaff, Eſq; 305
An account of the death of Mr Partridge the almanack-maker 315
'Squire Bickerſtaff detected; by John Partridge 318
A true and impartial account of the proceedings of Iſaac Bickerſtaff Eſq; againſt me 319
A vindication of Iſaac Bickerſtaff Eſq; 325
A famous prediction of Merlin the Britiſh wizard 331
The wonderful wonder of wonders 336
The wonder of all the wonders that ever the world wondered at 341
A propoſal for correcting, improving, and aſcertaining the Engliſh tongue 344
Some free thoughts upon the preſent ſtate of affairs 362
Thoughts on various ſubjects 383

THE PUBLISHER TO THE READER.

THE author of these travels, Mr Lemuel Gulliver, is my antient and intimate friend; there is likewise some relation between us on the mother's side. About three years ago Mr Gulliver, growing weary of the concourse of curious people coming to him at his house in Redriff, made a small purchase of land with a convenient house near Newark in Nottinghamshire, his native country; where he now lives retired, yet in good esteem among his neighbours.

Altho' Mr. Gulliver was born in Nottinghamshire, where his father dwelt, yet I have heard him say, his family came from Oxfordshire; to confirm which, I have observed in the church-yard at Banbury in that county several tombs and monuments of the Gullivers.

Before he quitted Redriff, he left the custody of the following papers in my hands, with the liberty to dispose of them as I should think fit. I have carefully perused them three times: the style is very plain and simple; and the only fault I find, is, that the author, after the manner of travellers, is a little too circumstantial. There is an air of truth apparent thro' the whole; and indeed the author was so distinguished for his veracity, that it became a sort of a proverb among his neighbours at Redriff, when any one affirmed a thing, to say it was as true as if Mr Gulliver had spoken it.

By the advice of several worthy persons, to whom, with the author's permission, I communicated these papers, I

now venture to ſend them into the world, hoping they may be, at leaſt for ſome time, a better entertainment to our young noblemen, than the common ſcribblers of politics and party.

THIS volume would have been at leaſt twice as large, if I had not made bold to ſtrike out innumerable paſſages relating to the winds and tides, as well as to the variations and bearings in the ſeveral voyages, together with the minute deſcriptions of the management of the ſhip in ſtorms in the ſtyle of ſailors; likewiſe the account of longitudes and latitudes; wherein I have reaſon to apprehend that Mr Gulliver may be a little diſſatisfied: but I was reſolved to fit the work as much as poſſible to the general capacity of readers. However, if my own ignorance in ſea-affairs ſhall have led me to commit ſome miſtakes, I alone am anſwerable for them; and, if any traveller hath a curioſity to ſee the whole work at large, as it came from the hand of the author, I will be ready to gratify him.

As for any further particulars relating to the author, the reader will receive ſatisfaction from the firſt pages of the book.

RICHARD SYMPSON.

A

LETTER

FROM

Capt. GULLIVER to his Couſin *Sympſon*.

[Written in the year 1727.]

I HOPE you will be ready to own publicly, whenever you ſhall be called to it, that by your great and frequent urgency you prevailed on me to publiſh a very looſe and uncorrect account of my travels, with direction to hire ſome young gentleman of either univerſity to put them in order, and correct the ſtyle, as my couſin Dampier did by my advice in his book called *A voyage round the world*. But I do not remember I gave you power to conſent, that any thing ſhould be omitted, and much leſs that any thing ſhould be inſerted: therefore, as to the latter, I do here renounce every thing of that kind; particularly a paragraph about her Majeſty Queen Anne, of moſt pious and glorious memory; altho' I did reverence and eſteem her more than any of the human ſpecies. But you or your interpolator, ought to have conſidered, that as it was not my inclination, ſo was it not decent to praiſe any animal of our compoſition before my maſter Houyhnhnm: and beſides, the fact was altogether falſe; for, to my knowledge, being in England during ſome part of her Majeſty's reign, ſhe did govern by a chief miniſter; nay even by two ſucceſſively, the firſt whereof was the Lord of Godolphin, and the ſecond the Lord of Oxford; ſo that you made me *ſay the thing that was not*. Likewiſe in the account of the academy of projectors, and ſeveral paſſages of my diſcourſe to my maſter Houyhnhnm; you have either omitted ſome material circumſtances, or mixed or

changed them in ſuch a manner, that I do hardly know mine own work. When I formerly hinted to you ſomething of this in a letter, you were pleaſed to anſwer, that you were afraid of giving offence; that people in power were very watchful over the preſs, and apt not only to interpret, but to puniſh every thing which looked like an innuendo (as I think you call it.) But, pray how could that which I ſpoke ſo many years ago, and at above five thouſand leagues diſtance, in another reign, be applied to any of the Yahoos, who now are ſaid to govern the herd; eſpecially at a time when I little thought on, or feared the unhappineſs of living under them? have not I the moſt reaſon to complain, when I ſee theſe very Yahoos carried by Houyhnhnms in a vehicle, as if theſe were brutes and thoſe the rational creatures; and indeed to avoid ſo monſtrous and deteſtable a ſight was one principal motive of my retirement hither.

THUS much I thought proper to tell you in relation to yourſelf, and to the truſt I repoſed in you.

I do in the next place complain of my own great want of judgment, in being prevailed upon by the intreaties and falſe reaſonings of you and ſome others, very much againſt my own opinion, to ſuffer my travels to be publiſhed. Pray bring to your mind how often I deſired you to conſider, when you inſiſted on the motive of *public good*, that the Yahoos were a ſpecies of animals utterly incapable of amendment by precepts or example: and ſo it hath proved; for, inſtead of ſeeing a full ſtop put to all abuſes and corruptions, at leaſt in this little iſland, as I had reaſon to expect; behold, after above ſix months warning, I cannot learn that my book has produced one ſingle effect according to mine intentions. I deſired you would let me know by a letter, when party and faction were extinguiſhed; judges learned and upright; pleaders honeſt and modeſt, with ſome tincture of common ſenſe; and Smithfield blazing with pyramids of law-books: the young nobility's education entirely changed; the phyſicians baniſhed; the female Yahoos abounding in virtue, honour, truth, and good ſenſe; courts and levees of great miniſters thoroughly weeded and ſwept; *wit*, merit, and learning rewarded; all diſgracers of the

preſs

preſs in proſe and verſe condemned to eat nothing but their own cotton, and quench their thirſt with their own ink. Theſe, and a thouſand other reformations, I firmly counted upon by your encouragement; as indeed they were plainly deducible from the precepts delivered in my book. And it muſt be owned, that ſeven months were a ſufficient time to correct every vice and folly to which Yahoos are ſubject, if their natures had been capable of the leaſt diſpoſition to virtue or wiſdom: yet, ſo far have you been from anſwering mine expectation in any of your letters; that on the contrary you are loading our carrier every week with libels, and keys, and reflections, and memoirs, and ſecond parts; wherein I ſee myſelf accuſed of reflecting upon great ſtates-folk; of degrading human nature (for ſo they have ſtill the confidence to ſtile it) and of abuſing the female ſex. I find likewiſe that the writers of thoſe bundles are not agreed among themſelves; for ſome of them will not allow me to be the author of mine own travels; and others make me author of books, to which I am wholly a ſtranger.

I find likewiſe, that your printer hath been ſo careleſs as to confound the times, and miſtake the dates of my ſeveral voyages and returns; neither aſſigning the true year, nor the true month, nor day of the month: and I hear the original manuſcript is all deſtroyed ſince the publication of my book; neither have I any copy left: however, I have ſent you ſome corrections, which you may inſert, if ever there ſhould be a ſecond edition; and yet I cannot ſtand to them; but ſhall leave that matter to my judicious and candid readers to adjuſt it as they pleaſe.

I hear ſome of our ſea-Yahoos find fault with my ſea-language, as not proper in many parts, nor now in uſe. I cannot help it. In my firſt voyages, while I was young, I was inſtructed by the oldeſt mariners, and learned to ſpeak as they did. But I have ſince found that the ſea-Yahoos are apt, like the land ones, to become new-fangled in their words, which the latter change every year; inſomuch, as I remember, upon each return to mine own country, their old dialect was ſo altered, that I could hardly underſtand the new. And I obſerve, when any Yahoo comes from London out of curioſity to viſit me

at mine own houſe, we neither of us are able to deliver our conceptions in a manner intelligible to the other.

If the cenſure of the Yahoos could any way affect me, I ſhould have great reaſon to complain, that ſome of them are ſo bold as to think my book of travels a mere fiction out of mine own brain; and have gone ſo far as to drop hints, that the Houyhnhnms and Yahoos have no more exiſtence than the inhabitants of Utopia.

Indeed I muſt confeſs, that as to the people of Lilliput, Brobdingrag (for ſo the word ſhould have been ſpelt, and not erroneouſly Brobdingnag) and Laputa, I have never yet heard of any Yahoo ſo preſumptuous as to diſpute their being, or the facts I have related concerning them; becauſe the truth immediately ſtrikes every reader with conviction. And is there leſs probability in my account of the Houyhnhnms or Yahoos, when it is manifeſt as to the latter, there are ſo many thouſands, even in this city, who only differ from their brother brutes in Houyhnhnm-land, becauſe they uſe a ſort of jabber, and do not go naked? I wrote for their amendment, and not their approbation. The united praiſe of the whole race would be of leſs conſequence to me than the neighing of thoſe two degenerate Houyhnhnms I keep in my ſtable; becauſe from theſe, degenerate as they are, I ſtill improve in ſome virtues without any mixture of vice.

Do theſe miſerable animals preſume to think, that I am ſo degenerated as to defend my veracity? Yahoo as I am, it is well known thro' all Houyhnhnm-land, that, by the inſtructions and example of my illuſtrious maſter, I was able in the compaſs of two years (altho' I confeſs with the utmoſt difficulty) to remove that infernal habit of lying, ſhuffling, deceiving, and equivocating, ſo deeply rooted in the very ſouls of all my ſpecies; eſpecially the Europeans.

I have other complaints to make upon this vexatious occaſion; but I forbear troubling myſelf or you any further. I muſt freely confeſs, that ſince my laſt return ſome corruptions of my Yahoo nature have revived in me by converſing with a few of your ſpecies, and particularly thoſe of mine own family, by an unavoidable neceſſity; elſe

elſe I ſhould never have attempted ſo abſurd a project as that of reforming the Yahoo race in this kingdom: but I have now done with all ſuch viſionary ſchemes for ever.

April 2. 1727.

*** That the original copy of theſe travels was altered by the perſon thro' whoſe hands it was conveyed to the preſs, is a fact; but the paſſages of which Mr. Gulliver complains in this letter are to be found only in the firſt editions; for the Dean having reſtored the text wherever it had been altered, ſent the copy to the late Mr. Motte by the hands of Mr. Charles Ford. This copy has been exactly followed in every ſubſequent edition, except that printed in Ireland by George Falkener: the editor of which, ſuppoſing the Dean to be ſerious when he mentioned the corruptions of dates, and yet finding them unaltered, thought fit to alter them himſelf; there is however ſcarce one of theſe alterations in which he has not committed a blunder: tho' while he was thus buſy in defacing the parts that were perfect, he ſuffered the accidental blemiſhes of others to remain. *Hawkeſ.*——See the preface to this edition.

A

VOYAGE

TO

LILLIPUT.

CHAP. I.

The author gives ſome account of himſelf and family; his firſt inducements to travel. He is ſhipwrecked, and ſwims for his life; gets ſafe on ſhore in the country of Lilliput; is made a priſoner, and carried up the country.

MY father had a ſmall eſtate in Nottinghamſhire; I was the third of five ſons. He ſent me to Emanuel college in Cambridge at fourteen years old, where I reſided three years, and applied myſelf cloſe to my ſtudies; but the charge of maintaining

Theſe voyages are intended as a moral political romance, in which Swift ſeems to have exerted the ſtrongeſt efforts of a fine irregular genius. But while his imagination and his wit delight, the venomous ſtrokes of his ſatire, altho' in ſome places juſt, are carried into ſo univerſal a ſeverity, that not only all human actions, but human nature itſelf, is placed in the worſt light.—Perfection in every attribute is not indeed allotted to particular men; but, among the whole ſpecies, we diſcover ſuch an aſſemblage of all the great and amiable virtues, as may convince us, that the original order of nature contains in it the greateſt beauty. It is directed in a right line, but it deviates into curves and irregular motions, by various alterations and diſturbing cauſes. Different qualifications ſhine out in different men. BACON and NEWTON (not to mention BOYLE) ſhew the divine extent of the human mind: of which power Swift could not be inſenſible; but his diſappointments rendered him ſplenetic, and angry with the whole world.——Education, *habit, and conſtitution*, give a ſurpriſing variety of characters; and while

taining me, altho' I had a very ſcanty allowance, being too great for a narrow fortune, I was bound apprentice to Mr James Bates, an eminent ſurgeon in London, with whom I continued four years; and my father now and then ſending me ſmall ſums of money, I laid them out in learning navigation, and other parts of the mathematics, uſeful to thoſe who intend to travel, as I always believed it would be ſome time or other my fortune to do. When I left Mr Bates, I went down to my father; where, by the aſſiſtance of him and my uncle John, and ſome other

while they produce ſome particular qualities, are apt to check others. Fortitude of mind ſeldom attends a ſedentary life: nor is the man whoſe ambitious views are croſſed, ſcarce ever afterwards endued with benevolence of heart. The ſame mind that is capable of exerting the greateſt virtue, by ſome defect in the firſt ſteps of education often degenerates into the greateſt vice. Theſe effects take their ſource from cauſes almoſt mechanical. The ſoul, in our preſent ſituation, is blended and incloſed with corporeal ſubſtance, and the matter of which our body is compoſed, produces ſtrange impulſes upon the mind.——To correct vice, by ſhewing her deformity, in oppoſition to the beauty of virtue, and to amend the falſe ſyſtems of philoſophy, by pointing out the errors, and applying ſalutary means to avoid them, is a noble deſign, and was, I would fain flatter myſelf, the general intent of this hieroglyphic writer.——Gulliver's travels are chiefly to be looked upon as an irregular eſſay of Swift's peculiar wit and humour. The inhabitants of Lilliput are repreſented, as if reflected from a concave mirror, by which every object is reduced to a deſpicable minuteneſs. The inhabitants of Brobdingnag, by a contrary mirror, are enlarged to a ſhocking deformity. In Lilliput we behold a ſet of puny inſects, or animalcules in human ſhape, ridiculouſly engaged in affairs of importance. In Brobdingnag the monſters of enormous ſize are employed in trifles.——In the two firſt parts there are many ridiculous adventures, even ſuch as muſt have excited mirth from Heraclitus. Where indelicacies do not intervene, the narrative is very entertaining and humorous. In ſome parts, Gulliver ſeems to have had particular incidents, if not particular perſons in his view. His obſervations on education are uſeful: and ſo are his improvements on the inſtitutions of Lycurgus. *Orrery.*

other relations, I got forty pounds, and a promiſe of thirty pounds a-year to maintain me at Leyden: there I ſtudied phyſic two years and ſeven months, knowing it would be uſeful in long voyages.

Soon after my return from Leyden, I was recommended by my good maſter Mr Bates to be ſurgeon to the Swallow, captain Abraham Pannel commander; with whom I continued three years and a half, making a voyage or two into the Levant, and ſome other parts. When I came back, I reſolved to ſettle in London; to which Mr Bates, my maſter, encouraged me, and by him I was recommended to ſeveral patients. I took part of a ſmall houſe in the Old-Jury; and being adviſed to alter my condition, I married Mrs Mary Burton, ſecond daughter to Mr Edmund Burton hoſier in Newgate-ſtreet, with whom I received four hundred pounds for a portion.

But, my good maſter Bates dying in two years after, and I having few friends, my buſineſs began to fail; for my conſcience would not ſuffer me to imitate the bad practice of too many among my brethren. Having therefore conſulted with my wife, and ſome of my acquaintance, I determined to go again to ſea. I was ſurgeon ſucceſſively in two ſhips, and made ſeveral voyages for ſix years to the Eaſt and Weſt Indies, by which I got ſome addition to my fortune. My hours of leiſure I ſpent in reading the beſt authors, antient and modern, being always provided with a good number of books; and when I was aſhore, in obſerving the manners and diſpoſitions of the people, as well as learning their language, wherein I had a great facility by the ſtrength of my memory.

The laſt of theſe voyages not proving very fortunate, I grew weary of the ſea, and intended to ſtay at home with my wife and family. I removed from the Old-Jury to Fetter-lane, and from thence to Wapping, hoping to get buſineſs among the ſailors; but it would not turn to account. After three years expectation that things would mend, I accepted an advantageous offer from Cap. William Prichard, maſter of the Antelope, who mas making a voyage to the South-ſea. We ſet ſail from Briſtol, May 4. 1699: and our voyage at firſt was very proſperous.

It would not be proper, for ſome reaſons, to trouble the reader with the particulars of our adventures in thoſe ſeas.

ſeas. Let it ſuffice to inform him, that, in our paſſage from thence to the Eaſt-Indies, we were driven by a violent ſtorm to the north-weſt of Van Diemen's land. By an obſervation we found ourſelves in the latitude of 30 degrees 2 minutes ſouth. Twelve of our crew were dead by immoderate labour, and ill food; the reſt were in a very weak condition. On the 5th of November, which was the beginning of ſummer in thoſe parts, the weather being very hazy, the ſeamen ſpied a rock within half a cable's length of the ſhip; but the wind was ſo ſtrong, that we were driven directly upon it, and immediately ſplit. Six of the crew, of whom I was one, having let down the boat into the ſea, made a ſhift to get clear of the ſhip and the rock. We rowed, by my computation, about three leagues, till we were able to work no longer, being already ſpent with labour while we were in the ſhip. We therefore truſted ourſelves to the mercy of the waves, and in about half an hour the boat was overſet by a ſudden flurry from the north. What became of my companions in the boat, as well as of thoſe who eſcaped on the rock, or were left in the veſſel, I cannot tell; but conclude they were all loſt. For my own part, I ſwam as fortune directed me, and was puſhed forward by wind and tide. I often let my legs drop, and could feel no bottom: but when I was almoſt gone, and able to ſtruggle no longer, I found myſelf within my depth; and by this time the ſtorm was much abated. The declivity was ſo ſmall, that I walked near a mile before I got to the ſhore, which I conjectured was about eight o'clock in the evening. I then advanced forward near half a mile, but could not diſcover any ſign of houſes or inhabitants; at leaſt I was in ſo weak a condition, that I did not obſerve them. I was extremely tired, and with that, and the heat of the weather, and about half a pint of brandy that I drank as I left the ſhip, I found myſelf much inclined to ſleep. I lay down on the graſs, which was very ſhort and ſoft, where I ſlept ſounder than ever I remembered to have done in my life, and, as I reckoned, about nine hours; for when I awaked, it was juſt day-light. I attempted to riſe, but was not able to ſtir: for as I happened to lie on my back, I found my arms and legs were ſtrongly faſtened on each ſide to the ground; and my hair, which was long,

and

and thick, tied down in the ſame manner. I likewiſe felt ſeveral ſlender ligatures acroſs my body, from my armpits to my thighs. I could only look upwards; the ſun began to grow hot, and the light offended my eyes. I heard a confuſed noiſe about me; but, in the poſture I lay, could ſee nothing except the ſky. In a little time I felt ſomething alive moving on my left leg, which advancing gently forward over my breaſt came almoſt up to my chin; when bending my eyes downward as much as I could, I perceived it to be a human creature not ſix inches high, with a bow and arrow in his hands, and a quiver at his back. In the mean time, I felt at leaſt forty more of the ſame kind (as I conjectured) following the firſt. I was in the utmoſt aſtoniſhment, and roared ſo loud, that they all ran back in a fright; and ſome of them, as I was afterwards told, were hurt by the falls they got by leaping from my ſides upon the ground. However they ſoon returned, and one of them, who ventured ſo far as to get a full ſight of my face, lifting up his hands and eyes by way of admiration, cried out in a ſhrill but diſtinct voice, *Hekinah degul*; the others repeated the ſame words ſeveral times, but I then knew not what they meant. I lay all this while, as the reader may believe, in great uneaſineſs; at length, ſtruggling to get looſe, I had the fortune to break the ſtrings, and wrench out the pegs, that faſtened my left arm to the ground; for, by lifting it up to my face, I diſcovered the methods they had taken to bind me, and at the ſame time with a violent pull, which gave me exceſſive pain, I a little looſened the ſtrings that tied down my hair on the left ſide, ſo that I was juſt able to turn my head about two inches. But the creatures ran off a ſecond time before I could ſeize them; whereupon there was a great ſhout in a very ſhrill accent, and after it ceaſed, I heard one of them cry aloud, *Tolgo phonac*; when in an inſtant I felt above an hundred arrows diſcharged on my left hand, which pricked me like ſo many needles; and beſides, they ſhot another flight into the air, as we do bombs in Europe, whereof many, I ſuppoſe, fell on my body, (tho' I felt them not) and ſome on my face, which I immediately covered with my left hand. When this ſhower of arrows was over, I fell a groaning with grief and pain, and then ſtriving again to get looſe, they diſcharged another

another volley larger than the firſt, and ſome of them attempted with ſpears to ſtick me in the ſides; but by good luck I had on me a buff jerkin which they could not pierce. I thought it the moſt prudent method to lie ſtill, and my deſign was to continue ſo till night, when, my left hand being already looſe, I could eaſily free myſelf: and as for the inhabitants, I had reaſon to believe I might be a match for the greateſt army they could bring againſt me, if they were all of the ſame ſize with him that I ſaw. But fortune diſpoſed otherwiſe of me. When the people obſerved I was quiet, they diſcharged no more arrows: but by the noiſe I heard, I knew their numbers increaſed; and about four yards from me, over-againſt my right ear, I heard a knocking for above an hour, like that of people at work: when turning my head that way, as well as the pegs and ſtrings would permit me, I ſaw a ſtage erected about a foot and an half from the ground, capable of holding four of the inhabitants, with two or three ladders to mount it: from whence one of them, who ſeemed to be a perſon of quality, made me a long ſpeech, whereof I underſtood not one ſyllable. But I ſhould have mentioned, that before the principal perſon began his oration, he cried out three times *Langro dehul ſan*; (theſe words and the former were afterwards repeated and explained to me.) Whereupon immediately about fifty of the inhabitants came and cut the ſtrings that faſtened the left ſide of my head, which gave me the liberty of turning it to the right, and of obſerving the perſon and geſture of him that was to ſpeak. He appeared to be of a middle age, and taller than any of the other three who attended him, whereof one was a page that held up his train, and ſeemed to be ſomewhat longer than my middle finger; the other two ſtood one on each ſide to ſupport him. He acted every part of an orator, and I could obſerve many periods of threatnings, and others of promiſes, pity, and kindneſs. I anſwered in a few words, but in the moſt ſubmiſſive manner, lifting up my left hand and both my eyes to the ſun, as calling him for a witneſs: and being almoſt famiſhed with hunger, having not eaten a morſel for ſome hours before I left the ſhip, I found the demands of nature ſo ſtrong upon me, that I could not forbear ſhewing my impatience (perhaps againſt the ſtrict rules of de-

cency) by putting my finger frequently to my mouth, to ſignify that I wanted food. The *Hurgo* (for ſo they call a great lord, as I afterwards learned) underſtood me very well. He deſcended from the ſtage, and commanded that ſeveral ladders ſhould be applied to my ſides, on which above an hundred of the inhabitants mounted, and walked towards my mouth, laden with baſkets full of meat, which had been provided and ſent thither by the King's orders, upon the firſt intelligence he received of me. I obſerved there was the fleſh of ſeveral animals, but could not diſtinguiſh them by the taſte. There were ſhoulders, legs, and loins, ſhaped like thoſe of mutton, and very well dreſſed, but ſmaller than the wings of a lark. I eat them by two or three at a mouthful, and took three loaves at a time about the bigneſs of muſket bullets. They ſupplied me as faſt as they could, ſhewing a thouſand marks of wonder and aſtoniſhment at my bulk and appetite. I then made another ſign, that I wanted drink. They found by my eating that a ſmall quantity would not ſuffice me, and being a moſt ingenious people, they ſlung up with great dexterity one of their largeſt hogſheads, then rolled it towards my hand, and beat out the top; I drank it off at a draught, which I might well do, for it did not hold half a pint, and taſted like a ſmall wine of Burgundy, but much more delicious. They brought me a ſecond hogſhead, which I drank in the ſame manner, and made ſigns for more; but they had none to give me. When I had performed theſe wonders, they ſhouted for joy, and danced upon my breaſt, repeating ſeveral times as they did at firſt, *Hekinah degul.* They made me a ſign that I ſhould throw down the two hogſheads, but firſt warning the people below to ſtand out of the way, crying aloud, *Borach mevola*, and when they ſaw the veſſels in the air, there was an univerſal ſhout of *Hekinah degul.* I confeſs, I was often tempted, while they were paſſing backwards and forwards on my body, to ſeize forty or fifty of the firſt that came in my reach, and daſh them againſt the ground But the remembrance of what I had felt, which probably might not be the worſt they could do, and the promiſe of honour I made them, for ſo I interpreted my ſubmiſſive behaviour, ſoon drove out theſe imaginations. *Beſides, I now* conſidered myſelf as bound by the laws of hoſpitality

hoſpitality to a people, who had treated me with ſo much expence and magnificence. However, in my thoughts I could not ſufficiently wonder at the intrepidity of theſe diminutive mortals, who durſt venture to mount and walk upon my body, while one of my hands was at liberty, without trembling at the very ſight of ſo prodigious a creature, as I muſt appear to them. After ſome time, when they obſerved that I made no more demands for meat, there appeared before me a perſon of high rank from his Imperial Majeſty. His Excellency having mounted on the ſmall of my right leg, advanced forwards up to my face, with about a dozen of his retinue. And producing his credentials under the ſignet royal, which he applied cloſe to my eyes, ſpoke about ten minutes without any ſigns of anger, but with a kind of determinate reſolution; often pointing forwards, which, as I afterwards found, was towards the capital city, about half a mile diſtant, whither it was agreed by his Majeſty in council that I muſt be conveyed. I anſwered in few words, but to no purpoſe, and made a ſign with my hand that was looſe, putting it to the other (but over his Excellency's head for fear of hurting him or his train) and then to my own head and body, to ſignify that I deſired my liberty. It appeared that he underſtood me well enough, for he ſhook his head by way of diſapprobation, and held his hand in a poſture to ſhew that I muſt be carried as a priſoner. However, he made other ſigns to let me underſtand, that I ſhould have meat and drink enough, and very good treatment. Whereupon I once more thought of attempting to break my bonds; but again, when I felt the ſmart of their arrows upon my face and hands, which were all in bliſters, and many of the darts ſtill ſticking in them, and obſerving likewiſe that the number of my enemies increaſed, I gave tokens to let them know, that they might do with me what they pleaſed. Upon this the *Hurgo* and his train withdrew with much civility and chearful countenances. Soon after I heard a general ſhout, with frequent repetitions of the words, *Peplom ſelan*, and I felt great numbers of people on my left ſide relaxing the cords to ſuch a degree, that I was able to turn upon my right, and to eaſe myſelf with making water; which I very plentifully did, to the great aſtoniſhment of the

people, who conjecturing by my motion what I was going to do, immediately opened to the right and left on that ſide, to avoid the torrent which fell with ſuch noiſe and violence from me. But before this they had daubed my face and both my hands with a ſort of ointment very pleaſant to the ſmell, which in a few minutes removed all the ſmart of their arrows. Theſe circumſtances, added to the refreſhment I had received by their victuals and drink, which were very nouriſhing, diſpoſed me to ſleep. I ſlept about eight hours, as I was afterwards aſſured; and it was no wonder; for the phyſicians, by the Emperor's order, had mingled a ſleepy potion in the hogſheads of wine.

It ſeems, that, upon the firſt moment I was diſcovered ſleeping on the ground after my landing, the Emperor had early notice of it by an expreſs; and determined in council, that I ſhould be tied in the manner I have related, (which was done in the night while I ſlept) that plenty of meat and drink ſhould be ſent to me, and a machine prepared to carry me to the capital city.

This reſolution perhaps may appear very bold and dangerous, and I am confident would not be imitated by any prince in Europe on the like occaſion; however, in my opinion, it was extremely prudent, as well as generous; for ſuppoſing thoſe people had endeavoured to kill me with their ſpears and arrows while I was aſleep, I ſhould certainly have awaked with the firſt ſenſe of ſmart, which might ſo far have rouzed my rage and ſtrength, as to have enabled me to break the ſtrings, wherewith I was tied; after which, as they were not able to make reſiſtance, ſo they could expect no mercy.

These people are moſt excellent mathematicians, and arrived to a great perfection in mechanics by the countenance and encouragement of the Emperor, who is a renowned patron of learning. This Prince hath ſeveral machines fixed on wheels for the carriage of trees and other great weights. He often builds his largeſt men of war, whereof ſome are nine feet long, in the woods where the timber grows, and has them carried on theſe engines three or four hundred yards to the ſea. Five hundred carpenters and engineers were immediately ſet at work to prepare the greateſt engine they had. It was a frame of wood raiſed

raiſed three inches from the ground, about ſeven feet long and four wide, moving upon twenty two wheels. The ſhout I heard was upon the arrival of this engine, which it ſeems ſet out in four hours after my landing. It was brought parallel to me, as I lay. But the principal difficulty was to raiſe and place me in this vehicle. Eighty poles, each of one foot high, were erected for this purpoſe, and very ſtrong cords of the bigneſs of packthread were faſtened by hooks to many bandages, which the workmen had girt round my neck, my hands, my body, and my legs. Nine hundred of the ſtrongeſt men were employed to draw up theſe cords by many pullies faſtened on the poles; and thus, in leſs than three hours, I was raiſed and ſlung into the engine, and there tied faſt. All this I was told; for, while the whole operation was performing, I lay in a profound ſleep by the force of that ſoporiferous medicine infuſed into my liquor. Fifteen hundred of the Emperor's largeſt horſes, each about four inches and an half high, were employed to draw me towards the metropolis, which, as I ſaid, was half a mile diſtant.

About four hours after we began our journey, I awaked by a very ridiculous accident; for the carriage being ſtopt a while to adjuſt ſomething that was out of order, two or three of the young natives had the curioſity to ſee how I looked when I was aſleep; they climbed up into the engine, and advancing very ſoftly to my face, one of them, an officer in the guards, put the ſharp end of his half-pike a good way up into my left noſtril, which tickled my noſe like a ſtraw, and made me ſneeze violently *: whereupon they ſtole off unperceived, and it was three weeks before I knew the cauſe of my awaking

* It has been remarked, that courage in whatever cauſe, tho' it ſometimes excites indignation, is never the object of contempt; but this appears to be true, only becauſe courage is ſuppoſed to imply ſuperiority; for this *officer in the guards* becomes extremely ridiculous and contemptible, by an act of the moſt daring curioſity, which ſets him in compariſon with Gulliver; to whom he was ſo much inferior, that a blaſt of the *man-mountain's* noſtrils would have endangered his life; and if heroiſm itſelf is not proof againſt ridicule, thoſe ſurely are Lilliputians in philoſophy, who conſider ridicule as the teſt of truth. Hawkeſ.

ſo ſuddenly. We made a long march the remaining part of the day, and reſted at night with five hundred guards on each ſide of me, half with torches, and half with bows and arrows, ready to ſhoot me, if I ſhould offer to ſtir. The next morning at ſun-riſe we continued our march, and arrived within two hundred yards of the city-gates about noon. The Emperor, and all his court, came out to meet us, but his great officers would by no means ſuffer his Majeſty to endanger his perſon by mounting on my body.

At the place where the carriage ſtopt, there ſtood an ancient temple, eſteemed to be the largeſt in the whole kingdom, which, having been polluted ſome years before by an unnatural murder, was, according to the zeal of thoſe people, looked upon as prophane, and therefore had been applied to common uſe, and all the ornaments and furniture carried away. In this edifice it was determined I ſhould lodge. The great gate fronting to the north was about four feet high, and almoſt two feet wide, thro' which I could eaſily creep. On each ſide of the gate was a ſmall window, not above ſix inches from the ground: into that, on the left ſide, the King's ſmith conveyed fourſcore and eleven chains, like thoſe that hang to a lady's watch in Europe, and almoſt as large, which were locked to my left leg with ſix and thirty padlocks. Over-againſt this temple, on the other ſide of the great highway, at twenty feet diſtance, there was a turret at leaſt five feet high. Here the Emperor aſcended with many principal lords of his court to have an opportunity of viewing me, as I was told, for I could not ſee them. It was reckoned, that above an hundred thouſand inhabitants came out of the town upon the ſame errand; and in ſpite of my guards, I believe, there could not be fewer than ten thouſand at ſeveral times, who mounted my body by the help of ladders. But a proclamation was ſoon iſſued to forbid it upon pain of death. When the workmen found it was impoſſible for me to break looſe, they cut all the ſtrings that bound me; whereupon I roſe up with as melancholy a diſpoſition, as ever I had in my life. But the noiſe and aſtoniſhment of the people at ſeeing me riſe and walk are not to be expreſſed. The chains that held my left leg, were about two yards long, and gave me not

not only the liberty of walking backwards and forwards in a ſemicircle; but being fixed within four inches of the gate, allowed me to creep in, and lie at my full length in the temple.

CHAP. II.

The Emperor of Lilliput, attended by ſeveral of the nobility, comes to ſee the author in his confinement. The Emperor's perſon and habit deſcribed. Learned men appointed to teach the author their language. He gains favour by his mild diſpoſition. His pockets are ſearched, and his ſword and piſtols taken from him.

WHEN I found myſelf on my feet, I looked about me, and muſt confeſs I never beheld a more entertaining proſpect. The country around appeared like a continued garden, and the incloſed fields, which were generally forty feet ſquare, reſembled ſo many beds of flowers. Theſe fields were intermingled with woods of half a ſtang *, and the talleſt trees, as I could judge, appeared to be ſeven feet high. I viewed the town on my left hand, which looked like the painted ſcene of a city in a theatre.

I had been for ſome hours extremely preſſed by the neceſſities of nature; which was no wonder, it being almoſt two days ſince I had laſt diſburthened myſelf. I was under great difficulties between urgency and ſhame. The beſt expedient I could think on, was to creep into my houſe, which I accordingly did; and ſhutting the gate after me, I went as far as the length of my chain would ſuffer, and diſcharged my body of that uneaſy load. But this was the only time I was ever guilty of ſo uncleanly an action; for which I cannot but hope the candid reader will give ſome allowance, after he hath maturely and impartially conſidered my caſe, and the diſtreſs I was in. From this time my conſtant practice was, as ſoon as I roſe, to perform that buſineſs in open air, at the full extent of my chain; and due care was taken every morning before company came, that the offenſive matter ſhould be

* A *ſtang* is a pole or perch; ſixteen feet and an half. Hawkeſ.

be carried off in wheel-barrows by two ſervants appointed for that purpoſe. I would not have dwelt ſo long upon a circumſtance, that perhaps at firſt ſight may appear not very momentous, if I had not thought it neceſſary to juſtify my character in point of cleanlineſs to the world; which I am told ſome of my maligners have been pleaſed, upon this and other occaſions, to call in queſtion.

When this adventure was at an end, I came back out of my houſe, having occaſion for freſh air. The Emperor was already deſcended from the tower, and advancing on horſe back towards me, which had like to have coſt him dear; for the beaſt, tho' very well trained, yet wholly unuſed to ſuch a ſight, which appeared as if a mountain moved before him, reared up on his hinder feet: but that Prince, who is an excellent horſeman, kept his ſeat, till his attendants ran in, and held the bridle, while his Majeſty had time to diſmount. When he alighted, he ſurveyed me round with great admiration; but kept beyond the length of my chain. He ordered his cooks and butlers, who were already prepared, to give me victuals and drink, which they puſhed forward in a ſort of vehicles upon wheels, till I could reach them. I took theſe vehicles, and ſoon emptied them all; twenty of them were filled with meat, and ten with liquor; each of the former afforded me two or three good mouthfuls; and I emptied the liquor of ten veſſels, which was contained in earthen vials, into one vehicle, drinking it off at a draught; and ſo I did with the reſt. The Empreſs and young princes of the blood of both ſexes, attended by many ladies, ſat at ſome diſtance in their chairs; but upon the accident that happened to the Emperor's horſe, they alighted, and came near his perſon, which I am now going to deſcribe. He is taller by almoſt the breadth of my nail than any of his court, which alone is enough to ſtrike an awe into the beholders. His features are ſtrong and maſculine, with an Auſtrian lip, an arched noſe, his complexion olive, his countenance erect, his body and limbs well proportioned, all his motions graceful, and his deportment majeſtic. He was then paſt his prime, being twenty eight years and three quarters old, of which he had reigned about ſeven in great felicity, and generally victorious. For the better convenience of beholding him I lay

lay on my ſide, ſo that my face was parallel to his, and he ſtood but three yards off: however, I have had him ſince many times in my hand, and therefore cannot be deceived in the deſcription. His dreſs was very plain and ſimple, and the faſhion of it between the Aſiatic and the European: but he had on his head a light helmet of gold, adorned with jewels and a plume on the creſt. He held his ſword drawn in his hand to defend himſelf, if I ſhould happen to break looſe †; it was almoſt three inches long; the hilt and ſcabbard were gold enriched with diamonds. His voice was ſhrill, but very clear and articulate, and I could diſtinctly hear it when I ſtood up. The ladies and courtiers were all moſt magnificently clad, ſo that the ſpot they ſtood upon ſeemed to reſemble a petticoat ſpread on the ground, embroidered with figures of gold and ſilver. His Imperial Majeſty ſpoke often to me, and I returned anſwers; but neither of us could underſtand a ſyllable. There were ſeveral of his prieſts and lawyers preſent, (as I conjectured by their habits) who were commanded to addreſs themſelves to me, and I ſpoke to them in as many languages as I had the leaſt ſmattering of, which were *High* and *Low Dutch*, *Latin*, *French*, *Spaniſh*, *Italian*, and *Lingua Franca*; but all to no purpoſe. After about two hours the court retired, and I was left with a ſtrong guard to prevent the impertinence, and probably the malice of the rabble, who were very impatient to croud about me as near as they durſt, and ſome of them had the impudence to ſhoot their arrows at me, as I ſat on the ground by the door of my houſe, whereof one very narrowly miſſed my left eye. But the colonel ordered ſix of the ring-leaders to be ſeized, and thought no puniſhment ſo proper as to deliver them bound into my hands; which ſome of his ſoldiers accordingly did, puſhing them

† The maſculine ſtrength of features, which Gulliver could not ſee, till he laid his face upon the ground; and the awful ſuperiority of ſtature in a being whom he held in his hand; the helmet, the plume, and the ſword, are a fine reproof of human pride; the objects of which are trifling diſtinctions, whether of perſon or rank; the ridiculous parade and oſtentation of a pigmy; which derive not only their origin, but their uſe, from the folly, weakneſs, and imperfection of ourſelves and others. Harris.

them forwards with the but-ends of their pikes into my reach: I took them all on my right hand, put five of them into my coat-pocket, and as to the ſixth, I made a countenance as if I would eat him alive. The poor man ſqualled terribly, and the colonel and his officers were in much pain, eſpecially when they ſaw me take out my penknife: but I ſoon put them out of fear; for, looking mildly, and immediately cutting the ſtrings he was bound with, I ſet him gently on the ground, and away he ran. I treated the reſt in the ſame manner, taking them one by one out of my pocket; and I obſerved both the ſoldiers and people were highly delighted at this mark of my clemency, which was repreſented very much to my advantage at court.

TOWARDS night I got with ſome difficulty into my houſe, where I lay on the ground, and continued to do ſo about a fortnight; during which time the Emperor gave orders to have a bed prepared for me. Six hundred beds of the common meaſure were brought in carriages, and worked up in my houſe; an hundred and fifty of their beds, ſewn together, made up the breadth and length; and theſe were four double, which however kept me but very indifferently from the hardneſs of the floor, that was of ſmooth ſtone. By the ſame computation they provided me with ſheets, blankets, and coverlets, tolerable enough for one who had been ſo long inured to hardſhips *.

As the news of my arrival ſpread thro' the kingdom, it brought prodigious numbers of rich, idle, and curious people to ſee me; ſo that the villages were almoſt emptied; and great neglect of tillage and houſhold-affairs muſt have enſued, if his Imperial Majeſty had not provided by ſeveral proclamations and orders of ſtate againſt this inconveniency.

* Gulliver has obſerved great exactneſs in the juſt proportion and appearances of the ſeveral objects thus leſſened and magnified. But he dwells too much upon theſe optical deceptions. The mind is tired with a repetition of them, eſpecially as he points out no beauty nor uſe in ſuch amazing diſcoveries, which might have been ſo continued as to have afforded improvement, at the ſame time that they gave aſtoniſhment. He too often ſhews an indelicacy that is not agreeable, and exerts his vein of humour *moſt improperly* in ſome places, where, I am afraid, he glances *at religion.* *Orrery.*

convenience. He directed, that those, who had already beheld me, should return home, and not presume to come within fifty yards of my house without licence from court; whereby the secretaries of state got considerable fees.

In the mean time the Emperor held frequent councils to debate, what course should be taken with me; and I was afterwards assured by a particular friend, a person of great quality, who was as much in the secret as any, that the court was under many difficulties concerning me. They apprehended my breaking loose; that my diet would be very expensive, and might cause a famine. Sometimes they determined to starve me, or at least to shoot me in the face and hands with poisoned arrows, which would soon dispatch me; but again they considered, that the stench of so large a carcase might produce a plague in the metropolis, and probably spread thro' the whole kingdom. In the midst of these consultations, several officers of the army went to the door of the great council-chamber, and two of them being admitted gave an account of my behaviour to the six criminals above-mentioned; which made so favourable an impression in the breast of his Majesty, and the whole board, in my behalf, that an imperial commission was issued out, obliging all the villages nine hundred yards round the city, to deliver in every morning six beeves, forty sheep, and other victuals for my sustenance; together with a proportionable quantity of bread, and wine, and other liquors; for the due payment of which his Majesty gave assignments upon his treasury. For this Prince lives chiefly upon his own demesnes, seldom, except upon great occasions, raising any subsidies, upon his subjects, who are bound to attend him in his wars at their own expence. An establishment was also made of six hundred persons to be my domestics, who had board-wages allowed for their maintenance, and tents built for them very conveniently on each side of my door. It was likewise ordered, that three hundred taylors should make me a suit of cloaths after the fashion of the country: that six of his Majesty's greatest scholars should be employed to instruct me in their language: and lastly, that the Emperor's

ror's horſes, and thoſe of the nobility, and troops of guards, ſhould be frequently exerciſed in my ſight to accuſtom themſelves to me. All theſe orders were duly put in execution, and in about three weeks I made a great progreſs in learning their language: during which time the Emperor frequently honoured me with his viſits, and was pleaſed to aſſiſt my maſters in teaching me. We began already to converſe together in ſome ſort; and the firſt words I learnt were to expreſs my deſire, that he would pleaſe to give me my liberty, which I every day repeated on my knees. His anſwer, as I could apprehend it, was, that this muſt be a work of time, not to be thought on without the advice of his council, and that firſt I muſt *lumos kelmin peſſo deſmar lon empoſo*; that is, ſwear a peace with him and his kingdom. However, that I ſhould be uſed with all kindneſs; and he adviſed me to acquire by my patience and diſcreet behaviour, the good opinion of himſelf and his ſubjects. He deſired I would not take it ill, if he gave orders to certain proper officers to ſearch me; for probably I might carry about me ſeveral weapons, which muſt needs be dangerous things, if they anſwered the bulk of ſo prodigious a perſon. I ſaid, his Majeſty ſhould be ſatisfied; for I was ready to ſtrip myſelf, and turn up my pockets before him. This I delivered part in words, and part in ſigns. He replied, that by the laws of the kingdom I muſt be ſearched by two of his officers: that he knew this could not be done without my conſent and aſſiſtance; that he had ſo good an opinion of my generoſity and juſtice, as to truſt their perſons in my hands; that whatever they took from me, ſhould be returned when I left the country, or paid for at the rate which I would ſet upon them. I took up the two officers in my hands, put them firſt into my coat-pockets, and then into every other pocket about me, except my two fobs, and another ſecret pocket, which I had no mind ſhould be ſearched, wherein I had ſome little neceſſaries, that were of no conſequence to any but myſelf. In one of my fobs there was a ſilver watch, and in the other a ſmall quantity of gold in a purſe. Theſe gentlemen, having pen, ink, and paper about them, made an exact inventory of every thing *they* ſaw; and, when they had done, deſired I would

ſet

ſet them down, that they might deliver it to the Emperor. This inventory I afterwards tranſlated into Engliſh, and is word for word as follows.

Imprimis, In the right coat pocket of the *great man-mountain* (for ſo I interpret the words *Quinbus fleſtrin*) after the ſtricteſt ſearch, we found only one great piece of coarſe cloth, large enough to be a foot-cloth for your Majeſty's chief room of ſtate. In the left pocket we ſaw a huge ſilver cheſt, with a cover of the ſame metal, which we the ſearchers were not able to lift. We deſired it ſhould be opened, and one of us ſtepping into it, found himſelf up to the mid leg in a ſort of duſt, ſome part whereof flying up to our faces, ſet us both a ſneezing for ſeveral times together. In his right waiſtcoat pocket we found a prodigious bundle of white thin ſubſtances, folded one over another, about the bigneſs of three men, tied with a ſtrong cable, and marked with black figures; which we humbly conceive to be writings, every letter almoſt half as large as the palm of our hands. In the left there was a ſort of engine, from the back of which were extended twenty long poles, reſembling the paliſadoes before your Majeſty's court; wherewith we conjecture the *man-mountain* combs his head; for we did not always trouble him with queſtions, becauſe we found it a great difficulty to make him underſtand us. In the large pocket on the right ſide of his middle cover (ſo I tranſlate the word *Ranſu-lo*, by which they meant my breeches) we ſaw a hollow pillar of iron, about the length of a man, faſtened to a ſtrong piece of timber, larger than the pillar; and upon one ſide of the pillar were huge pieces of iron ſticking out into ſtrange figures, which we know not what to make of. In the left pocket another engine of the ſame kind. In the ſmaller pocket on the right ſide were ſeveral round flat pieces of white and red metal of different bulk; ſome of the white, which ſeemed to be ſilver, were ſo large and heavy, that my comrade and I could hardly lift them. In the left pocket were two black pillars irregularly ſhaped; we could not without difficulty reach the top of them, as we ſtood at the bottom of his pocket. One of them was covered, and ſeemed all of a piece: but at the upper end of the other there appeared a white round

ſubſtance, about twice the bigneſs of our heads. Within each of theſe was incloſed a prodigious plate of ſteel; which, by our orders, we obliged him to ſhew us, becauſe we apprehended they might be dangerous engines. He took them out of their caſes, and told us, that in his own country his practice was to ſhave his beard with one of theſe, and to cut his meat with the other. There were two pockets, which we could not enter: theſe he called his fobs; they were two large ſlits cut into the top of his middle cover, but ſqueezed cloſe by the preſſure of his belly. Out of the right fob hung a great ſilver chain, with a wonderful kind of engine at the bottom. We directed him to draw out whatever was at the end of that chain; which appeared to be a globe, half ſilver, and half of ſome tranſparent metal: for on the tranſparent ſide we ſaw certain ſtrange figures circularly drawn, and thought we could touch them, till we found our fingers ſtopt by that lucid ſubſtance. He put this engine to our ears, which made an inceſſant noiſe like that of a water-mill: and we conjecture it is either ſome unknown animal, or the god that he worſhips; but we are more inclined to the latter opinion, becauſe he aſſured us (if we underſtood him right, for he expreſſed himſelf very imperfectly) that he ſeldom did any thing without conſulting it. He called it his oracle; and ſaid it pointed out the time for every action of his life *. From the left fob he took out a net almoſt large enough for a fiſherman, but contrived to open and ſhut like a purſe, and ſerved him for the ſame uſe: we found therein ſeveral maſſy pieces of yellow metal, which, if they be real gold, muſt be of immenſe value.

HAVING thus, in obedience to your Majeſty's commands, diligently ſearched all his pockets, we obſerved a girdle about his waiſt, made of the hide of ſome prodigious animal, from which on the left ſide hung a ſword of the length of five men; and on the right a bag or pouch divided into two cells, each cell capable of holding three of your Majeſty's ſubjects. In one of theſe cells were

* Perhaps the author intended to expoſe the probable fallacy of opinions derived from the relations of travellers, by ſhewing, how little truth need to be miſunderſtood to make falſehood ſpecious. *Hawkeſ.*

were ſeveral globes or balls of a moſt ponderous metal, about the bigneſs of our heads, and required a ſtrong hand to lift them: the other cell contained a heap of certain black grains, but of no great bulk or weight, for we could hold above fifty of them in the palms of our hands.

This is an exact inventory of what we found about the body of the *man-mountain*, who uſed us with great civility, and due reſpect to your Majeſty's commiſſion. Signed and ſealed, on the fourth day of the eighty ninth moon of your Majeſty's auſpicious reign.

Clefrin Frelock, Marſi Frelock.

When this inventory was read over to the Emperor, he directed me, altho' in very gentle terms, to deliver up the ſeveral particulars. He firſt called for my ſcymiter, which I took out, ſcabbard and all. In the mean time he ordered three thouſand of his choiceſt troops (who then attended him) to ſurround me at a diſtance, with their bows and arrows juſt ready to diſcharge: but I did not obſerve it, for mine eyes were wholly fixed upon his Majeſty. He then deſired me to draw my ſcymiter; which, altho' it had got ſome ruſt by the ſea-water, was in moſt parts exceeding bright. I did ſo, and immediately all the troops gave a ſhout between terror and ſurprize; for the ſun ſhone clear, and the reflection dazzled their eyes, as I waved the ſcymiter to and fro in my hand. His Majeſty, who is a moſt magnanimous prince †, was leſs daunted than I could expect; he ordered me to return it into the ſcabbard, and caſt it on the ground as gently as I could, about ſix feet from the end of my chain. The next thing he demanded, was one of the hollow iron pillars; by which he meant my pocket-piſtols. I drew it out, and at his deſire, as well as I could, expreſſed to him the uſe of it; and charging it only with powder, which by the cloſeneſs of my pouch happened to eſcape wetting in the

† He who does not find himſelf diſpoſed to honour this magnanimity ſhould reflect, that a right to judge of moral and intellectual excellence is, with great abſurdity and injuſtice, arrogated by him who admires, in a being ſix feet high, any qualities that he deſpiſes in one whoſe ſtature does not exceed ſix inches. Translator.

ſea (an inconvenience againſt which all prudent mariners take ſpecial care to provide) I firſt cautioned the Emperor not to be afraid, and then I let it off in the air. The aſtoniſhment here was much greater than at the ſight of my ſcymiter. Hundreds fell down, as if they had been ſtruck dead; and even the Emperor, altho' he ſtood his ground, could not recover himſelf in ſome time. I delivered up both my piſtols in the ſame manner as I had done my ſcymiter, and then my pouch of powder and bullets; begging him that the former might be kept from fire, for it would kindle with the ſmalleſt ſpark, and blow up his imperial palace into the air. I likewiſe delivered up my watch, which the Emperor was very curious to ſee, and commanded two of his talleſt yeomen of the guards, to bear it on a pole upon their ſhoulders, as dray-men in England do a barrel of ale. He was amazed at the continual noiſe it made, and the motion of the minute-hand, which he could eaſily diſcern; for their ſight is much more acute than ours: he aſked the opinions of his learned men about it, which were various and remote, as the reader may well imagine without my repeating; altho' indeed I could not very perfectly underſtand them. I then gave up my ſilver and copper money, my purſe with nine large pieces of gold, and ſome ſmaller ones; my knife and razor, my comb and ſilver ſnuff-box, my handkerchief and journal-book. My ſcymiter, piſtols, and pouch were conveyed in carriages to his Majeſty's ſtores; but the reſt of my goods were returned me.

I had, as I before obſerved, one private pocket, which eſcaped their ſearch, wherein there was a pair of ſpectacles (which I ſometimes uſe for the weakneſs of mine eyes) a pocket perſpective, and ſome other little conveniencies; which being of no conſequence to the Emperor, I did not think myſelf bound in honour to diſcover, and I apprehended they might be loſt or ſpoiled, if I ventured them out of my poſſeſſion.

CHAP.

CHAP. III.

The author diverts the Emperor and his nobility of both sexes in a very uncommon manner. The diversions of the court of Lilliput described. The author hath his liberty granted him upon certain conditions.

MY gentleness and good behaviour had gained so far on the Emperor and his court, and indeed upon the army, and people in general, that I began to conceive hopes of getting my liberty in a short time. I took all possible methods to cultivate this favourable disposition. The natives came by degrees to be less apprehensive of any danger from me. I would sometimes lie down, and let five or six of them dance on my hand: and at last the boys and girls would venture to come and play at hide and seek in my hair. I had now made a good progress in understanding and speaking their language. The Emperor had a mind one day to entertain me with several of the country shows, wherein they exceed all nations I have known both for dexterity and magnificence. I was diverted with none so much as that the rope-dancers, performed upon a slender white thread, extended about two foot and twelve inches from the ground. Upon which I shall desire liberty, with the reader's patience, to enlarge a little.

THIS diversion is only practised by those persons, who are candidates for great employments, and high favour at court. They are trained in this art from their youth, and are not always of noble birth, or liberal education. When a great office is vacant either by death or disgrace (which often happens) five or six of those candidates petition the Emperor to entertain his Majesty and the court with a dance on the rope, and whoever jumps the highest without falling, succeeds in the office. Very often the chief ministers themselves are commanded to shew their skill, and to convince the Emperor, that they have not lost their faculty. Flimnap, the treasurer, is allowed to cut a caper on the strait rope, at least an inch higher than any other lord in the whole empire. I have seen him

do the ſummerſet * ſeveral times together upon a trencher, fixed on a rope, which is no thicker than a common packthread in England. My friend Reldreſal, principal ſecretary for private affairs, is, in my opinion, if I am not partial, the ſecond after the treaſurer; the reſt of the great officers are much upon a par.

THESE diverſions are often attended with fatal accidents, whereof great numbers are on record. I myſelf have ſeen two or three candidates break a limb. But the danger is much greater, when the miniſters themſelves are commanded to ſhew their dexterity; for, by contending to excel themſelves and their fellows, they ſtrain ſo far, that there is hardly one of them, who hath not received a fall, and ſome of them two or three. I was aſſured, that a year or two before my arrival, Flimnap would have infallibly broke his neck, if one of the King's cuſhions, that accidentally lay on the ground, had not weakened the force of his fall.

THERE is likewiſe another diverſion, which is only ſhewn before the Emperor and Empreſs, and firſt miniſter upon particular occaſions. The Emperor lays on the table three fine ſilken threads of ſix inches long; one is blue, the other red, and the third green. Theſe threads are propoſed as prizes for thoſe perſons, whom the Emperor hath a mind to diſtinguiſh by a peculiar mark of his favour. The ceremony is performed in his Majeſty's great chamber of ſtate, where the candidates are to undergo a trial of dexterity very different from the former, and ſuch as I have not obſerved the leaſt reſemblance of in any other country of the old or new world. The Emperor holds a ſtick in his hands, both ends parallel to the horizon, while the candidates advancing, one by one, ſometimes leap over the ſtick, ſometimes creep under it backwards and forwards ſeveral times, according as the ſtick is advanced or depreſſed. Sometimes the Emperor holds one end of the ſtick, and his firſt miniſter the other; ſometimes the miniſter has it entirely to himſelf. Whoever performs his part with moſt agility, and holds out the

* Summerſet, or ſummerfault; a gambol of a tumbler, in which he ſprings up, turns heels over head in the air, and *comes* down upon his feet. *Hawkeſ.*

the longeſt in leaping and creeping, is rewarded with the blue-coloured ſilk, the red is given to the next, and the green to the third; which they all wear girt twice round about the middle; and you ſee few great perſons about this court, who are not adorned with one of theſe girdles.

The horſes of the army, and thoſe of the royal ſtables, having been daily led before me, were no longer ſhy, but would come up to my very feet without ſtarting. The riders would leap them over my hand, as I held it on the ground; and one of the Emperor's huntſmen upon a large courſer took my foot, ſhoe and all; which was indeed a prodigious leap. I had the good fortune to divert the Emperor one day after a very extraordinary manner. I deſired he would order ſeveral ſticks of two feet high, and the thickneſs of an ordinary cane, to be brought me; whereupon his Majeſty commanded the maſter of his woods to give directions accordingly, and the next morning ſix woodmen arrived with as many carriages, drawn by eight horſes to each. I took nine of theſe ſticks, and fixing them firmly in the ground in a quadrangular figure, two feet and a half ſquare, I took four other ſticks, and tied them parallel at each corner about two feet from the ground; then I faſtened my handkerchief to the nine ſticks that ſtood erect; and extended it on all ſides, till it was tight as the top of a drum; and the four parallel ſticks, riſing about five inches higher than the handkerchief, ſerved as ledges on each ſide. When I had finiſhed my work, I deſired the Emperor to let a troop of his beſt horſe, twenty four in number, come and exerciſe upon this plain. His Majeſty approved of the propoſal, and I took them up one by one in my hands, ready mounted and armed, with the proper officers to exerciſe them. As ſoon as they got into order, they divided into two parties, performed mock ſkirmiſhes, diſcharged blunt arrows, drew their ſwords, fled and purſued, attacked and retired, and in ſhort diſcovered the beſt military diſcipline I ever beheld. The parallel ſticks ſecured them and their horſes from falling over the ſtage; and the Emperor was ſo much delighted, that he ordered this entertainment to be repeated ſeveral days, and once was pleaſed to be lifted up, and give the word of command; and, with great difficulty, perſuaded even the Empreſs herſelf to let me hold her

to

in her close chair within two yards of the stage, from whence she was able to take a full view of the whole performance. It was my good fortune, that no ill accident happened in these entertainments; only once a fiery horse, that belonged to one of the captains, pawing with his hoof struck a hole in my handkerchief, and his foot slipping he overthrew his rider and himself; but I immediately relieved them both, and covering the hole with one hand, I set down the troop with the other, in the same manner as I took them up. The horse that fell was strained in the left shoulder, but the rider got no hurt, and I repaired my handkerchief as well as I could; however, I would not trust to the strength of it any more in such dangerous enterprizes.

About two or three days before I was set at liberty, as I was entertaining the court with this kind of feats, there arrived an express to inform his Majesty, that some of his subjects, riding near the place where I was first taken up, had seen a great black substance lying on the ground, very oddly shaped, extending its edges round as wide as his Majesty's bed-chamber, and rising up in the middle as high as a man; that it was no living creature, as they had first apprehended, for it lay on the grass without motion; and some of them had walked round it several times; that by mounting upon each other's shoulders, they had got to the top, which was flat and even, and, stamping upon it, they found it was hollow within; that they humbly conceived it might be something belonging to the *man-mountain*; and, if his Majesty pleased, they would undertake to bring it with only five horses. I presently knew what they meant, and was glad at heart to receive this intelligence. It seems, upon my first reaching the shore after our shipwreck, I was in such confusion, that, before I came to the place where I went to sleep, my hat, which I had fastened with a string to my head while I was rowing, and had stuck on all the time I was swimming, fell off after I came to land; the string, as I conjecture, breaking by some accident, which I never observed, but thought my hat had been lost at sea. I intreated his Imperial Majesty to give orders, it might be brought to me as soon as possible, describing to him the use and the nature of it; and the next day the waggoners arrived

arrived with it, but not in a very good condition; they had bored two holes in the brim within an inch and an half of the edge, and fastened two hooks in the holes; these hooks were tied by a long cord to the harness, and thus my hat was dragged along for above half an English mile; but the ground in that country being extremely smooth and level, it received less damage than I expected.

Two days after this adventure the Emperor, having ordered that part of his army, which quarters in and about his metropolis, to be in a readiness, took a fancy of diverting himself in a very singular manner. He desired I would stand like a *colossus*, with my legs as far asunder as I conveniently could. He then commanded his general (who was an old experienced leader, and a great patron of mine) to draw up the troops in close order, and march them under me; the foot by twenty four in a breast, and the horse by sixteen, with drums beating, colours flying, and pikes advanced. This body consisted of three thousand foot, and a thousand horse. His Majesty gave orders, upon pain of death, that every soldier in his march should observe the strictest decency with regard to my person; which however could not prevent some of the younger officers from turning up their eyes, as they passed under me: and, to confess the truth, my breeches were at that time in so ill a condition, that they afforded some opportunities for laughter and admiration.

I had sent so many memorials and petitions for my liberty, that his Majesty at length mentioned the matter first in the cabinet, and then in a full council; where it was opposed by none, except Skyresh Bolgolam, who was pleased, without any provocation, to be my mortal enemy. But it was carried against him by the whole board, and confirmed by the Emperor. That minister was *galbet*, or admiral of the realm, very much in his master's confidence, and a person well versed in affairs, but of a morose and four complexion. However, he was at length persuaded to comply; but prevailed that the articles and conditions upon which I should be set free, and to which I must swear, should be drawn up by himself. These articles were brought to me by Skyresh Bolgolam in person, attended by two under-secretaries, and several persons of distinction. After they were read, I

ſwear to the performance of them; firſt in the manner of my own country, and afterwards in the method preſcribed by their laws, which was to hold my right foot in my left hand, and to place the middle finger of my right hand on the crown of my head, and my thumb on the tip of my right ear. But becauſe the reader may be curious to have ſome idea of the ſtyle and manner of expreſſion peculiar to that people, as well as to know the articles upon which I recovered my liberty, I have made a tranſlation of the whole inſtrument word for word, as near as I was able, which I here offer to the public.

Golbaſto Momaren Evlame Gurdilo Shefin Mully Ully Gue, Moſt Mighty Emperor of Lilliput, delight and terror of the univerſe, whoſe dominions extend five thouſand *bluſtrugs* (about twelve miles in circumference) to the extremities of the globe; Monarch of all Monarchs, taller than the ſons of men; whoſe feet preſs down to the center, and whoſe head ſtrikes againſt the ſun; at whoſe nod the princes of the earth ſhake their knees; pleaſant as the ſpring, comfortable as the ſummer, fruitful as autumn, dreadful as winter. His moſt Sublime Majeſty propoſeth to the *man-mountain*, lately arrived at our celeſtial dominions, the following articles, which by a ſolemn oath he ſhall be obliged to perform.

1ſt, The *man-mountain* ſhall not depart from our dominions without our licence under our great ſeal.

2d, He ſhall not preſume to come into our metropolis without our expreſs order; at which time the inhabitants ſhall have two hours warning to keep within doors.

3d, The ſaid *man-mountain* ſhall confine his walks to our principal high roads, and not offer to walk or lie down in a meadow or field of corn.

4th, As he walks the ſaid roads, he ſhall take the utmoſt care not to trample upon the bodies of any of our loving ſubjects, their horſes, or carriages, nor take any of our ſubjects into his hands without their own conſent.

5th, If an expreſs requires extraordinary diſpatch, the *man-mountain* ſhall be obliged to carry in his pocket the meſſenger and horſe a ſix days journey once in every moon, and return the ſaid meſſenger back (if ſo required) ſafe to our Imperial preſence.

6th, He ſhall be our ally againſt our enemies in the iſland

iſland of Blefuſcu *, and do his utmoſt to deſtroy their fleet, which is now preparing to invade us.

7th, That the ſaid *man-mountain* ſhall, at his times of leiſure, be aiding and aſſiſting to our workmen, in helping to raiſe certain great ſtones, towards covering the wall of the principal park and other our royal buildings.

8th, That the ſaid *man-mountain* ſhall, in two moons time, deliver in an exact ſurvey of the circumference of our dominions by a computation of his own paces round the coaſt.

Laſtly, That, upon his ſolemn oath to obſerve all the above articles, the ſaid *man-mountain* ſhall have a daily allowance of meat and drink ſufficient for the ſupport of 1724 of our ſubjects, with free acceſs to our royal perſon, and other marks of our favour. Given at our palace at Belfaborac, the twelfth day of the ninety firſt moon of our reign.

I ſwore and ſubſcribed to theſe articles with great chearfulneſs and content, altho' ſome of them were not ſo honourable as I could have wiſhed; which proceeded wholly from the malice of Skyreſh Bolgolam, the high admiral: whereupon my chains were immediately unlocked, and I was at full liberty. The Emperor himſelf in perſon did me the honour to be by at the whole ceremony. I made my acknowledgements by proſtrating myſelf at his Majeſty's feet: but he commanded me to riſe; and after many gracious expreſſions, which, to avoid the cenſure of vanity, I ſhall not repeat, he added, that he hoped I ſhould prove a uſeful ſervant, and well deſerve all the favours he had already conferred upon me, or might do for the future.

The reader may pleaſe to obſerve, that in the laſt article for the recovery of my liberty, the Emperor ſtipulates to allow me a quantity of meat and drink ſufficient

* In his deſcription of Lilliput, the author ſeems to have had England more immediately in view. In his deſcription of Blefuſcu, he ſeems to intend the people and kingdom of France. Yet the allegory between theſe nations is frequently interrupted, and ſcarce any where complete. Several juſt ſtrokes of ſatire are ſcattered here and there upon errors in the conduct of our government. *Orrery.*

cient for the ſupport of 1724 Lilliputians. Some time after aſking a friend at court, how they came to fix on that determinate number; he told me, that his Majeſty's mathematicians having taken the height of my body by the help of a *quadrant*, and finding it to exceed theirs in the proportion of twelve to one, they concluded from the ſimilarity of their bodies, that mine muſt contain at leaſt 1724 of theirs, and conſequently would require as much food as was neceſſary to ſupport that number of Lilliputians. By which the reader may conceive an idea of the ingenuity of that people, as well as the prudent and exact oeconomy of ſo great a prince.

CHAP. IV.

Mildendo, the metropolis of Lilliput, deſcribed, together with the Emperor's palace. A converſation between the author and a principal ſecretary concerning the affairs of that empire. The author's offers to ſerve the Emperor in his wars.

THE firſt requeſt I made, after I had obtained my liberty, was, that I might have licence to ſee Mildendo, the metropolis; which the Emperor eaſily granted me, but with a ſpecial charge to do no hurt either to the inhabitants or their houſes. The people had notice by proclamation of my deſign to viſit the town. The wall, which encompaſſed it, is two feet and an half high, and at leaſt eleven inches broad, ſo that a coach and horſes may be driven very ſafely round it; and it is flanked with ſtrong towers at ten feet diſtance. I ſtept over the great weſtern gate, and paſſed very gently, and ſideling, thro' the two principal ſtreets, only in my ſhort waiſt-coat, for fear of damaging the roofs and eves of the houſes with the ſkirts of my coat. I walked with the utmoſt circumſpection to avoid treading on any ſtragglers, who might remain in the ſtreets; altho' the orders were very ſtrict, that all people ſhould keep in their houſes at their own peril. The garret-windows and tops of houſes were ſo crouded with ſpectators, that I thought in all my travels I had not ſeen a more populous place. The city is *an exact* ſquare, each ſide of the wall being five hundred

dred feet long. The two great ſtreets, which run croſs, and divide it into four quarters, are five feet wide. The lanes and alleys, which I could not enter, but only viewed them as I paſſed, are from twelve to eighteen inches. The town is capable of holding five hundred thouſand ſouls: the houſes are from three to five ſtories: the ſhops and markets well provided.

The Emperor's palace is in the center of the city, where the two great ſtreets meet. It is incloſed by a wall of two feet high, and twenty feet diſtance from the buildings. I had his Majeſty's permiſſion to ſtep over this wall; and the ſpace being ſo wide between that and the palace, I could eaſily view it on every ſide. The outward court is a ſquare of forty feet, and includes two other courts: in the inmoſt are the royal apartments, which I was very deſirous to ſee, but found it extremely difficult; for the great gates, from one ſquare into another, were but eighteen inches high, and ſeven inches wide. Now the buildings of the outer court were at leaſt five feet high, and it was impoſſible for me to ſtride over them without infinite damage to the pile, tho' the walls were ſtrongly built of hewn ſtone, and four inches thick. At the ſame time the Emperor had a great deſire, that I ſhould ſee the magnificence of his palace; but this I was not able to do till three days after, which I ſpent in cutting down with my knife ſome of the largeſt trees in the royal park, about an hundred yards diſtance from the city. Of theſe trees I made two ſtools, each about three feet high, and ſtrong enough to bear my weight. The people having received notice a ſecond time, I went again thro' the city to the palace with my two ſtools in my hands. When I came to the ſide of the outer court, I ſtood upon one ſtool, and took the other in my hand; this I lifted over the roof, and gently ſet it down on the ſpace between the firſt and the ſecond court, which was eight feet wide. I then ſtept over the building very conveniently from one ſtool to the other, and drew up the firſt after me with a hooked ſtick. By this contrivance I got into the inmoſt court; and, lying down upon my ſide, I applied my face to the windows of the middle ſtories, which were left open on purpoſe, and diſcovered the moſt ſplendid apartments that can be

imagined. There I saw the Empress and the young Princes in their several lodgings with their chief attendants about them. Her Imperial Majesty was pleased to smile very graciously upon me, and gave me out of the window her hand to kiss.

But I shall not anticipate the reader with farther descriptions of this kind, because I reserve them for a greater work, which is now almost ready for the press, containing a general description of this Empire, from its first erection thro' a long series of princes, with a particular account of their wars and politics, laws, learning, and religion, their plants and animals, their peculiar manners and customs, with other matters very curious and useful; my chief design at present being only to relate such events and transactions, as happened to the public or to myself, during a residence of about nine months in that empire.

One morning, about a fortnight after I had obtained my liberty, Reldresal, principal secretary (as they stile him) for private affairs, came to my house attended only by one servant. He ordered his coach to wait at a distance, and desired I would give him an hour's audience; which I readily consented to, on account of his quality and personal merits, as well as of the many good offices he had done me during my sollicitations at court. I offered to lie down, that he might the more conveniently reach my ear; but he chose rather to let me hold him in my hand during our conversation. He began with compliments on my liberty; said, he might pretend to some merit in it: but however added, that, if it had not been for the present situation of things at court, perhaps I might not have obtained it so soon. For, said he, as flourishing a condition as we may appear to be in to foreigners, we labour under two mighty evils; a violent faction at home, and the danger of an invasion by a most potent enemy from abroad. As to the first, you are to understand, that for above seventy moons past there have been two struggling parties in this empire, under the names of Trameksan, and Slameksan*, from the high and low heels of their shoes,

* *High-Church* and *Low-Church*, or *Whig* and *Tory*. As every *accidental difference* between man and man in person and circumstances,

ſhoes, by which they diſtinguiſh themſelves. It is alledged, indeed, that the high heels are moſt agreeable to our antient conſtitution; but, however this be, his Majeſty hath determined to make uſe only of low heels in the adminiſtration of the government, and all offices in the gift of the crown, as you cannot but obſerve; and particularly, that his Majeſty's imperial heels are lower at leaſt by a *drurr* than any of his court (*drurr* is a meaſure about the fourteenth part of an inch.) The animoſities between theſe two parties run ſo high, that they will neither eat, nor drink, nor talk with each other. We compute the Tramecksan, or high-heels, to exceed us in number; but the power is wholly on our ſide. We apprehend his Imperial Highneſs, the heir to the crown, to have ſome tendency towards the high-heels; at leaſt, we can plainly diſcover, that one of his heels is higher than the other, which gives him a hobble in his gate. Now, in the midſt of theſe inteſtine diſquiets we are threatened with an invaſion from the iſland of Blefuſcu, which is the other great empire of the univerſe, almoſt as large and powerful as this of his Majeſty. For, as to what we have heard you affirm, that there are other kingdoms and ſtates in the world inhabited by human creatures as large as yourſelf, our philoſophers are in much doubt, and would rather conjecture that you dropped from the moon, or one of the ſtars; becauſe it is certain, that an hundred mortals of your bulk would in a ſhort time deſtroy all the fruits and cattle of his Majeſty's dominions: beſides, our hiſtories of ſix thouſand moons make no mention of any other regions, than the two great empires of Lilliput and Blefuſcu. Which two mighty powers have, as I was going to tell you, been engaged in a moſt obſtinate war for ſix and thirty moons paſt. It began upon the following occaſion: it is allowed on all hands, that the primitive way of breaking eggs, before we eat them, was upon the larger end; but his preſent Majeſty's grandfather, while he was a boy, going to eat an egg, and breaking it according

ſtances, is by this work rendered extremely contemptible; ſo *ſpeculative differences* are ſhewn to be equally ridiculous, when the zeal with which they are oppoſed and defended, too much exceeds their importance. *Hawkeſ.*

cording to the antient practice, happened to cut one of his fingers. Whereupon the Emperor, his father, publiſhed an edict, commanding all his ſubjects, upon great penalties, to break the ſmaller end of their eggs. The people ſo highly reſented this law, that our hiſtories tell us, there have been ſix rebellions raiſed on that account; wherein one Emperor loſt his life, and another his crown. Theſe civil commotions were conſtantly fomented by the Monarchs of Blefuſcu; and, when they were quelled, the exiles always fled for refuge to that empire. It is computed that eleven thouſand perſons have at ſeveral times ſuffered death, rather than ſubmit to break their eggs at the ſmaller end. Many hundred large volumes have been publiſhed upon this controverſy; but the books of the Big-endians have been long forbidden, and the whole party rendered incapable by law of holding employments. During the courſe of theſe troubles, the Emperors of Blefuſcu did frequently expoſtulate by their ambaſſadors, accuſing us of making a ſchiſm in religion by offending againſt a fundamental doctrine of our great prophet Luſtrog, in the fifty fourth chapter of the Blundecral (which is their Alcoran. This however is thought to be a mere ſtrain upon the text; for the words are theſe: *That all true believers break their eggs at the convenient end.* And which is the convenient end, ſeems in my humble opinion to be left to every man's conſcience, or at leaſt in the power of the chief magiſtrate to determine. Now, the Big-endian exiles have found ſo much credit in the Emperor of Blefuſcu's court, and ſo much private aſſiſtance and encouragement from their party here at home, that a bloody war hath been carried on between the two empires for ſix and thirty moons, with various ſucceſs; during which time we have loſt forty capital ſhips, and a much greater number of ſmaller veſſels, together with thirty thouſand of our beſt ſeamen and ſoldiers; and the damage received by the enemy is reckoned to be ſomewhat greater than ours. However, they have now equipped a numerous fleet, and are juſt preparing to make a deſcent upon us; and his Imperial Majeſty, placing great confidence in your valour and ſtrength, hath commanded me to lay this account of his affairs before you.

I deſired the ſecretary to preſent my humble duty to the

the Emperor, and to let him know, that I thought it would not become me, who was a foreigner, to interfere with parties; but I was ready, with the hazard of my life, to defend his perſon and ſtate againſt all invaders*.

CHAP. V.

The author, by an extraordinary ſtratagem, prevents an invaſion. A high title of honour is conferred upon him. Ambaſſadors arrive from the Emperor of Blefuſcu, and ſue for peace. The Empreſs's apartment on fire by an accident: the author inſtrumental in ſaving the reſt of the palace.

THE empire of Blefuſcu is an iſland, ſituated to the north-eaſt ſide of Lilliput, from whence it is parted only by a channel of eight hundred yards wide. I had not yet ſeen it, and upon this notice of an intended invaſion, I avoided appearing on that ſide of the coaſt, for fear of being diſcovered by ſome of the enemy's ſhips, who had received no intelligence of me, all intercourſe between the two empires having been ſtrictly forbidden during the war upon pain of death, and an embargo laid by our Emperor upon all veſſels whatſoever. I communicated to his Majeſty a project I had formed of ſeizing the enemy's whole fleet: which, as our ſcouts aſſured us, lay at anchor in the harbour ready to ſail with the firſt fair wind. I conſulted the moſt experienced ſeamen upon the depth of the channel, which they had often plummed; who told me, that in the middle at high-water it was ſeventy *glumgluffs* deep, which is about ſix feet of European meaſure; and the reſt of it fifty *glumgluffs* at moſt. I walked towards the north eaſt coaſt, over-againſt Blefuſcu; where, lying down behind a hillock, I took out

* Gulliver, without examining the ſubject of diſpute, readily engaged to defend the Emperor againſt an invaſion; becauſe he knew, that no ſuch monarch had a right to invade the dominions of another, tho' for the propagation of truth.

Hawkeſ.

my ſmall perſpective glaſs, and viewed the enemy's fleet at anchor, conſiſting of about fifty men of war, and a great number of tranſports; I then came back to my houſe, and gave orders (for which I had a warrant) for a great quantity of the ſtrongeſt cable and bars of iron. The cable was about as thick as pack-thread, and the bars of the length and ſize of a knitting-needle. I trebled the cable to make it ſtronger, and for the ſame reaſon I twiſted three of the iron-bars together, bending the extremities into a hook. Having thus fixed fifty hooks to as many cables, I went back to the north-eaſt coaſt, and putting off my coat, ſhoes, and ſtockings, walked into the ſea in my leathern jerkin about half an hour before high-water. I waded with what haſte I could, and ſwam in the middle about thirty yards, till I felt ground; I arrived at the fleet in leſs than half an hour. The enemy was ſo frighted when they ſaw me, that they leaped out of their ſhips, and ſwam to ſhore, where there could not be fewer than thirty thouſand ſouls: I then took my tackling, and faſtening a hook to the hole at the prow of each, I tied all the cords together at the end. While I was thus employed, the enemy diſcharged ſeveral thouſand arrows, many of which ſtuck in my hands and face; and, beſides the exceſſive ſmart, gave me much diſturbance in my work. My greateſt apprehenſion was for mine eyes, which I ſhould have infallibly loſt, if I had not ſuddenly thought of an expedient. I kept among other little neceſſaries a pair of ſpectacles in a private pocket, which, as I obſerved before, had eſcaped the Emperor's ſearchers. Theſe I took out and faſtened as ſtrongly as I could upon my noſe, and thus armed went on boldly with my work in ſpight of the enemy's arrows, many of which ſtruck againſt the glaſſes of my ſpectacles, but without any other effect, farther than a little to diſcompoſe them. I had now faſtened all the hooks, and taking the knot in my hand began to pull; but not a ſhip would ſtir, for they were all too faſt held by their anchors, ſo that the boldeſt part of my enterprize remained. I therefore let go the cord, and leaving the hooks fixed to the ſhips, I reſolutely cut with my knife the cables that faſtened the anchors, receiving above two hundred ſhots in my face and hands; then I took up the knotted end of the cables,

to

to which my hooks were tied, and with great eaſe drew fifty of the enemy's largeſt men of war after me.

The Bleſuſcudians, who had not the leaſt imagination of what I intended, were at firſt confounded with aſtoniſhment. They had ſeen me cut the cables, and thought my deſign was only to let the ſhips run a-drift, or fall foul on each other: but, when they perceived the whole fleet moving in order, and ſaw me pulling at the end, they ſet up ſuch a ſcream of grief and deſpair, as it is almoſt impoſſible to deſcribe or conceive. When I had got out of danger, I ſtopt a while to pick out the arrows that ſtuck in my hands and face; and rubbed on ſome of the ſame ointment that was given me at my firſt arrival, as I have formerly mentioned. I then took off my ſpectacles, and waiting about an hour, till the tide was a little fallen, I waded thro' the middle with my cargo, and arrived ſafe at the royal port of Lilliput.

The Emperor and his whole court ſtood on the ſhore expecting the iſſue of this great adventure. They ſaw the ſhips move forward in a large half-moon, but could not diſcern me, who was up to my breaſt in water. When I advanced to the middle of the channel, they were yet more in pain, becauſe I was under water to my neck. The Emperor concluded me to be drowned, and that the enemy's fleet was approaching in an hoſtile manner: but he was ſoon eaſed of his fears; for the channel growing ſhallower every ſtep I made, I came in a ſhort time within hearing, and holding up the end of the cable by which the fleet was faſtened, I cried in a loud voice, *Long live the moſt puiſſant Emperor of Lilliput!* This great Prince received me at my landing with all poſſible encomiums, and created me a Nardac upon the ſpot, which is the higheſt title of honour among them.

His Majeſty deſired I would take ſome other opportunity of bringing all the reſt of his enemy's ſhips into his ports. And ſo unmeaſurable is the ambition of princes, that he ſeemed to think of nothing leſs than reducing the whole empire of Bleſuſcu into a province, and governing it by a vice-roy; of deſtroying the Big-endian exiles, and compelling that people to break the ſmaller end of their eggs, by which he would remain the ſole monarch of the whole world. But I endeavoured to divert him from this

deſign.

deſign by many arguments drawn from the topics of policy as well as juſtice: and I plainly proteſted, that I would never be an inſtrument of bringing a free and brave people into ſlavery. And, when the matter was debated in council, the wiſeſt part of the miniſtry were of my opinion.

THIS open bold declaration of mine was ſo oppoſite to the ſchemes and politics of his Imperial Majeſty, that he could never forgive me: he mentioned it in a very artful manner at council, where I was told that ſome of the wiſeſt appeared at leaſt by their ſilence to be of my opinion; but others, who were my ſecret enemies, could not forbear ſome expreſſions, which by a ſide-wind reflected on me. And from this time began an intrigue between his Majeſty, and a junto of miniſters maliciouſly bent againſt me, which broke out in leſs than two months, and had like to have ended in my utter deſtruction. Of ſo little weight are the greateſt ſervices to princes, when put into the balance with a refuſal to gratify their paſſions.

ABOUT three weeks after this exploit, there arrived a ſolemn embaſſy from Blefuſcu with humble offers of a peace; which was ſoon concluded upon conditions very advantageous to our Emperor, wherewith I ſhall not trouble the reader. There were ſix ambaſſadors, with a train of about five hundred perſons; and their entry was very magnificent, ſuitable to the grandeur of their maſter, and the importance of their buſineſs. When their treaty was finiſhed, wherein I did them ſeveral good offices by the credit I now had, or at leaſt appeared to have at court, their Excellencies, who were privately told how much I had been their friend, made me a viſit in form. They began with many compliments upon my valour and generoſity, invited me to that kingdom in the Emperor their maſter's name, and deſired me to ſhew them ſome proofs of my prodigious ſtrength, of which they had heard ſo many wonders; wherein I readily obliged them, but ſhall not trouble the reader with the particulars.

WHEN I had for ſome time entertained their Excellencies to their infinite ſatisfaction and ſurprize, I deſired they would do me the honour to preſent my moſt humble reſpects

reſpects to the Emperor their maſter, the renown of whoſe virtues had ſo juſtly filled the whole world with admiration, and whoſe royal perſon I reſolved to attend before I returned to my own country: accordingly, the next time I had the honour to ſee our Emperor, I deſired his general licence to wait on the Blefuſcudian Monarch, which he was pleaſed to grant me, as I could plainly perceive, in a very cold manner; but could not gueſs the reaſon, till I had a whiſper from a certain perſon, that Flimnap and Bolgolam had repreſented my intercourſe with thoſe ambaſſadors as a mark of diſaffection, from which I am ſure my heart was wholly free. And this was the firſt time I began to conceive ſome imperfect idea of courts and miniſters.

It is to be obſerved, that theſe ambaſſadors ſpoke to me by an interpreter, the languages of both empires differing as much from each other as any two in Europe, and each nation priding itſelf upon the antiquity, beauty, and energy of their own tongues, with an avowed contempt for that of their neighbour; yet our Emperor, ſtanding upon the advantage he had got by the ſeizure of their fleet, obliged them to deliver their credentials, and make their ſpeech in the Lilliputian tongue. And it muſt be confeſſed, that from the great intercourſe of trade and commerce between both realms, from the continual reception of exiles, which is mutual among them, and from the cuſtom in each empire to ſend their young nobility and richer gentry to the other in order to poliſh themſelves by ſeeing the world, and underſtanding men and manners; there are few perſons of diſtinction, or merchants, or ſeamen, who dwell in the maritime parts, but what can hold converſation in both tongues; as I found ſome weeks after, when I went to pay my reſpects to the Emperor of Blefuſcu, which in the midſt of great misfortunes, thro' the malice of my enemies, proved a very happy adventure to me, as I ſhall relate in its proper place.

The reader may remember, that when I ſigned thoſe articles upon which I recovered my liberty, there were ſome which I diſliked upon account of their being too ſervile, neither could any thing but an extreme neceſſity have forced me to ſubmit. But being now a Nardac of the

higheſt rank in that empire, ſuch offices were looked upon as below my dignity, and the Emperor, (to do him juſtice) never once mentioned them to me. However, it was not long before I had an opportunity of doing his Majeſty, at leaſt as I then thought, a moſt ſignal ſervice. I was alarmed at midnight with the cries of many hundred people at my door; by which being ſuddenly awaked, I was in ſome kind of terror. I heard the word Burglum repeated inceſſantly: ſeveral of the Emperor's court, making their way thro' the croud, intreated me to come immediately to the palace, where her Imperial Majeſty's apartment was on fire by the careleſneſs of a maid of honour, who fell aſleep while ſhe was reading a romance. I got up in an inſtant; and orders being given to clear the way before me, and it being likewiſe a moon-ſhine night, I made a ſhift to get to the palace without trampling on any of the people. I found they had already applied ladders to the walls of the apartment, and were well provided with buckets, but the water was at ſome diſtance. Theſe buckets were about the ſize of a large thimble, and the poor people ſupplied me with them as faſt as they could; but the flame was ſo violent, that they did little good. I might eaſily have ſtifled it with my coat, which I unfortunately left behind me for haſte, and came away only in my leathern jerkin. The caſe ſeemed wholly deſperate and deplorable, and this magnificent palace would have infallibly been burnt down to the ground, if by a preſence of mind unuſual to me I had not ſuddenly thought of an expedient. I had the evening before drank plentifully of a moſt delicious wine called Glimigrim (the Blefuſcudians call it Flunec, but ours is eſteemed the better ſort) which is very diuretic. By the luckieſt chance in the world I had not diſcharged myſelf of any part of it. The heat I had contracted by coming very near the flames, and by my labouring to quench them, made the wine begin to operate by urine; which I voided in ſuch a quantity, and applied ſo well to the proper places, that in three minutes the fire was wholly extinguiſhed, and the reſt of that noble pile, which had coſt ſo many ages in erecting, preſerved from deſtruction.

It was now day-light, and I returned to my houſe without

without waiting to congratulate with the Emperor: becauſe, altho' I had done a very eminent piece of ſervice, yet I could not tell how his Majeſty might reſent the manner by which I had performed it: for, by the fundamental laws of the realm, it is capital in any perſon, of what quality ſoever, to make water within the precincts of the palace. But I was a little comforted by a meſſage from his Majeſty, that he would give orders to the grand juſticiary for paſſing my pardon in form; which however I could not obtain. And I was privately aſſured, that the Empreſs, conceiving the greateſt abhorrence of what I had done, removed to the moſt diſtant ſide of the court, firmly reſolved that thoſe buildings ſhould never be repaired for her uſe; and, in the preſence of her chief confidents, could not forbear vowing revenge.

CHAP. VI.

Of the inhabitants of Lilliput: their learning, laws, and cuſtoms, the manner of educating their children. The author's way of living in that country. His vindication of a great Lady.

ALTHO' I intend to leave the deſcription of this empire to a particular treatiſe, yet in the mean time I am content to gratify the curious reader with ſome general ideas. As the common ſize of the natives is ſomewhat under ſix inches high, ſo there is an exact proportion in all other animals, as well as plants and trees: for inſtance, the talleſt horſes and oxen are between four and five inches in height, the ſheep an inch and a half, more or leſs; their geeſe about the bigneſs of a ſparrow, and ſo the ſeveral gradations downwards, till you come to the ſmalleſt, which to my ſight were almoſt inviſible; but nature hath adapted the eyes of the Lilliputians to all objects proper for their view: they ſee with great exactneſs, but at no great diſtance. And, to ſhew the ſharpneſs of their ſight towards objects that are near, I have been much pleaſed with obſerving a cook pulling a lark, which was not ſo large as a common fly; and a young

girl

girl threading an inviſible needle with inviſible ſilk. Their talleſt trees are about ſeven feet high: I mean ſome of thoſe in the great royal park, the tops whereof I could but juſt reach with my fiſt clinched. The other vegetables are in the ſame proportion; but this I leave to the reader's imagination.

I ſhall ſay but little at preſent of their learning, which for many ages hath flouriſhed in all its branches among them: but their manner of writing is very peculiar, being neither from the left to the right, like the Europeans; nor from the right to the left, like the Arabians; nor from up to down, like the Chineſe; but aſlant from one corner of the paper to the other, like ladies in England.

THEY bury their dead with their heads directly downwards, becauſe they hold an opinion, that in eleven thouſand moons they are all to riſe again, in which period the earth (which they conceive to be flat) will turn upſide down, and by this means they ſhall at their reſurrection be found ready ſtanding on their feet*. The learned among them confeſs the abſurdity of this doctrine, but the practice ſtill continues in compliance to the vulgar†.

THERE

* Here the author dares even to exert his vein of humour ſo liberally, as to place the reſurrection, one of the moſt encouraging principles of the Chriſtian religion, in a ridiculous and contemptible light. Why ſhould that appointment be denied to man, or appear ſo very extraordinary in the human kind, which the author of nature has illuſtrated in the vegetable ſpecies, where the ſeed dies and corrupts before it can riſe again to new beauty and glory? *Orrery.*

† This paragraph, if it were examined with judgment and candour, would incline us to believe, that an opinion of a life to come is connected ſo immediately with all our reaſoning faculties, that, ſuppoſing we had never been bleſſed with any revelation from God, we ſhould believe the reſurrection to life eternal. The Lilliputians believe, that, after eleven thouſand moons, the earth will be turned upſide down; and upon that account they are buried with their heads directly downwards, in order to be found ſtanding upon their feet at the day of reſurrection: An opinion, which I confeſs, with the learned among themſelves, to be whimſical and ridiculous enough. But follies

THERE are some laws and customs in this empire very peculiar; and, if they were not so directly contrary to those of my own dear country, I should be tempted to say a little in their justification. It is only to be wished they were as well executed. The first I shall mention relates to informers. All crimes against the state are punished here with the utmost severity; but if the person accused maketh his innocence plainly to appear upon his trial, the accuser is immediately put to an ignominious death; and out of his goods or lands the innocent person is quadruply recompensed for the loss of his time, for the danger he underwent, for the hardship of his imprisonment, and for all the charges he hath been at in making his defence. Or, if that fund be deficient, it is largely supplied by the crown. The Emperor also confers on him some public mark of his favour, and proclamation is made of his innocence thro' the whole city.

THEY look upon fraud as a greater crime than theft, and therefore seldom fail to punish it with death; for they alledge, that care and vigilance, with a very common understanding, may preserve a man's goods from thieves, but honesty has no fence against superior cunning; and since it is necessary that there should be a perpetual intercourse of buying and selling, and dealing upon credit; where fraud is permitted and connived at, or hath no law to punish it, the honest dealer is always undone, and the knave gets the advantage. I remember when I was once interceeding with the King for a criminal, who had wronged his master of a great sum of money, which he had received by order and ran away with; and happening to tell his Majesty, by way of extenuation,

follies and absurdities are always mixed with idolatry and superstition. The Lilliputians were rank Idolaters; otherwise how could they imagine Gulliver's watch to be the god that he worshipped? And therefore I cannot but infer, that instead of placing the resurrection in a ridiculous, contemptible light, Gulliver hath fairly manifested the opinion of a state hereafter (altho' connected with some vanities and absurdities, which are the effects of superstition) to be the ground-work of all religion, founded upon the clear and strong dictates both of nature and reason. *Swift.*

that it was only a breach of truſt; the Emperor thought it monſtrous in me to offer as a defence the greateſt aggravation of the crime; and truly I had little to ſay in return, farther than the common anſwer, that different nations had different cuſtoms; for, I confeſs, I was heartily aſhamed*.

ALTHO' we uſually call reward and puniſhment the two hinges upon which all government turns, yet I could never obſerve this maxim to be put in practice by any nation, except that of Lilliput. Whoever can there bring ſufficient proof, that he hath ſtrictly obſerved the laws of his country for ſeventy three moons, hath a claim to certain privileges, according to his quality and condition of life, with a proportionable ſum of money out of a fund appropriated for that uſe: he likewiſe acquires the title of *Snilpall* or *legal*, which is added to his name, but doth not deſcend to his poſterity. And theſe people thought it a prodigious defect of policy among us, when I told them, that our laws were enforced only by penalties, without any mention of reward. It is upon this account, that the image of juſtice in their courts of judicature is formed with ſix eyes, two before, as many behind, and on each ſide one, to ſignify circumſpection; with a bag of gold open in her right hand, and a ſword ſheathed in her left, to ſhew ſhe is more diſpoſed to reward than to puniſh.

IN chuſing perſons for all employments, they have more regard to good morals than to great abilities; for, ſince government is neceſſary to mankind, they believe that the common ſize of human underſtandings is fitted to ſome ſtation or other, and that providence never intended to make the management of public affairs a myſtery to be comprehended only by a few perſons of ſublime genius, of which there ſeldom are three born in an age: but they ſuppoſe truth, juſtice, temperance, and the like, to be in every man's power; the practice of which virtues, aſſiſted by experience and a good intention, would qualify any man for the ſervice of his country, except where a courſe of ſtudy is required. But they thought the want of

* *An act* of parliament hath been ſince paſſed, by which ſome *breaches of* truſt have been made capital. *Hawkeſ.*

of moral virtues was ſo far from being ſupplied by ſuperior endowments of the mind, that employments could never be put into ſuch dangerous hands as thoſe of perſons ſo qualified; and at leaſt, that the miſtakes committed by ignorance in a virtuous diſpoſition would never be of ſuch fatal conſequence to the public weal, as the practices of a man whoſe inclinations led him to be corrupt, and who had great abilities to manage, to multiply, and defend his corruptions.

In like manner, the diſbelief of a divine providence renders a man uncapable of holding any public ſtation: for, ſince kings avow themſelves to be the deputies of providence, the Lilliputians think nothing can be more abſurd, than for a prince to employ ſuch men as diſown the authority under which he acteth.

In relating theſe and the following laws, I would only be underſtood to mean the original inſtitutions, and not the moſt ſcandalous corruptions, into which theſe people are fallen by the degenerate nature of man. For as to that infamous practice of acquiring great employments by dancing on the ropes, or badges of favour and diſtinction by leaping over ſticks, and creeping under them, the reader is to obſerve, that they were firſt introduced by the grandfather of the Emperor now reigning, and grew to the preſent height by the gradual increaſe of party and faction.

Ingratitude is among them a capital crime, as we read it to have been in ſome other countries; for they reaſon thus, that whoever makes ill returns to his benefactor, muſt needs be a common enemy to the reſt of mankind, from whom he hath received no obligation, and therefore ſuch a man is not fit to live.

Their notions relating to the duties of parents and children differ extremely from ours. For, ſince the conjunction of male and female is founded upon the great law of nature in order to propagate and continue the ſpecies, the Lilliputians will needs have it, that men and women are joined together like other animals by the motives of concupiſcence; and that their tenderneſs towards their young proceeds from the like natural principle: for which reaſon they will never allow, that a child is under any obligation to his father for begetting him, or to his

mother for bringing him into the world, which, conſidering the miſeries of human life, was neither a benefit in itſelf, nor intended ſo by his parents, whoſe thoughts in their love encounters were otherwiſe employed. Upon theſe, and the like reaſonings, their opinion is, that parents are the laſt of all others to be truſted with the education of their own children: and therefore they have in every town public nurſeries, where all parents, except cottagers and labourers, are obliged to ſend their infants of both ſexes to be reared and educated when they come to the age of twenty moons, at which time they are ſuppoſed to have ſome rudiments of docility. Theſe ſchools are of ſeveral kinds, ſuited to different qualities, and to both ſexes. They have certain profeſſors well ſkilled in preparing children for ſuch a condition of life as befits the rank of their parents, and their own capacities as well as inclinations. I ſhall firſt ſay ſomething of the male nurſeries, and then of the female.

The nurſeries for males of noble or eminent birth are provided with grave and learned profeſſors, and their ſeveral deputies. The cloaths and food of the children are plain and ſimple. They are bred up in the principles of honour, juſtice, courage, modeſty, clemency, religion, and love of their country; they are always employed in ſome buſineſs, except in the times of eating and ſleeping, which are very ſhort, and two hours for diverſions conſiſting of bodily exerciſes. They are dreſſed by men till four years of age, and then are obliged to dreſs themſelves, altho' their quality be ever ſo great; and the women attendants, who are aged proportionably to ours at fifty, perform only the moſt menial offices. They are never ſuffered to converſe with ſervants, but go together in ſmaller or greater numbers to take their diverſions, and always in the preſence of a profeſſor, or one of his deputies; whereby they avoid thoſe early bad impreſſions of folly and vice, to which our children are ſubject. Their parents are ſuffered to ſee them only twice a-year; the viſit is to laſt but an hour; they are allowed to kiſs the child at meeting and parting; but a profeſſor, who always ſtands by on thoſe occaſions, will not ſuffer them to whiſper, or uſe any fondling expreſſions, or bring any preſents of toys, ſweet-meats, and the like.

The

The penſion from each family for the education and entertainment of a child, upon failure of due payment, is levied by the Emperor's officers.

The nurſeries for children of ordinary gentlemen, merchants, traders, and handicrafts, are managed proportionably after the ſame manner; only thoſe deſigned for trades are put out apprentices at eleven years old, whereas thoſe of perſons of quality continue in their exerciſes till fifteen, which anſwers to twenty one with us: but the confinement is gradually leſſened for the laſt three years.

In the female nurſeries, the young girls of quality are educated much like the males, only they are dreſſed by orderly ſervants of their own ſex; but always in the preſence of a profeſſor or deputy, till they come to dreſs themſelves, which is at five years old. And if it be found, that theſe nurſes ever preſume to entertain the girls with frightful or fooliſh ſtories, or the common follies practiſed by chamber-maids among us, they are publicly whipped thrice about the city, impriſoned for a year, and baniſhed for life to the moſt deſolate part of the country. Thus the young ladies there are as much aſhamed of being cowards and fools as the men, and deſpiſe all perſonal ornaments beyond decency and cleanlineſs: neither did I perceive any difference in their education, made by their difference of ſex, only that the exerciſes of the females were not altogether ſo robuſt, and that ſome rules were given them relating to domeſtic life, and a ſmaller compaſs of learning was enjoined them; for their maxim is, that, among people of quality, a wife ſhould be always a reaſonable and agreeable companion, becauſe ſhe cannot always be young. When the girls are twelve years old, which among them is the marriageable age, their parents or guardians take them home with great expreſſions of gratitude to the profeſſors, and ſeldom without tears of the young Lady and her companions.

In the nurſeries of females of the meaner ſort, the children are inſtructed in all kinds of works proper for their ſex, and their ſeveral degrees: thoſe intended for apprentices are diſmiſſed at ſeven years old, the reſt are kept to eleven.

The meaner families, who have children at theſe nurſeries,

ſeries, are obliged, beſides their annual penſion, which is as low as poſſible, to return to the ſteward of the nurſery a ſmall monthly ſhare of their gettings to be a portion for the child; and therefore all parents are limited in their expences by the law. For the Lilliputians think nothing can be more unjuſt, than for people, in ſubſervience to their own appetites, to bring children into the world, and leave the burden of ſupporting them on the public. As to perſons of quality, they give ſecurity to appropriate a certain ſum for each child, ſuitable to their condition; and theſe funds are always managed with good huſbandry, and the moſt exact juſtice.

THE cottagers and labourers keep their children at home, their buſineſs being only to till and cultivate the earth, and therefore their education is of little conſequence to the public: but the old and diſeaſed among them are ſupported by hoſpitals: for begging is a trade unknown in this empire.

AND here it may perhaps divert the curious reader, to give ſome account of my domeſtics, and my manner of living in this country, during a reſidence of nine months and thirteen days. Having a head mechanically turned, and being likewiſe forced by neceſſity, I had made for myſelf a table and chair convenient enough out of the largeſt trees in the royal park. Two hundred ſempſtreſſes were employed to make me ſhirts, and linen for my bed and table, all of the ſtrongeſt and coarſeſt kind they could get; which however they were forced to quilt together in ſeveral folds, for the thickeſt was ſome degrees finer than lawn. Their linen is uſually three inches wide, and three feet make a piece. The ſempſtreſſes took my meaſure as I lay on the ground, one ſtanding at my neck, and another at my mid-leg, with a ſtrong cord extended, that each held by the end, while a third meaſured the length of the cord with a rule of an inch long. Then they meaſured my right thumb, and deſired no more; for by a mathematical computation, that twice round the thumb is once round the wriſt, and ſo on to the neck and the waiſt, and by the help of my old ſhirt, which I diſplayed on the ground before them for a pattern, they fitted me exactly. Three hundred taylors were employed in the ſame manner to make me cloaths; but they had another contrivance

contrivance for taking my meaſure. I kneeled down, and they raiſed a ladder from the ground to my neck; upon this ladder one of them mounted, and let fall a plum-line from my collar to the floor, which juſt anſwered the length of my coat; but my waiſt and arms I meaſured myſelf. When my cloaths were finiſhed, which was done in my houſe (for the largeſt of theirs would not have been able to hold them) they looked like the patch-work made by the ladies in England, only that mine were all of a colour.

I had three hundred cooks to dreſs my victuals in little convenient huts built about my houſe, where they and their families lived, and prepared me two diſhes a-piece. I took up twenty waiters in my hand, and placed them on the table; an hundred more attended below on the ground, ſome with diſhes of meat, and ſome with barrels of wine, and other liquors ſlung on their ſhoulders; all which the waiters above drew up, as I wanted, in a very ingenious manner, by certain cords, as we draw the bucket up a well in Europe. A diſh of their meat was a good mouthful, and a barrel of their liquor a reaſonable draught. Their mutton yields to ours, but their beef is excellent. I have had a ſirloin ſo large, that I have been forced to make three bits of it; but this is rare. My ſervants were aſtoniſhed to ſee me eat it, bones and all, as in our country we do the leg of a lark. Their geeſe and turkies I uſually eat at a mouthful, and I muſt confeſs, they far exceed ours. Of their ſmaller fowl I could take up twenty or thirty at the end of my knife.

One day his Imperial Majeſty being informed of my way of living, deſired that himſelf and his royal conſort, with the young princes of the blood of both ſexes, might have the happineſs (as he was pleaſed to call it) of dining with me. They came accordingly, and I placed them in chairs of ſtate upon my table, juſt over-againſt me, with their guards about them. Flimnap, the Lord High Treaſurer, attended there likewiſe with his white ſtaff; and I obſerved he often looked on me with a ſour countenance, which I would not ſeem to regard, but eat more than uſual, in honour to my dear country, as well as to fill the court with admiration. I have ſome private reaſons to believe, that this viſit from his Majeſty gave Flimnap an

opportunity

opportunity of doing me ill offices to his maſter. That miniſter had always been my ſecret enemy, tho' he outwardly careſſed me more than was uſual to the moroſeneſs of his nature. He repreſented to the Emperor the low condition of his treaſury; that he was forced to take up money at great diſcount; that exchequer bills would not circulate under nine *per cent* below par; that I had coſt his Majeſty above a million and a half of *ſprugs* (their greateſt gold coin, about the bigneſs of a ſpangle) and upon the whole, that it would be adviſeable in the Emperor to take the firſt fair occaſion of diſmiſſing me.

I am here obliged to vindicate the reputation of an excellent lady, who was an innocent ſufferer upon my account. The Treaſurer took a fancy to be jealous of his wife, from the malice of ſome evil tongues, who informed him that her Grace had taken a violent affection for my perſon; and the court-ſcandal ran for ſome time, that ſhe once came privately to my lodging. This I ſolemnly declare to be a moſt infamous falſhood, without any grounds, further than that her Grace was pleaſed to treat me with all innocent marks of freedom and friendſhip. I own ſhe came often to my houſe, but always publicly, nor ever without three more in the coach, who were uſually her ſiſter and young daughter, and ſome particular acquaintance; but this was common to many other ladies of the court. And I ſtill appeal to my ſervants round, whether they at any time ſaw a coach at my door, without knowing what perſons were in it. On thoſe occaſions, when a ſervant had given me notice, my cuſtom was to go immediately to the door; and, after paying my reſpects, to take up the coach and two horſes very carefully in my hands (for, if there were ſix horſes, the poſtillion always unharneſſed four) and placed them on a table, where I had fixed a moveable rim quite round of five inches high, to prevent accidents. And I have often had four coaches and horſes at once on my table full of company, while I ſat in my chair, leaning my face towards them; and, when I was engaged with one ſet, the coachman would gently drive the others round my table. I have paſſed many an afternoon very agreeably in theſe converſations. But I defy the Treaſurer, or his two informers (I will name them, and let them make their beſt of it) Cluſtril and Drunlo,

Drunlo, to prove that any perſon ever came to me *incognito*, except the Secretary Reldreſal, who was ſent by expreſs command of his Imperial Majeſty, as I have before related. I ſhould not have dwelt ſo long upon this particular, if it had not been a point wherein the reputation of a great lady is ſo nearly concerned, to ſay nothing of my own, tho' I then had the honour to be a *Nardac*, which the Treaſurer himſelf is not; for all the world knows, that he is only a *Glumglum*, a title inferior by one degree, as that of a Marquis is to a Duke in England; yet I allow he preceeded me in right of his poſt. Theſe falſe informations, which I afterwards came to the knowledge of by an accident not proper to mention, made the Treaſurer ſhew his lady for ſome time an ill countenance, and me a worſe; and altho' he was at laſt undeceived and reconciled to her, yet I loſt all credit with him, and found my intereſt decline very faſt with the Emperor himſelf, who was indeed too much governed by that favourite.

CHAP. VII.

The author, being informed of a deſign to accuſe him of high-treaſon, maketh his eſcape to Blefuſcu. His reception there.

BEFORE I proceed to give an account of my leaving this kingdom, it may be proper to inform the reader of a private intrigue, which had been for two months forming againſt me.

I had been hitherto all my life a ſtranger to courts, for which I was unqualified by the meanneſs of my condition. I had indeed heard and read enough of the diſpoſitions of great princes and miniſters; but never expected to have found ſuch terrible effects of them in ſo remote a country, governed, as I thought, by very different maxims from thoſe in Europe.

WHEN I was juſt preparing to pay my attendance on the Emperor of Blefuſcu, a conſiderable perſon at court (to whom I had been very ſerviceable at a time when he lay under the higheſt diſpleaſure of his Imperial Majeſty) came to my houſe very privately at night in a cloſe chair,

and

and, without ſending his name, deſired admittance: the chairmen were diſmiſſed; I put the chair with his Lordſhip in it into my coat-pocket; and giving orders to a truſty ſervant to ſay I was indiſpoſed and gone to ſleep, I faſtened the door of my houſe, placed the chair on the table, according to my uſual cuſtom, and ſat down by it. After the common ſalutations were over, obſerving his Lordſhip's countenance full of concern, and inquiring into the reaſon, he deſired I would hear him with patience in a matter that highly concerned my honour and my life. His ſpeech was to the following effect, for I took notes of it as ſoon as he left me.

You are to know, ſaid he, that ſeveral committees of council have been lately called in the moſt private manner on your account; and it is but two days ſince his Majeſty came to a full reſolution.

You are very ſenſible that Skyris Bolgolam (*Galbet*, or High-Admiral) hath been your mortal enemy almoſt ever ſince your arrival: his original reaſons I know not; but his hatred is increaſed ſince your great ſucceſs againſt Blefuſcu, by which his glory, as Admiral, is much obſcured. This Lord, in conjunction with Flimnap the High-Treaſurer, whoſe enmity againſt you is notorious on account of his Lady, Limtoc the General, Lalcon the Chamberlain, and Balmuff the Grand Juſticiary, have prepared articles of impeachment againſt you for treaſon, and other capital crimes.

This preface made me ſo impatient, being conſcious of my own merits and innocence, that I was going to interrupt: when he entreated me to be ſilent, and thus proceeded.

Out of gratitude for the favours you have done me, I procured information of the whole proceedings, and a copy of the articles; wherein I venture my head for your ſervice.

Articles of impeachment againſt Quinbus Fleſtrin the man-mountain.

ARTICLE I.

Whereas, by a ſtatute made in the reign of his Imperial Majeſty Calin Deffar Plune, it is enacted, that whoever

whoever ſhall make water within the precincts of the royal palace, ſhall be liable to the pains and penalties of high-treaſon: notwithſtanding the ſaid Quinbus Fleſtrin, in open breach of the ſaid law, under colour of extinguiſhing the fire kindled in the apartment of his Majeſty's moſt dear imperial conſort, did maliciouſly, traiterouſly, and deviliſhly, by diſcharge of his urine, put out the ſaid fire kindled in the ſaid apartment, lying and being within the precincts of the ſaid royal palace, againſt the ſtatute in that caſe provided, *&c.* againſt the duty, *&c.*

ARTICLE II.

THAT the ſaid Quinbus Fleſtrin having brought the imperial fleet of Blefuſcu into the royal port, and being afterwards commanded by his Imperial Majeſty to ſeize all the other ſhips of the ſaid empire of Blefuſcu, and reduce that empire to a province to be governed by a viceroy from hence, and to deſtroy and put to death not only all the *Big-endian exiles*, but likewiſe all the people of that empire who would not immediately forſake the *Big-endian* hereſy: he the ſaid Fleſtrin, like a falſe traitor againſt his moſt auſpicious, ſerene, Imperial Majeſty, did petition to be excuſed from the ſaid ſervice, upon pretence of unwillingneſs to force the conſciences, or deſtroy the liberties and lives of an innocent people *.

ARTICLE III.

THAT, whereas certain ambaſſadors arrived from the court of Belfuſcu to ſue for peace in his Majeſty's court: he the ſaid Fleſtrin did, like a falſe traitor, aid, abet, comfort, and divert the ſaid ambaſſadors, altho' he knew them to be ſervants to a prince, who was lately an open enemy to his Imperial Majeſty, and in open war againſt his ſaid Majeſty.

ARTICLE

* A lawyer thinks himſelf honeſt if he does the beſt he can for his client; and a ſtateſman, if he promotes the intereſt of his country: but the Dean here inculcates an higher notion of right and wrong, and obligations to a larger community.

Warburt.

ARTICLE IV.

THAT the ſaid Quinbus Fleſtrin, contrary to the duty of a faithful ſubject, is now preparing to make a voyage to the court and empire of Blefuſcu, for which he hath received only verbal licence from his Imperial Majeſty; and under colour of the ſaid licence doth falſly and traiterouſly intend to take the ſaid voyage, and thereby to aid, comfort, and abet the Emperor of Blefuſcu, ſo late an enemy, and in open war with his Imperial Majeſty aforeſaid.

THERE are ſome other articles, but theſe are the moſt important, of which I have read you an abſtract.

IN the ſeveral debates upon this impeachment it muſt be confeſſed that his Majeſty gave many marks of his great lenity, often urging the ſervices you had done him, and endeavouring to extenuate your crimes. The treaſurer and admiral inſiſted that you ſhould be put to the moſt painful and ignominious death, by ſetting fire on your houſe at night, and the general was to attend with twenty thouſand men armed with poiſoned arrows to ſhoot you on the face and hands. Some of your ſervants were to have private orders to ſtrew a poiſonous juice on your ſhirts and ſheets, which would ſoon make you tear your own fleſh, and die in the utmoſt torture. The general came into the ſame opinion; ſo that for a long time there was a majority againſt you: but his Majeſty reſolving, if poſſible, to ſpare your life, at laſt brought off the chamberlain.

UPON this incident Reldreſal, principal ſecretary for private affairs, who always approved himſelf your true friend, was commanded by the Emperor to deliver his opinion, which he accordingly did: and therein juſtified the good thoughts you have of him. He allowed your crimes to be great, but that ſtill there was room for mercy, the moſt commendable virtue in a prince, and for which his Majeſty was ſo juſtly celebrated. He ſaid, the friendſhip between you and him was ſo well known to the world, that perhaps the moſt honourable board might think him partial: however, in obedience to the command

mand he had received, he would freely offer his ſentiments. That if his Majeſty, in conſideration of your ſervices, and purſuant to his own merciful diſpoſition, would pleaſe to ſpare your life, and only give order to put out both your eyes, he humbly conceived, that by this expedient juſtice might in ſome meaſure be ſatisfied, and all the world would applaud the lenity of the Emperor, as well as the fair and generous proceedings of thoſe who have the honour to be his counſellors. That the loſs of your eyes would be no impediment to your bodily ſtrength, by which you might ſtill be uſeful to his Majeſty: that blindneſs is an addition to courage, by concealing dangers from us; that the fear you had for your eyes, was the greateſt difficulty in bringing over the enemy's fleet; and it would be ſufficient for you to ſee by the eyes of the miniſters, ſince the greateſt princes do no more.

THIS propoſal was received with the utmoſt diſapprobation by the whole board. Bolgolam the admiral could not preſerve his temper; but, riſing up in fury, ſaid, he wondered how the ſecretary durſt preſume to give his opinion for preſerving the life of a traitor: that the ſervices you had performed were, by all true reaſons of ſtate, the great aggravation of your crimes; that you, who was able to extinguiſh the fire by diſcharge of urine in her Majeſty's apartment (which he mentioned with horror) might at another time raiſe an inundation by the ſame means to drown the whole palace; and the ſame ſtrength, which enabled you to bring over the enemy's fleet, might ſerve upon the firſt diſcontent to carry it back: that he had good reaſons to think you were a *Big-endian* in your heart; and as treaſon begins in the heart, before it appears in overt-acts, ſo he accuſed you as a traitor on that account, and therefore inſiſted you ſhould be put to death.

THE treaſurer was of the ſame opinion: he ſhewed to what ſtraits his Majeſty's revenue was reduced by the charge of maintaining you, which would ſoon grow inſupportable: that the ſecretary's expedient of putting out your eyes was ſo far from being a remedy againſt this evil, that it would probably increaſe it, as is manifeſt from the common practice of blinding ſome kind of fowl, after which they fed the faſter, and grew ſooner fat: that his ſacred Majeſty and the council, who are your judges,

were in their own conſciences fully convinced of your guilt, which was a ſufficient argument to condemn you to death without the formal proofs required by the ſtrict letter of the law*.

But his Imperial Majeſty, fully determined againſt capital puniſhment, was graciouſly pleaſed to ſay, that ſince the council thought the loſs of your eyes too eaſy a cenſure, ſome other may be inflicted hereafter. And your friend the ſecretary, humbly deſiring to be heard again, in anſwer to what the treaſurer had objected concerning the great charge his Majeſty was at in maintaining you, ſaid, that his Excellency, who had the ſole diſpoſal of the Emperor's revenue, might eaſily provide againſt that evil by gradually leſſening your eſtabliſhment; by which, for want of ſufficient food, you would grow weak and faint, and loſe your appetite, and conſume in a few months; neither would the ſtench of your carcaſe be then ſo dangerous, when it ſhould become more than half diminiſhed; and immediately upon your death, five or ſix thouſand of his Majeſty's ſubjects might in two or three days cut your fleſh from your bones, take it away by cart-loads, and bury it in diſtant parts to prevent infection, leaving the ſkeleton as a monument of admiration to poſterity.

Thus by the great friendſhip of the ſecretary the whole affair was compromiſed. It was ſtrictly enjoined, that the project of ſtarving you by degrees ſhould be kept a ſecret, but the ſentence of putting out your eyes was entered on the books; none diſſenting except Bolgolam the admiral, who, being a creature of the Empreſs, was perpetually inſtigated by her Majeſty to inſiſt upon your death, ſhe having

* There is ſomething ſo odious in whatever is wrong, that even thoſe whom it does not ſubject to puniſhment, endeavour to colour it with an appearance of right; but the attempt is always unſucceſsful, and only betrays a conſciouſneſs of deformity, by ſhewing a deſire to hide it. Thus the Lilliputian court pretended a right to diſpenſe with the ſtrict letter of the law to put Gulliver to death, tho' by the ſtrict letter of the law only he could be convicted of a crime; the intention of the ſtatute not being to ſuffer the palace rather to be burnt, than piſſed upon. *Hawkeſ.*

having born perpetual malice againſt you on account of that infamous and illegal method you took to extinguiſh the fire in her apartment.

In three days, your friend the ſecretary will be directed to come to your houſe, and read before you the articles of impeachment; and then to ſignify the great lenity and favour of his Majeſty and council, whereby you are only condemned to the loſs of your eyes, which his Majeſty doth not queſtion you will gratefully and humbly ſubmit to; and twenty of his Majeſty's ſurgeons will attend in order to ſee the operation well performed, by diſcharging very ſharp-pointed arrows into the balls of your eyes, as you lie on the ground.

I leave to your prudence what meaſures you will take; and, to avoid ſuſpicion, I muſt immediately return in as private a manner as I came.

His Lordſhip did ſo, and I remained alone under many doubts and perplexities of mind.

It was a cuſtom introduced by this Prince and his miniſtry (very different, as I have been aſſured, from the practices of former times) that after the court had decreed any cruel execution, either to gratify the monarch's reſentment, or the malice of a favourite, the Emperor always made a ſpeech to his whole council, expreſſing his great lenity and tenderneſs, as qualities known and confeſſed by all the world. This ſpeech was immediately publiſhed thro' the kingdom; nor did any thing terrify the people ſo much as thoſe encomiums on his Majeſty's mercy; becauſe it was obſerved, that the more theſe praiſes were enlarged and inſiſted on, the more inhuman was the puniſhment, and the ſufferer more innocent. Yet as to myſelf, I muſt confeſs, having never been deſigned for a courtier either by my birth or education, I was ſo ill a judge of things, that I could not diſcover the lenity and favour of this ſentence, but conceived it (perhaps erroneouſly) rather to be rigorous than gentle. I ſometimes thought of ſtanding my trial; for, altho' I could not deny the facts alledged in the ſeveral articles, yet I hoped they would admit of ſome extenuation. But having in my life peruſed many ſtate trials, which I ever obſerved to terminate as the judges thought fit to direct, I durſt not rely on ſo dangerous a deciſion, in ſo critical

a juncture, and againſt ſuch powerful enemies. Once I was ſtrongly bent upon reſiſtance; for, while I had liberty, the whole ſtrength of that empire could hardly ſubdue me, and I might eaſily with ſtones pelt the metropolis to pieces; but I ſoon rejected that project with horror, by remembering the oath I had made to the Emperor, the favours I received from him. and the high title of *Nardac* he conferred upon me. Neither had I ſo ſoon learned the gratitude of courtiers, to perſuade myſelf, that his Majeſty's preſent ſeverities acquitted me of all paſt obligations.

At laſt I fixed upon a reſolution, for which it is probable I may incur ſome cenſure, and not unjuſtly; for I confeſs I owe the preſerving mine eyes, and conſequently my liberty, to my own great raſhneſs, and want of experience; becauſe, if I had then known the nature of princes and miniſters, which I have ſince obſerved in many other courts, and their methods of treating criminals leſs obnoxious than myſelf, I ſhould with great alacrity and readineſs have ſubmitted to ſo eaſy a puniſhment. But hurried on by the precipitancy of youth, and having his Imperial Majeſty's licence to pay my attendance upon the Emperor of Blefuſcu, I took this opportunity, before the three days were elapſed, to ſend a letter to my friend the ſecretary, ſignifying my reſolution of ſetting out that morning for Blefuſcu, purſuant to the leave I had got; and, without waiting for an anſwer, I went to that ſide of the iſland where our fleet lay. I ſeized a large man of war, tied a cable to the prow, and, lifting up the anchors, I ſtript myſelf, put my cloaths (together with my coverlet, which I carried under my arm) into the veſſel, and drawing it after me, between wading and ſwimming, arrived at the royal port of Blefuſcu, where the people had long expected me; they lent me two guides to direct me to the capital city, which is of the ſame name. I held them in my hands till I came within two hundred yards of the gate, and deſired them to ſignify my arrival to one of the ſecretaries, and let him know, I there waited his Majeſty's command. I had an anſwer in about an hour, that his Majeſty attended by the royal family and great *officers of* the court was coming out to receive me. I *advanced a hundred* yards. The Emperor and his train a-

lighted.

lighted from their horſes, the Empreſs and ladies from their coaches, and I did not perceive they were in any fright or concern. I lay on the ground to kiſs his Majeſty's and the Empreſs's hand. I told his Majeſty that I was come according to my promiſe, and with the licence of the Emperor my maſter, to have the honour of ſeeing ſo mighty a monarch, and to offer him any ſervice in my power conſiſtent with my duty to my own prince; not mentioning a word of my diſgrace, becauſe I had hitherto no regular information of it, and might ſuppoſe myſelf wholly ignorant of any ſuch deſign; neither could I reaſonably conceive that the Emperor would diſcover the ſecret, while I was out of his power; wherein however it ſoon appeared I was deceived.

I ſhall not trouble the reader with the particular account of my reception at this court, which was ſuitable to the generoſity of ſo great a prince; nor of the difficulties I was in for want of a houſe and bed, being forced to lie on the ground, wrapt up in my coverlet.

CHAP. VIII.

The author, by a lucky accident, finds means to leave Blefuſcu; and, after ſome difficulties, returns ſafe to his native country.

THREE days after my arrival, walking out of curioſity to the north-eaſt coaſt of the iſland, I obſerved about half a league off, in the ſea, ſomewhat that looked like a boat overturned. I pulled off my ſhoes and ſtockings, and, wading two or three hundred yards, I found the object to approach nearer by force of the tide; and then plainly ſaw it to be a real boat, which I ſuppoſed might by ſome tempeſt have been driven from a ſhip: whereupon I returned immediately towards the city, and deſired his Imperial Majeſty to lend me twenty of the talleſt veſſels he had left after the loſs of his fleet, and three thouſand ſeamen, under the command of his vice-admiral. This fleet ſailed round, while I went back the ſhorteſt way to the coaſt where I firſt diſcovered the boat; I found the tide had driven it ſtill nearer. The ſeamen were all provided with cordage, which I had before-

a juncture, and againſt ſuch powerful enemies. Once I was ſtrongly bent upon reſiſtance; for, while I had liberty, the whole ſtrength of that empire could hardly ſubdue me, and I might eaſily with ſtones pelt the metropolis to pieces; but I ſoon rejected that project with horror, by remembering the oath I had made to the Emperor, the favours I received from him. and the high title of *Nardac* he conferred upon me. Neither had I ſo ſoon learned the gratitude of courtiers, to perſuade myſelf, that his Majeſty's preſent ſeverities acquitted me of all paſt obligations.

At laſt I fixed upon a reſolution, for which it is probable I may incur ſome cenſure, and not unjuſtly; for I confeſs I owe the preſerving mine eyes, and conſequently my liberty, to my own great raſhneſs, and want of experience; becauſe, if I had then known the nature of princes and miniſters, which I have ſince obſerved in many other courts, and their methods of treating criminals leſs obnoxious than myſelf, I ſhould with great alacrity and readineſs have ſubmitted to ſo eaſy a puniſhment. But hurried on by the precipitancy of youth, and having his Imperial Majeſty's licence to pay my attendance upon the Emperor of Blefuſcu, I took this opportunity, before the three days were elapſed, to ſend a letter to my friend the ſecretary, ſignifying my reſolution of ſetting out that morning for Blefuſcu, purſuant to the leave I had got; and, without waiting for an anſwer, I went to that ſide of the iſland where our fleet lay. I ſeized a large man of war, tied a cable to the prow, and, lifting up the anchors, I ſtript myſelf, put my cloaths (together with my coverlet, which I carried under my arm) into the veſſel, and drawing it after me, between wading and ſwimming, arrived at the royal port of Blefuſcu, where the people had long expected me; they lent me two guides to direct me to the capital city, which is of the ſame name. I held them in my hands till I came within two hundred yards of the gate, and deſired them to ſignify my arrival to one of the ſecretaries. and let him know, I there waited his Majeſty's command. I had an anſwer in about an hour, that his Majeſty attended by the royal family and great officers of the court was coming out to receive me. I advanced a hundred yards. The Emperor and his train alighted

lighted from their horſes, the Empreſs and ladies from their coaches, and I did not perceive they were in any fright or concern. I lay on the ground to kiſs his Majeſty's and the Empreſs's hand. I told his Majeſty that I was come according to my promiſe, and with the licence of the Emperor my maſter, to have the honour of ſeeing ſo mighty a monarch, and to offer him any ſervice in my power conſiſtent with my duty to my own prince; not mentioning a word of my diſgrace, becauſe I had hitherto no regular information of it, and might ſuppoſe myſelf wholly ignorant of any ſuch deſign; neither could I reaſonably conceive that the Emperor would diſcover the ſecret, while I was out of his power; wherein however it ſoon appeared I was deceived.

I ſhall not trouble the reader with the particular account of my reception at this court, which was ſuitable to the generoſity of ſo great a prince; nor of the difficulties I was in for want of a houſe and bed, being forced to lie on the ground, wrapt up in my coverlet.

CHAP. VIII.

The author, by a lucky accident, finds means to leave Blefuſcu; and, after ſome difficulties, returns ſafe to his native country.

THREE days after my arrival, walking out of curioſity to the north-eaſt coaſt of the iſland, I obſerved about half a league off, in the ſea, ſomewhat that looked like a boat overturned. I pulled off my ſhoes and ſtockings, and, wading two or three hundred yards, I found the object to approach nearer by force of the tide; and then plainly ſaw it to be a real boat, which I ſuppoſed might by ſome tempeſt have been driven from a ſhip: whereupon I returned immediately towards the city, and deſired his Imperial Majeſty to lend me twenty of the talleſt veſſels he had left after the loſs of his fleet, and three thouſand ſeamen, under the command of his vice-admiral. This fleet ſailed round, while I went back the ſhorteſt way to the coaſt where I firſt diſcovered the boat; I found the tide had driven it ſtill nearer. The ſeamen were all provided with cordage, which I had before-

hand twiſted to a ſufficient ſtrength. When the ſhips came up, I ſtript myſelf, and waded till I came within an hundred yards of the boat, after which I was forced to ſwim till I got up to it. The ſeamen threw me the end of the cord, which I faſtened to a hole in the fore-part of the boat, and the other end to a man of war: but I found all my labour to little purpoſe; for, being out of my depth, I was not able to work. In this neceſſity, I was forced to ſwim behind, and puſh the boat forwards as often as I could, with one of my hands; and the tide favouring me I advanced ſo far, that I could juſt hold up my chin and feel the ground. I reſted two or three minutes, and then gave the boat another ſhove, and ſo on till the ſea was no higher than my arm-pits; and now, the moſt laborious part being over, I took out my other cables, which were ſtowed in one of the ſhips, and faſtened them firſt to the boat, and then to nine of the veſſels which attended me; the wind being favourable, the ſeamen towed, and I ſhoved till we arrived within forty yards of the ſhore, and waiting till the tide was out, I got dry to the boat, and by the aſſiſtance of two thouſand men, with ropes and engines, I made a ſhift to turn it on its bottom, and found it was but little damaged.

I ſhall not trouble the reader with the difficulties I was under by the help of certain paddles, which coſt me ten days making to get my boat to the royal port of Blefuſcu, where a mighty concourſe of people appeared upon my arrival, full of wonder at the ſight of ſo prodigious a veſſel. I told the Emperor, that my good fortune had thrown this boat in my way to carry me to ſome place, from whence I might return into my native country, and begged his Majeſty's orders for getting materials to fit it up, together with his licence to depart, which, after ſome kind expoſtulations, he was pleaſed to grant.

I did very much wonder, in all this time, not to have heard of any expreſs relating to me from our Emperor to the court of Blefuſcu. But I was afterwards given privately to underſtand, that his Imperial Majeſty, never imagining I had the leaſt notice of his deſigns, believed I was only gone to Blefuſcu in performance of my promiſe, according to the licence he had given me, which was well known at our court, and would return in a few days when

when the ceremony was ended. But he was at laſt in pain at my long abſence; and, after conſulting with the treaſurer and the reſt of that cabal, a perſon of quality was diſpatched with a copy of the articles againſt me. This envoy had inſtructions to repreſent to the Monarch of Blefuſcu, the great lenity of his maſter, who was content to puniſh me no farther than with the loſs of mine eyes; that I had fled from juſtice, and, if I did not return in two hours, I ſhould be deprived of my title of *Nardac*, and declared a traitor. The envoy further added, that, in order to maintain the peace and amity between both empires, his maſter expected, that his brother of Blefuſcu would give orders to have me ſent back to Lilliput, bound hand and foot, to be puniſhed as a traitor.

The Emperor of Blefuſcu, having taken three days to conſult, returned an anſwer conſiſting of many civilities and excuſes. He ſaid, that, as for ſending me bound, his brother knew it was impoſſible; that, altho' I had deprived him of his fleet, yet he owed great obligations to me for many good offices I had done him in making the peace. That however both their Majeſties would ſoon be made eaſy; for I had found a prodigious veſſel on the ſhore, able to carry me on the ſea, which he had given order to fit up with my own aſſiſtance and direction; and he hoped in a few weeks both empires would be freed from ſo inſupportable an incumbrance.

With this anſwer the envoy returned to Lilliput, and the Monarch of Blefuſcu related to me all that had paſt; offering me at the ſame time (but under the ſtricteſt confidence) his gracious protection, if I would continue in his ſervice; wherein altho' I believed him ſincere, yet I reſolved never more to put any confidence in princes or miniſters, where I could poſſibly avoid it; and therefore, with all due acknowledgments for his favourable intentions, I humbly begged to be excuſed. I told him, that ſince fortune, whether good or evil, had thrown a veſſel in my way, I was reſolved to venture myſelf in the ocean, rather than be an occaſion of difference between two ſuch mighty monarchs. Neither did I find the Emperor at all diſpleaſed; and I diſcovered by a certain accident that he was very glad of my reſolution, and ſo were moſt of his miniſters.

These

'THESE conſiderations moved me to haſten my departure ſomewhat ſooner than I intended; to which the court, impatient to have me gone, very readily contributed. Five hundred workmen were employed to make two ſails to my boat, according to my directions, by quilting thirteen fold of their ſtrongeſt linen together. I was at the pains of making ropes and cables by twiſting ten, twenty, or thirty of the thickeſt and ſtrongeſt of theirs. A great ſtone that I happened to find, after a long ſearch by the ſea-ſhore, ſerved me for an anchor. I had the tallow of three hundred cows for greaſing my boat and other uſes. I was at incredible pains in cutting down ſome of the largeſt timber-trees for oars and maſts, wherein I was however much aſſiſted by his Majeſty's ſhip-carpenters, who helped me in ſmoothing them, after I had done the rough work.

IN about a month, when all was prepared, I ſent to receive his Majeſty's commands, and to take my leave. The Emperor and royal family came out of the palace; I lay down on my face to kiſs his hand, which he very graciouſly gave me; ſo did the Empreſs, and young Princes of the blood. His Majeſty preſented me with fifty purſes of two hundred *ſprugs* a piece, together with his picture at full length, which I put immediately into one of my gloves to keep it from being hurt. The ceremonies at my departure were too many to trouble the reader with at this time.

I ſtored the boat with the carcaſes of an hundred oxen, and three hundred ſheep, with bread and drink proportionable, and as much meat ready dreſſed as four hundred cooks could provide. I took with me ſix cows and two bulls alive, with as many ews and rams, intending to carry them into my own country, and propagate the breed. And to feed them on board I had a good bundle of hay, and a bag of corn I would gladly have taken a dozen of the natives, but this was a thing the Emperor would by no means permit: and beſides a diligent ſearch into my pockets, his Majeſty engaged my honour not to carry away any of his ſubjects, altho' with their own conſent and deſire.

HAVING thus prepared all things as well as I was able, I ſet ſail on the 24th day of September 1701, at ſix in the

the morning; and when I had gone about four leagues to the north ward, the wind being at south-east, at six in the evening I descried a small island about half a league to the north-west. I advanced forward and cast anchor on the lee-side of the island, which seemed to be uninhabited. I then took some refreshment, and went to my rest. I slept well, and as I conjecture at least six hours, for I found the day broke in two hours after I awaked. It was a clear night. I eat my breakfast before the sun was up; and heaving anchor, the wind being favourable, I steered the same course that I had done the day before, wherein I was directed by my pocket-compass. My intention was to reach, if possible, one of those islands which I had reason to believe lay to the north-east of Van Diemen's land. I discovered nothing all that day; but upon the next, about three in the afternoon, when I had by my computation made twenty four leagues from Blefuscu, I descried a sail steering to the south-east; my course was due east. I hailed her, but could get no answer; yet I found I gained upon her, for the wind slackened. I made all the sail I could, and in half an hour she spied me, then hung out her antient, and discharged a gun. It is not easy to express the joy I was in upon the unexpected hope of once more seeing my beloved country, and the dear pledges I left in it. The ship slackened her sails, and I came up with her between five and six in the evening, September 26; but my heart leapt within me to see her English colours. I put my cows and sheep into my coat-pockets, and got on board with all my little cargo of provisions. The vessel was an English merchantman, returning from Japan by the North and South seas; the captain Mr. John Biddel of Deptford, a very civil man, and an excellent sailor. We were now in the latitude of 30 degrees south, there were about fifty men in the ship; and here I met an old comrade of mine, one Peter Williams, who gave me a good character to the captain. This gentleman treated me with kindness, and desired I would let him know what place I came from last, and whither I was bound; which I did in few words; but he thought I was raving, and that the dangers I had undergone had disturbed my head; whereupon I took my black cattle and sheep out of my pocket, which, after

great

great aſtoniſhment, clearly convinced him of my veracity. I then ſhewed him the gold given me by the Emperor of Blefuſcu, together with his Majeſty's picture at full length, and ſome other rarities of that country. I gave him two purſes of two hundred *ſprugs* each, and promiſed, when we arrived in England, to make him a preſent of a cow and a ſheep big with young.

I ſhall not trouble the reader with a particular account of this voyage, which was very proſperous for the moſt part. We arrived in the Downs on the 13th of April 1702. I had only one misfortune, that the rats on board carried away one of my ſheep; I found her bones in a hole, picked clean from the fleſh. The reſt of my cattle I got ſafe a-ſhore, and ſet them a grazing in a bowling-green at Greenwich, where the fineneſs of the graſs made them feed very heartily, tho' I had always feared the contrary: neither could I poſſibly have preſerved them in ſo long a voyage, if the captain had not allowed me ſome of his beſt biſket, which rubbed to powder, and mingled with water, was their conſtant food. The ſhort time I continued in England, I made a conſiderable profit by ſhewing my cattle to many perſons of quality, and others: and before I began my ſecond voyage, I ſold them for ſix hundred pounds. Since my laſt return I find the breed is conſiderably increaſed, eſpecially the ſheep, which I hope will prove much to the advantage of the woollen manufacture by the fineneſs of the fleeces.

I ſtaid but two months with my wife and family; for my inſatiable deſire of ſeeing foreign countries would ſuffer me to continue no longer. I left fifteen hundred pounds with my wife, and fixed her in a good houſe at Redriff. My remaining ſtock I carried with me, part in money and part in goods, in hopes to improve my fortunes. My eldeſt uncle John had left me an eſtate in land, near Epping, of about thirty pounds a year; and I had a long leaſe of the Black-Bull in Fetter-Lane, which yielded me as much more: ſo that I was not in any danger of leaving my family upon the pariſh. My ſon Johnny, named ſo after his uncle, was at the grammar-ſchool, and a towardly child. My daughter Betty, (who is now well

married, and has children) was then at her needle-
c. I took leave of my wife, and boy, and girl, with
on both ſides, and went on board the Adventure, a
:hant-ſhip of 300 tons, bound for Surat, Capt. John
ıolas of Liverpool commander. But my account of
voyage muſt be referred to the ſecond part of my
ıls.

A VOYAGE TO BROBDINGNAG.

CHAP. I.

A great ſtorm deſcribed; the long-boat ſent to fetch water; the author goes with it to diſcover the country. He is left on ſhore, is ſeized by one of the natives, and carried to a farmer's houſe. His reception, with ſeveral accidents that happened there. A deſcription of the inhabitants.

HAVING been condemned by nature and fortune to an active and reſtleſs life, in two months after my return I again left my native country, and took ſhipping in the Downs on the 20th day of June 1702, in the Adventure, Capt. John Nicholas a Corniſh man commander, bound for Surat. We had a very proſperous gale till we arrived at the Cape of Good Hope, where we landed for freſh water, but diſcovering a leak, we unſhipped our goods, and wintered there; for, the captain falling ſick of an ague, we could not leave the Cape till the end of March. We then ſet ſail, and had a good voyage till we paſſed the Streights of Madagaſcar; but having got northward of that iſland, and to about five degrees ſouth latitude, the winds, which in thoſe ſeas are obſerved to blow a conſtant equal gale between the north and weſt, from the beginning of December to the beginning of May, on the 19th of April began to blow with much greater violence, and more weſterly than uſual, continuing ſo for twenty days together, during which *time* we were driven a little to the eaſt of the Molucca *iſlands*, and about three degrees northward of the line, as our captain found by an obſervation he took the 2

of May, at which time the wind ceaſed, and it was a perfect calm, whereat I was not a little rejoiced But he, being a man well experienced in the navigation of thoſe ſeas, bid us all prepare againſt a ſtorm, which accordingly happened the day following: for a ſouthern wind, called the ſouthern *monſoon*, began to ſet in.

FINDING it was like to overblow, we took in our ſprit-ſail, and ſtood by to hand the fore-ſail; but, making foul weather, we looked the guns were all faſt, and handed the miſſen. The ſhip lay very broad off, ſo we thought it better ſpooning before the ſea, than trying or hulling. We reft the fore-ſail and ſet him, and hawled aft the fore-ſheet; the helm was hard a weather. The ſhip wore bravely. We belaid the fore-down-hall; but the ſail was ſplit, and we hawled down the yard, and got the ſail into the ſhip, and unbound all the things clear of it. It was a very fierce ſtorm; the ſea broke ſtrange and dangerous. We hawled off upon the lanniard of the whip-ſtaff, and helped the man at the helm. We would not get down our top-maſt, but let all ſtand, becauſe ſhe ſcudded before the ſea very well, and we knew that, the top-maſt being aloft, the ſhip was the wholſomer, and made better way through the ſea, ſeeing we had ſea-room. When the ſtorm was over, we ſet fore-ſail and main-ſail, and brought the ſhip to. Then we ſet the miſſen, main-top-ſail, and the fore-top-ſail. Our courſe was *eaſt-north-eaſt*, the wind was at *ſouth-weſt*. We got the ſtar-board tacks a-board, we caſt off our weather braces and lifts; we ſet in the lee-braces, and hawled forward by the weather-bowlings, and hawled them tight, and belaid them, and hawled over the miſſen-tack to windward, and kept her full and by as near as ſhe would lie.

DURING this ſtorm, which was followed by a ſtrong wind *weſt-ſouth-weſt*, we were carried by my computation about five hundred leagues to the *eaſt*, ſo that the oldeſt ſailor on board could not tell in what part of the world we were. Our proviſions held out well, our ſhip was ſtaunch, and our crew all in good health; but we lay in the utmoſt diſtreſs for water. We thought it beſt to hold on the ſame courſe, rather than turn more northerly, which *might have brought* us to the *north-weſt* parts of *great Tartary*, and into the frozen ſea.

On the 16th day of June, 1703, a boy on the top-maſt diſcovered land. On the 17th, we came in full view of a great iſland or continent (for we knew not whether) on the ſouth-ſide whereof was a ſmall neck of land jutting out into the ſea, and a creek too ſhallow to hold a ſhip of above one hundred tons. We caſt anchor within a league of this creek, and our captain ſent a dozen of his men well armed in the long-boat, with veſſels for water, if any could be found. I deſired his leave to go with them, that I might ſee the country, and make what diſcoveries I could. When we came to land, we ſaw no river or ſpring, nor any ſign of inhabitants. Our men therefore wandered on the ſhore to find out ſome freſh water near the ſea, and I walked alone about a mile on the other ſide, where I obſerved the country all barren and rocky. I now began to be weary, and ſeeing nothing to entertain my curioſity, I returned gently down towards the creek; and the ſea being full in my view, I ſaw our men already got into the boat, and rowing for life to the ſhip. I was going to hollow after them, altho' it had been to little purpoſe, when I obſerved a huge creature walking after them in the ſea, as faſt as he could; he waded not much deeper than his knees, and took prodigious ſtrides: but our men had the ſtart of him half a league, and, the ſea thereabouts being full of ſharp-pointed rocks, the monſter was not able to overtake the boat. This I was afterwards told, for I durſt not ſtay to ſee the iſſue of the adventure; but ran as faſt as I could the way I firſt went, and then climbed up a ſteep hill, which gave me ſome proſpect of the country. I found it fully cultivated; but that which firſt ſurpriſed me was the length of the graſs, which, in thoſe grounds that ſeemed to be kept for hay, was about twenty feet high.

I fell into a high road, for ſo I took it to be, tho' it ſerved to the inhabitants only as a foot-path through a field of barley. Here I walked on for ſome time, but could ſee little on either ſide, it being now near harveſt, and the corn riſing at leaſt forty feet. I was an hour walking to the end of this field, which was fenced in with a hedge of at leaſt one hundred and twenty feet high, and the trees ſo lofty that I could make no computation

putation of their altitude. There was a ſtile to paſs from this field into the next. It had four ſteps, and a ſtone to croſs over when you came to the uppermoſt. It was impoſſible for me to climb this ſtile, becauſe every ſtep was ſix feet high, and the upper ſtone above twenty. I was endeavouring to find ſome gap in the hedge, when I diſcovered one of the inhabitants in the next field advancing towards the ſtile, of the ſame ſize with him whom I ſaw in the ſea purſuing our boat. He appeared as tall as an ordinary ſpire-ſteeple, and took about ten yards at every ſtride, as near as I could gueſs. I was ſtruck with the utmoſt fear and aſtoniſhment, and ran to hide myſelf in the corn, from whence I ſaw him at the top of the ſtile looking back into the next field on the right hand, and heard him call in a voice many degrees louder than a ſpeaking trumpet; but the noiſe was ſo high in the air, that at firſt I certainly thought it was thunder. Whereupon ſeven monſters, like himſelf, came towards him with reaping-hooks in their hands, each hook about the largeneſs of ſix ſcythes. Theſe people were not ſo well clad as the firſt, whoſe ſervants or labourers they ſeemed to be; for, upon ſome words he ſpoke, they went to reap the corn in the field where I lay. I kept from them at as great a diſtance as I could, but was forced to move with extreme difficulty; for the ſtalks of the corn were ſometimes not above a foot diſtant, ſo that I could hardly ſqueeſe my body betwixt them. However I made a ſhift to go forward, till I came to a part of the field where the corn had been laid by the rain and wind. Here it was impoſſible for me to advance a ſtep; for the ſtalks were ſo interwoven that I could not creep through, and the beards of the fallen ears ſo ſtrong and pointed, that they pierced through my cloaths into my fleſh. At the ſame time I heard the reapers not above a hundred yards behind me. Being quite diſpirited with toil, and wholly overcome by grief and deſpair, I lay down between two ridges, and heartily wiſhed I might there end my days. I bemoaned my deſolate widow, and fatherleſs children. I lamented my own folly and wilfulneſs in attempting a ſecond voyage againſt the advice of all my friends and relations. In this terrible agitation of mind I could not forbear thinking of Lilliput, whoſe inhabitants

looked upon me as the greateſt prodigy that ever appeared in the world: where I was able to draw an imperial fleet in my hand, and perform thoſe other actions which will be recorded for ever in the chronicles of that empire, while poſterity ſhall hardly believe them, altho' atteſted by millions. I reflected what a mortification it muſt prove to me to appear as inconſiderable in this nation, as one ſingle Lilliputian would be among us. But this I conceived was to be the leaſt of my misfortunes: for, as human creatures are obſerved to be more ſavage and cruel in proportion to their bulk, what could I expect but to be a morſel in the mouth of the firſt among theſe enormous barbarians, that ſhould happen to ſeize me? Undoubtedly philoſophers are in the right when they tell us, that nothing is great or little otherwiſe than by compariſon. It might have pleaſed fortune to have let the Lilliputians find ſome nation, where the people were as diminutive with reſpect to them, as they were to me. And who knows but that even this prodigious race of mortals might be equally overmatched in ſome diſtant part of the world, whereof we have yet no diſcovery.

SCARED and confounded as I was, I could not forbear going on with theſe reflections, when one of the reapers, approaching within ten yards of the ridge where I lay, made me apprehend that with the next ſtep I ſhould be ſquaſhed to death under his foot, or cut in two with his reaping-hook. And therefore, when he was again about to move, I ſcreamed as loud as fear could make me. Whereupon the huge creature trod ſhort, and, looking round about under him for ſome time, at laſt eſpied me as I lay on the ground. He conſidered a while with the caution of one who endeavours to lay hold on a ſmall dangerous animal, in ſuch a manner that it ſhall not be able either to ſcratch or to bite him, as I myſelf have ſometimes done with a weaſel in England. At length he ventured to take me up behind by the middle between his fore-finger and thumb, and brought me within three yards of his eyes, that he might behold my ſhape more perfectly. I gueſſed his meaning; and my good fortune gave me ſo much preſence of mind, that I reſolved not to *ſtruggle in* the leaſt as he held me in the air above ſixty *feet from* the ground, altho' he grievouſly pinched my ſides

ſides, for fear I ſhould ſlip through his fingers. All I ventured was to raiſe mine eyes towards the ſun, and place my hands together in a ſupplicating poſture, and to ſpeak ſome words in an humble melancholy tone, ſuitable to the condition I then was in. For I apprehended every moment that he would daſh me againſt the ground, as we uſually do any little hateful animal, which we have a mind to deſtroy *. But my good ſtar would have it, that he appeared pleaſed with my voice and geſtures, and began to look upon me as a curioſity, much wondering to hear me pronounce articulate words, altho' he could not underſtand them. In the mean time I was not able to forbear groaning and ſhedding tears, and turning my head towards my ſides; letting him know, as well as I could, how cruelly I was hurt by the preſſure of his thumb and finger. He ſeemed to apprehend my meaning; for, lifting up the lappet of his coat, he put me gently into it, and immediately ran along with me to his maſter, who was a ſubſtantial farmer, and the ſame perſon I had firſt ſeen in the field.

The farmer having (as I ſuppoſe by their talk) received ſuch an account of me as his ſervant could give him, took a piece of a ſmall ſtraw, about the ſize of a walking-ſtaff, and therewith lifted up the lappets of my coat; which it ſeems he thought to be ſome kind of covering that nature had given me. He blew my hairs aſide to take a better view of my face. He called his hinds about him, and aſked them (as I afterwards learned) whether they had ever ſeen in the fields any little creature that reſembled me: he then placed me ſoftly on the ground upon all four, but I got immediately up, and walked ſlowly backwards and forwards, to let thoſe people ſee I had no intent to run away. They all ſat down in a circle about me the better to obſerve my motions. I pulled off

* Our inattention to the felicity of ſenſitive beings merely becauſe they are ſmall, is here forcibly reproved: many have wantonly crushed an inſect, who would ſhudder at cutting the throat of a dog; but it ſhould always be remembered, that the leaſt of theſe

In mortal ſufferance feels a pang as great
As when a giant dies. Hawkeſ.

my hat, and made a low bow towards the farmer. I fell on my knees. and lifted up my hands and eyes, and ſpoke ſeveral words as loud as I could: I took a purſe of gold out of my pocket, and humbly preſented it to him. He received it on the palm of his hand, then applied it cloſe to his eye to ſee what it was, and afterwards turned it ſeveral times with the point of a pin (which he took out of his ſleeve) but could make nothing of it. Whereupon I made a ſign that he ſhould place his hand on the ground. I then took the purſe, and opening it, poured all the gold into his palm. There were ſix Spaniſh pieces of four piſtoles each, beſides twenty or thirty ſmaller coins. I ſaw him wet the tip of his little finger upon his tongue, and take up one of my largeſt pieces, and then another, but he ſeemed to be wholly ignorant what they were. He made me a ſign to put them again into my purſe, and the purſe again into my pocket, which, after offering it to him ſeveral times, I thought it beſt to do.

The farmer by this time was convinced I muſt be a rational creature. He ſpoke often to me, but the ſound of his voice pierced my ears like that of a water-mill, yet his words were articulate enough. I anſwered as loud as I could in ſeveral languages. and he often laid his ear within two yards of me; but all in vain, for we were wholly unintelligible to each other. He then ſent his ſervants to their work, and taking his handkerchief out of his pocket, he doubled and ſpread it on his left hand, which he placed flat on the ground with the palm upwards, making me a ſign to ſtep into it. as I could eaſily do, for it was not above a foot in thickneſs. I thought it my part to obey. and, for fear of falling, laid myſelf at full length upon the handkerchief, with the remainder of which he lapped me up to the head for farther ſecurity, and in this manner carried me home to his houſe. There he called his wife, and ſhewed me to her; but ſhe ſcreamed and ran back, as women in England do at the ſight of a toad or a ſpider. However, when ſhe had a while ſeen my behaviour, and how well I obſerved the ſigns her huſband made, ſhe was ſoon reconciled, and by degrees grew extremely tender of me.

It was about twelve at noon, and a ſervant brought in dinner. It was only one ſubſtantial diſh of meat (for

for

for the plain condition of an husbandman) in a dish of about four and twenty feet diameter. The company were the farmer and his wife, three children and an old grandmother: when they were sat down, the farmer placed me at some distance from him on the table, which was thirty feet high from the floor. I was in a terrible fright, and kept as far as I could from the edge for fear of falling. The wife minced a bit of meat, then crumbled some bread on a trencher, and placed it before me. I made her a low bow, took out my knife and fork, and fell to eat, which gave them exceeding delight. The mistress sent her maid for a small dram cup, which held about two gallons, and filled it with drink; I took up the vessel with much difficulty in both hands, and in a most respectful manner drank to her Ladyship's health, expressing the words as loud as I could in English, which made the company laugh so heartily, that I was almost deafened with the noise. This liquor tasted like a small cyder, and was not unpleasant. Then the master made me a sign to come to his trencher-side; but as I walked on the table, being in great surprize all the time, as the indulgent reader will easily conceive and excuse, I happened to stumble against a crust, and fell flat on my face, but received no hurt. I got up immediately, and observing the good people to be in much concern, I took my hat (which I held under my arm out of good manners) and, waving it over my head, made three huzzas, to shew I had got no mischief by my fall. But advancing forwards toward my master (as I shall henceforth call him) his youngest son who sat next him, an arch boy of about ten years old, took me up by the legs, and held me so high in the air, that I trembled every limb; but his father snatched me from him, and at the same time gave him such a box on the left ear, as would have felled an European troop of horse to the earth, ordering him to be taken from the table. But being afraid the boy might owe me a spight, and well remembering how mischievous all children among us naturally are to sparrows, rabbits, young kittens, and puppy-dogs, I fell on my knees, and pointing to the boy made my master to understand, as well as I could, that I desired his son might be pardoned. The father complied, and the lad took his seat again; whereupon I went to

him

him and kiſſed his hand, which my maſter took, and made him ſtroak me gently with it.

In the midſt of dinner, my miſtreſs's favourite cat leapt into her lap. I heard a noiſe behind me like that of a dozen ſtocking weavers at work; and turning my head, I found it proceeded from the purring of that animal, who ſeemed to be three times larger than an ox, as I computed by the view of her head, and one of her paws, while her miſtreſs was feeding and ſtroaking her. The fierceneſs of this creature's countenance altogether diſcompoſed me; tho' I ſtood at the further end of the table, above fifty feet off; and altho' my miſtreſs held her faſt, for fear ſhe might give a ſpring, and ſeize me in her talons. But it happened there was no danger; for the cat took not the leaſt notice of me, when my maſter placed me within three yards of her. And as I have been always told, and found true by experience in my travels, that flying or diſcovering fear before a fierce animal is a certain way to make it purſue or attack you, ſo I reſolved in this dangerous juncture to ſhew no manner of concern. I walked with intrepidity five or ſix times before the very head of the cat, and came within half a yard of her; whereupon ſhe drew herſelf back, as if ſhe were more afraid of me: I had leſs apprehenſion concerning the dogs, whereof three or four came into the room, as it is uſual in farmers houſes; one of which was a maſtiff equal in bulk to four elephants, and a greyhound ſomewhat taller than the maſtiff, but not ſo large.

When dinner was almoſt done, the nurſe came in with a child of a year old in her arms, who immediately eſpied me, and began a ſquall that you might have heard from London-bridge to Chelſea, after the uſual oratory of infants, to get me for a play-thing. The mother, out of pure indulgence, took me up, and put me towards the child, who preſently ſeized me by the middle, and got my head into his mouth, where I roared ſo loud that the urchin was frighted, and let me drop, and I ſhould infallibly have broke my neck, if the mother had not held her apron under me. The nurſe to quiet her babe, made uſe of a rattle; which was a kind of hollow veſſel filled *with great ſtones*, and faſtened by a cable to the child's *waiſt:* but all in vain, ſo that ſhe was forced to apply

the laſt remedy by giving it ſuck. I muſt confeſs no object ever diſguſted me ſo much as the ſight of her monſtrous breaſt, which I cannot tell what to compare with, ſo as to give the curious reader an idea of its bulk, ſhape, and colour. It ſtood prominent ſix feet, and could not be leſs than ſixteen in circumference. The nipple was about half the bigneſs of my head, and the hue both of that and the dug ſo varified with ſpots, pimples, and freckles, that nothing could appear more nauſeous; for I had a near ſight of her, ſhe ſitting down the more conveniently to give ſuck, and I ſtanding on the table. This made me reflect upon the fair ſkins of our Engliſh ladies, who appear ſo beautiful to us, only becauſe they are of our own ſize, and their defects not to be ſeen but thro' a magnifying-glaſs, where we find by experiment, that the ſmootheſt and whiteſt ſkins look rough and coarſe, and ill-coloured.

I remember, when I was at Lilliput, the complexions of thoſe diminutive people appeared to me the faireſt in the world; and talking upon this ſubject with a perſon of learning there, who was an intimate friend of mine, he ſaid that my face appeared much fairer and ſmoother when he looked on me from the ground, than it did upon a nearer view when I took him up in my hand and brought him cloſe, which he confeſſed was at firſt a very ſhocking ſight. He ſaid he could diſcover great holes in my ſkin; that the ſtumps of my beard were ten times ſtronger than the briſtles of a boar, and my complexion made up of ſeveral colours altogether diſagreeable: altho' I muſt beg leave to ſay for myſelf, that I am as fair as moſt of my ſex and country, and very little ſun-burnt by all my travels. On the other ſide, diſcourſing of the ladies in that Emperor's court, he uſed to tell me, one had freckles, another too wide a mouth, a third too large a noſe, nothing of which I was able to diſtinguiſh. I confeſs this reflection was obvious enough; which however I could not forbear, leſt the reader might think thoſe vaſt creatures were actually deformed; for I muſt do them juſtice to ſay, they are a comely race of people; and particularly the features of my maſter's countenance, altho' he were *but a farmer*, when I beheld him from the

the height of ſixty feet, appeared very well proportioned.

When dinner was done, my maſter went out to his labourers, and, as I could diſcover by his voice and geſture, gave his wife a ſtrict charge to take care of me. I was very much tired, and diſpoſed to ſleep, which my miſtreſs perceiving, ſhe put me on her own bed, and covered me with a clean white handkerchief, but larger and coarſer than the main-ſail of a man of war.

I ſlept about two hours, and dreamed I was at home with my wife and children, which aggravated my ſorrows when I awaked, and found myſelf alone in a vaſt room, between two and three hundred feet wide, and above two hundred high, lying in a bed twenty yards wide. My miſtreſs was gone about her houſhold-affairs, and had locked me in. The bed was eight yards from the floor. Some natural neceſſities required me to get down; I durſt not preſume to call, and, if I had, it would have been in vain with ſuch a voice as mine, at ſo great a diſtance as from the room where I lay to the kitchen where the family kept. While I was under theſe circumſtances, two rats crept up the curtains, and ran ſmelling backwards and forwards on the bed. One of them came up almoſt to my face, whereupon I roſe in a fright, and drew out my hanger to defend myſelf. Theſe horrible animals had the boldneſs to attack me on both ſides, and one of them held his fore-feet at my collar; but I had the good fortune to rip up his belly, before he could do me any miſchief. He fell down at my feet, and the other ſeeing the fate of his comrade made his eſcape, but not without one good wound on the back, which I gave him as he fled, and made the blood run trickling from him. After this exploit I walked gently to and fro on the bed to recover my breath and loſs of ſpirits. Theſe creatures were of the ſize of a large maſtiff, but infinitely more nimble and fierce, ſo that, if I had taken off my belt before I went to ſleep, I muſt have infallibly been torn to pieces and devoured. I meaſured the tail of the dead rat, and found it to be two yards long, wanting an inch: but it went againſt my ſtomach to drag the carcaſs off the bed, where it lay ſtill bleeding; I obſerved

ved it had yet some life, but, with a strong slash cross the neck, I thoroughly dispatched it.

Soon after my mistress came into the room, who seeing me all bloody ran and took me up in her hand. I pointed to the dead rat, smiling, and making other signs to shew I was not hurt, whereat she was extremely rejoiced, calling the maid to take up the dead rat with a pair of tongs, and throw it out of the window. Then she set me on a table, where I shewed her my hanger all bloody, and, wiping it on the lappet of my coat, returned it to the scabbard. I was pressed to do more than one thing, which another could not do for me, and therefore endeavoured to make my mistress understand that I desired to be set down on the floor; which after she had done, my bashfulness would not suffer me to express myself farther, than by pointing to the door, and bowing several times. The good woman, with much difficulty, at last perceived what I would be at, and taking me up again in her hand, walked into the garden, where she set me down. I went on one side about two hundred yards, and beckoning to her not to look or to follow me, I hid myself between two leaves of sorrel, and there discharged the necessities of nature.

I hope the gentle reader will excuse me for dwelling on these and the like particulars, which, however insignificant they may appear to grovelling vulgar minds, yet will certainly help a philosopher to enlarge his thoughts and imagination, and apply them to the benefit of public as well as private life, which was my sole design in presenting this and other accounts of my travels to the world; wherein I have been chiefly studious of truth, without affecting any ornaments of learning or of style. But the whole scene of this voyage made so strong an impression on my mind, and is so deeply fixed in my memory, that in committing it to paper I did not omit one material circumstance: however, upon a strict review, I blotted out several passages of less moment which were in my first copy, for fear of being censured as tedious and trifling, whereof travellers are often, perhaps not without justice, accused.

CHAP.

CHAP. II.

A deſcription of the farmer's daughter. The author carried to a market-town, and then to the metropolis. The particulars of his journey.

MY miſtreſs had a daughter of nine years old, a child of towardly parts for her age, very dextrous at her needle, and ſkilful in dreſſing her baby. Her mother and ſhe contrived to fit up the baby's cradle for me againſt night: the cradle was put into a ſmall drawer of a cabinet, and the drawer placed upon a hanging ſhelf for fear of the rats. This was my bed all the time I ſtaid with thoſe people, tho' made more convenient by degrees, as I began to learn their language, and make my wants known. This young girl was ſo handy, that, after I had once or twice pulled off my cloaths before her, ſhe was able to dreſs and undreſs me, tho' I never gave her that trouble, when ſhe would let me do either myſelf. She made me ſeven ſhirts, and ſome other linen, of as fine cloth as could be got, which indeed was coarſer than ſackcloth; and theſe ſhe conſtantly waſhed for me with her own hands. She was likewiſe my ſchool-miſtreſs to teach me the language: when I pointed to any thing, ſhe told me the name of it in her own tongue, ſo that in a few days I was able to call for whatever I had a mind to. She was very good-natured, and not above forty feet high, being little for her age. She gave me the name of Grildrig, which the family took up, and afterwards the whole kingdom. The word imports what the Latins call *nanunculus*, the Italians *homunceletino*, and the Engliſh *mannikin*. To her I chiefly owe my preſervation in that country: we never parted while I was there; I called her my Glumdalclitch or little nurſe; and ſhould be guilty of great ingratitude, if I omitted this honourable mention of her care and affection towards me, which I heartily wiſh it lay in my power to requite as ſhe deſerves, inſtead of being the innocent but unhappy inſtrument of her diſgrace, as I have too much reaſon to fear.

IT

It now began to be known and talked of in the neighbourhood, that my maſter had found a ſtrange animal in the field, about the bigneſs of a *ſplacknuck*, but exactly ſhaped in every part like a human creature; which it likewiſe imitated in all its actions; ſeemed to ſpeak in a little language of its own, had already learned ſeveral words of theirs, went erect upon two legs, was tame and gentle, would come when it was called, do whatever it was bid, had the fineſt limbs in the world, and a complexion fairer than a nobleman's daughter of three years old. Another farmer, who lived hard by, and was a particular friend of my maſter, came on a viſit on purpoſe to inquire into the truth of this ſtory. I was immediately produced, and placed upon a table, where I walked as I was commanded, drew my hanger, put it up again, made my reverence to my maſter's gueſt, aſked him in his own language how he did, and told him he was welcome, juſt as my little nurſe had inſtructed me. This man, who was old and dim-ſighted, put on his ſpectacles to behold me better, at which I could not forbear laughing very heartily, for his eyes appeared like the full moon ſhining into a chamber at two windows. Our people, who diſcovered the cauſe of my mirth, bore me company in laughing, at which the old fellow was fool enough to be angry and out of countenance. He had the character of a great miſer, and, to my misfortune, he well deſerved it by the curſed advice he gave my maſter, to ſhew me as a ſight upon a market-day in the next town, which was half an hour's riding, about two and twenty miles from our houſe. I gueſſed there was ſome miſchief contriving, when I obſerved my maſter and his friend whiſpering long together, ſometimes pointing at me; and my fears made me fancy that I overheard and underſtood ſome of their words. But the next morning Glumdalclitch, my little nurſe, told me the whole matter, which ſhe had cunningly picked out from her mother. The poor girl laid me on her boſom, and fell a weeping with ſhame and grief. She apprehended ſome miſchief would happen to me from rude vulgar folks, who might ſqueeſe me to death, or break one of my limbs by taking me in their hands. She had alſo obſerved how modeſt I was in my nature, how nicely I regarded my honour, and what an

indignity I ſhould conceive it to be expoſed for money as a public ſpectacle to the meaneſt of the people. She ſaid, her *papa* and *mama* had promiſed that Grildrig ſhould be hers, but now ſhe found they meant to ſerve her as they did laſt year, when they pretended to give her a lamb, and yet, as ſoon as it was fat, ſold it to a butcher. For my own part, I may truly affirm, that I was leſs concerned than my nurſe. I had a ſtrong hope, which never left me, that I ſhould one day recover my liberty; and as to the ignominy of being carried about for a monſter, I conſidered myſelf to be a perfect ſtranger in the country, and that ſuch a misfortune could never be charged upon me as a reproach, if ever I ſhould return to England; ſince the King of Great-Britain himſelf, in my condition, muſt have undergone the ſame diſtreſs.

My maſter, purſuant to the advice of his friend, carried me in a box the next market-day to the neighbouring town, and took along with him his little daughter, my nurſe, upon a pillion behind him. The box was cloſe on every ſide, with a little door for me to go in and out, and a few gimlet-holes to let in air. The girl had been ſo careful as to put the quilt of her baby's bed into it for me to lie down on. However I was terribly ſhaken and diſcompoſed in this journey, tho' it were but of half an hour. For the horſe went about forty feet at every ſtep, and trotted ſo high, that the agitation was equal to the riſing and falling of a ſhip in a great ſtorm, but much more frequent: our journey was ſomewhat farther than from London to St Alban's. My maſter alighted at an inn which he uſed to frequent; and after conſulting a while with the inn-keeper, and making ſome neceſſary preparations, he hired the *grultrud* or crier to give notice thro' the town of a ſtrange creature to be ſeen at the ſign of the Green Eagle, not ſo big as a *ſplacknuk* (an animal in that country very finely ſhaped, about ſix feet long) and in every part of the body reſembling an human creature, could ſpeak ſeveral words, and perform an hundred diverting tricks.

I was placed upon a table in the largeſt room of the *inn*, which might be near three hundred feet ſquare. My *little* nurſe ſtood on a low ſtool cloſe to the table to take care of me, and direct what I ſhould do. My maſter, to avoid

avoid a croud, would ſuffer only thirty people at a time to ſee me. I walked about on the table as the girl commanded: ſhe aſked me queſtions, as far as ſhe knew my underſtanding of the language reached, and I anſwered them as loud as I could. I turned about ſeveral times to the company, paid my humble reſpects, ſaid they were welcome, and uſed ſome other ſpeeches I had been taught. I took up a thimble filled with liquor, which Glumdalclitch had given me for a cup, and drank their health. I drew out my hanger, and flouriſhed with it after the manner of fencers in England. My nurſe gave me part of a ſtraw, which I exerciſed as a pike, having learned the art in my youth. I was that day ſhewn to twelve ſetts of company, and as often forced to act over again the ſame fopperies, till I was half dead with wearineſs and vexation. For thoſe who had ſeen me made ſuch wonderful reports, that the people were ready to break down the doors to come in. My maſter, for his own intereſt, would not ſuffer any one to touch me except my nurſe; and to prevent danger, benches were ſet round the table at ſuch a diſtance as to put me out of every body's reach. However, an unlucky ſchool-boy aimed a hazel-nut directly at my head, which very narrowly miſſed me; otherwiſe, it came with ſo much violence that it would have infallibly knocked out my brains, for it was almoſt as large as a ſmall pumpion: but I had the ſatisfaction to ſee the young rogue well beaten, and turned out of the room.

My maſter gave public notice, that he would ſhew me again the next market-day, and in the mean time he prepared a more convenient vehicle for me, which he had reaſon enough to do; for I was ſo tired with my firſt journey, and with entertaining company for eight hours together, that I could hardly ſtand upon my legs, or ſpeak a word. It was at leaſt three days before I recovered my ſtrength; and that I might have no reſt at home, all the neighbouring gentlemen from an hundred miles round, hearing of my fame, came to ſee me at my maſter's own houſe. There could not be fewer than thirty perſons with their wives and children (for the country is very populous;) and my maſter demanded the rate of a full room, whenever he ſhewed me at home,

altho' it were only to a ſingle family: ſo that for ſome time I had but little eaſe every day of the week (except Wedneſday, which is their Sabbath) altho' I were not carried to the town.

My maſter, finding how profitable I was like to be, reſolved to carry me to the moſt conſiderable cities of the kingdom. Having therefore provided himſelf with all things neceſſary for a long journey, and ſettled his affairs at home, he took leave of his wife, and upon the 17th of Auguſt 1703, about two months after my arrival, we ſet out for the metropolis, ſituated near the middle of that empire, and about three thouſand miles diſtance from our houſe: my maſter made his daughter Glumdalclitch ride behind him. She carried me on her lap in a box tied about her waiſt. The girl had lined it on all ſides with the ſofteſt cloth ſhe could get, well quilted underneath, furniſhed it with her baby's bed, provided me with linen and other neceſſaries, and made every thing as convenient as ſhe could. We had no other company but a boy of the houſe, who rode after us with the luggage.

My maſter's deſign was to ſhew me in all the towns by the way, and to ſtep out of the road for fifty or an hundred miles, to any village, or perſon of quality's houſe, where he might expect cuſtom. We made eaſy journies of not above ſeven or eight ſcore miles a day: for Glumdalclitch, on purpoſe to ſpare me, complained ſhe was tired with the trotting of the horſe. She often took me out of my box at my own deſire to give me air, and ſhew me the country, but always held me faſt by a leading-ſtring. We paſſed over five or ſix rivers many degrees broader and deeper than the Nile, or the Ganges; and there was hardly a rivulet ſo ſmall as the Thames at London-bridge. We were ten weeks in our journey, and I was ſhewn in eighteen large towns, beſides many villages and private families.

On the 26th day of October, we arrived at the metropolis, called in their language Lordbrulgrud, or Pride of the Univerſe. My maſter took a lodging in the principal ſtreet of the city, not far from the royal palace, and put *out bills in* the uſual form, containing an exact deſcripti*on of my* perſon and parts. He hired a large room be*tween three* and four hundred feet wide. He provided a table

table ſixty feet in diameter, upon which I was to act my part, and palliſadoed it round three feet from the edge, and as many high, to prevent my falling over. I was ſhewn ten times a day, to the wonder and ſatisfaction of all people. I could now ſpeak the language tolerably well, and perfectly underſtood every word that was ſpoken to me. Beſides, I had learned their alphabet, and could make a ſhift to explain a ſentence here and there; for Glumdalclitch had been my inſtructor while we were at home, and at leiſure hours during our journey. She carried a little book in her pocket, not much larger than a Samſon's Atlas; it was a common treatiſe for the uſe of young girls, giving a ſhort account of their religion; out of this ſhe taught me my letters, and interpreted the words.

CHAP. III.

The author ſent for to court. The Queen buys him of his maſter the farmer, and preſents him to the King. He diſputes with his Majeſty's great ſcholars. An apartment at court provided for the author. He is in high favour with the Queen. He ſtands up for the honour of his own country. His quarrels with the Queen's dwarf.

THE frequent labours I underwent every day, made in few weeks a very conſiderable change in my health: the more my maſter got by me, the more inſatiable he grew. I had quite loſt my ſtomach, and was almoſt reduced to a ſkeleton. The farmer obſerved it, and, concluding I muſt ſoon die, reſolved to make as good a hand of me as he could. While he was thus reaſoning and reſolving with himſelf, a *ſardral*, or gentleman-uſher, came from court, commanding my maſter to carry me immediately thither for the diverſion of the Queen and her Ladies. Some of the latter had already been to ſee me, and reported ſtrange things of my beauty, behaviour, and good ſenſe. Her Majeſty, and thoſe who attended her, were beyond meaſure delighted with my demeanour. I fell on my knees, and begged the honour of kiſſing her imperial foot; but this gracious Princeſs

held out her little finger towards me (after I was ſet on a table) which I embraced in both my arms, and put the tip of it with the utmoſt reſpect to my lip. She made me ſome general queſtions about my country, and my travels, which I anſwered as diſtinctly, and in as few words as I could. She aſked, whether I would be content to live at court. I bowed down to the board of the table, and humbly anſwered that I was my maſter's ſlave; but if I were at my own diſpoſal, I ſhould be proud to devote my life to her Majeſty's ſervice. She then aſked my maſter, whether he were willing to ſell me at a good price. He, who apprehended I could not live a month, was ready enough to part with me, and demanded a thouſand pieces of gold which were ordered him on the ſpot, each piece being about the bigneſs of eight hundred moydores; but, allowing for the proportion of all things between that country and Europe, and the high price of gold among them, was hardly ſo great a ſum as a thouſand guineas would be in England. I then ſaid to the Queen, ſince I was now her Majeſty's moſt humble creature and vaſſal, I muſt beg the favour, that Glumdalclitch, who had always tended me with ſo much care and kindneſs, and underſtood to do it ſo well, might be admitted into her ſervice, and continue to be my nurſe and inſtructor. Her Majeſty agreed to my petition, and eaſily got the farmer's conſent, who was glad enough to have his daughter preferred at court, and the poor girl herſelf was not able to hide her joy: my late maſter withdrew, bidding me farewel, and ſaying he had left me in a good ſervice; to which I replied not a word, only making him a ſlight bow.

The Queen obſerved my coldneſs, and, when the farmer was gone out of the apartment, aſked me the reaſon. I made bold to tell her Majeſty, that I owed no other obligation to my late maſter, than his not daſhing out the brains of a poor harmleſs creature found by chance in his field; which obligation was amply recompenſed by the gain he had made in ſhewing me thro' half the kingdom, and the price he had now ſold me for. That the life I had ſince led, was laborious enough to *kill an* animal of ten times my ſtrength. That my health *was much* impaired by the continual drudgery of entertaining

taining the rabble every hour of the day, and that, if my maſter had not thought my life in danger, her Majeſty would not have got ſo cheap a bargain. But, as I was out of all fear of being ill treated under the protection of ſo great and good an Empreſs, the ornament of nature, the darling of the world, the delight of her ſubjects, the phœnix of the creation; ſo, I hoped my late maſter's apprehenſions would appear to be groundleſs; for I already found my ſpirits to revive by the influence of her moſt auguſt preſence.

THIS was the ſum of my ſpeech, delivered with great improprieties and heſitation; the latter part was altogether framed in the ſtyle peculiar to that people, whereof I learned ſome phraſes from Glumdalclitch, while ſhe was carrying me to court.

THE Queen, giving great allowance for my defectiveneſs in ſpeaking, was however ſurpriſed at ſo much wit and good ſenſe in ſo diminutive an animal. She took me in her own hand, and carried me to the King, who was then retired to his cabinet. His Majeſty, a Prince of much gravity and auſtere countenance, not well obſerving my ſhape at firſt view, aſked the Queen after a cold manner, how long it was ſince ſhe grew fond of a *ſplacknuck*; for ſuch it ſeems he took me to be, as I lay upon my breaſt in her Majeſty's right hand. But this Princeſs, who hath an infinite deal of wit and humour, ſet me gently on my feet upon the ſcrutore, and commanded me to give his Majeſty an account of myſelf, which I did in a very few words; and Glumdalclitch, who attended at the cabinet door, and could not endure I ſhould be out of her ſight, being admitted, confirmed all that had paſſed from my arrival at her father's houſe.

THE King, altho' he be as learned a perſon as any in his dominions, had been educated in the ſtudy of philoſophy, and particularly mathematics; yet when he obſerved my ſhape exactly, and ſaw me walk erect, before I began to ſpeak, conceived I might be a piece of clockwork (which is in that country arrived to a very great perfection) contrived by ſome ingenious artiſt. But when he heard my voice, and found what I delivered to be regular and rational, he could not conceal his aſtoniſhment. He was by no means ſatisfied with the relation I gave him

him of the manner I came into his kingdom, but thought it a ſtory concerted between Glumdalclitch and her father, who had taught me a ſett of words to make me ſell at a better price. Upon this imagination he put ſeveral other queſtions to me, and ſtill received rational anſwers, no otherwiſe defective than by a foreign accent, and an imperfect knowledge in the language, with ſome ruſtic phraſes, which I had learned at the farmer's houſe, and did not ſuit the polite ſtyle of a court.

His Majeſty ſent for three great ſcholars, who were then in their weekly waiting according to the cuſtom in that country. Theſe gentlemen, after they had a while examined my ſhape with much nicety, were of different opinions concerning me. They all agreed, that I could not be produced according to the regular laws of nature, becauſe I was not framed with a capacity of preſerving my life either by ſwiftneſs, or climbing of trees, or digging holes in the earth. They obſerved by my teeth, which they viewed with great exactneſs, that I was a carnivorous animal; yet moſt quadrupeds being an overmatch for me, and field-mice with ſome others too nimble, they could not imagine how I ſhould be able to ſupport myſelf, unleſs I fed upon ſnails and other inſects, which they offered, by many learned arguments, to evince that I could not poſſibly do*. One of theſe virtuoſi ſeemed to think that I might be an embryo, or abortive birth. But this opinion was rejected by the other two, who obſerved my limbs to be perfect and finiſhed, and that I had lived ſeveral years, as it was manifeſt from my beard, the ſtumps whereof they plainly diſcovered thro' a magnifying-glaſs. They would not allow me to be a dwarf, becauſe my littleneſs was beyond all degrees of compariſon; for the Queen's favourite dwarf, the ſmalleſt ever known in that kingdom, was near thirty feet high. After much debate they concluded unanimouſly, that I was only

* By this reaſoning the author probably intended to ridicule the pride of thoſe philoſophers, who have thought fit to arraign the wiſdom of Providence in the creation and government of the world; whoſe cavils are ſpecious, like thoſe of the Brobdingnagian ſages, only in proportion to the ignorance of thoſe to whom they are propoſed. *Hawkeſ.*

ly *relplum ſcalcath*, which is interpreted literally *lusus naturæ*: a determination exactly agreeable to the modern philoſophy of Europe, whoſe profeſſors diſdaining the old evaſion of *occult cauſes*, whereby the followers of Ariſtotle endeavoured in vain to diſguiſe their ignorance, have invented this wonderful ſolution of all difficulties, to the unſpeakable advancement of human knowledge.

After this deciſive concluſion I intreated to be heard a word or two. I applied myſelf to the King, and aſſured his Majeſty that I came from a country, which abounded with ſeveral millions of both ſexes and of my own ſtature; where the animals, trees, and houſes were all in proportion, and where by conſequence I might be as able to defend myſelf, and to find ſuſtenance, as any of his Majeſty's ſubjects could do here; which I took for a full anſwer to thoſe gentlemens arguments. To this they only replied, with a ſmile of contempt, ſaying, that the farmer had inſtructed me very well in my leſſon*. The King, who had a much better underſtanding, diſmiſſing his learned men, ſent for the farmer, who by good fortune was not yet gone out of town; having therefore firſt examined him privately, and then confronted him with me and the young girl, his Majeſty began to think that what we told him might poſſibly be true. He deſired the Queen to order that a particular care ſhould be taken of me, and was of opinion, that Glumdalclitch ſhould ſtill continue in her office of tending me; becauſe he obſerved we had a great affection for each other. A convenient apartment was provided for her at court; ſhe had a ſort of governeſs appointed to take care of her education, a maid to dreſs her, and two other ſervants for menial offices; but the care of me was wholly appropriated to herſelf. The Queen commanded her own cabinet-maker to contrive a box, that might ſerve me for a bed-chamber, after the model that Glumdalclitch and I ſhould agree upon. This man was a moſt ingenious artiſt, and according to my directions

* This ſatire is levelled againſt all who reject thoſe facts for which they cannot perfectly account, notwithſtanding the abſurdity of rejecting the teſtimony by which they are ſupported.

Hawkeſ.

[illegible] in three weeks finished for me a wooden chamber of fifteen feet square, and twelve high, with sash-windows, a door, and two closets, like a London bed-chamber. The board that made the cieling was to be lifted up and down by two hinges to put in a bed ready furnished by her Majesty's upholsterer, which Glumdalclitch took out every day to air, made it with her own hands, and letting it down at night, locked up the roof over me. A nice workman, who was famous for little curiosities, undertook to make me two chairs, with backs and frames, of a substance not unlike ivory, and two tables, with a cabinet to put my things in. The room was quilted on all sides, as well as the floor and the cieling, to prevent any accident from the carelessness of those who carried me, and to break the force of a jolt when I went in a coach. I desired a lock for my door, to prevent rats and mice from coming in: the smith, after several attempts, made the smallest that ever was seen among them; for I have known a larger at the gate of a gentleman's house in England. I made a shift to keep the key in a pocket of my own, fearing Glumdalclitch might lose it. The Queen likewise ordered the thinnest silks that could be gotten to make me cloaths, not much thicker than an English blanket, very cumbersome, till I was accustomed to them. They were after the fashion of the kingdom, partly resembling the Persian, and partly the Chinese, and are a very grave and decent habit.

The Queen became so fond of my company, that she could not dine without me. I had a table placed upon the same at which her Majesty eat, just at her left elbow, and a chair to sit on. Glumdalclitch stood on a stool on the floor near my table, to assist and take care of me. I had an entire set of silver dishes and plates, and other necessaries, which in proportion to those of the Queen, were not much bigger than what I have seen in a London toy-shop, for the furniture of a baby-house: these my little nurse kept in her pocket in a silver-box, and gave me at meals as I wanted them, always cleaning them herself. No person dined with the Queen but the two Princesses royal, the elder sixteen years old, and the younger at that time thirteen and a month. Her Majesty used to put a bit of meat upon one of my dishes, out of which I carved for myself;

'; and her diverſion was to ſee me eat in miniature. ıe Queen (who had indeed but a weak ſtomach) p, at one mouthful, as much as a dozen Engliſh s could eat at a meal, which to me was for ſome very nauſeous ſight*. She would craunch the ıf a lark, bones and all, between her teeth, altho' : nine times as large as that of a full grown turkey; t a bit of bread in her mouth, as big as two -penny loaves. She drank out of a golden cup, a hogſhead at a draught. Her knives were twice ; as a ſcythe, ſet ſtrait upon the handle. The , forks, and other inſtruments, were all in the roportion. I remember, when Glumdalclitch car- ıe out of curioſity to ſee ſome of the tables at court, ten or a dozen of theſe enormous knives and forks fted up together, I thought I had never till then ſo terrible a ſight.

ı the cuſtom, that every Wedneſday (which, as I ıefore obſerved, is their Sabbath) the King and , with the royal iſſue of both ſexes, dine together apartment of his Majeſty, to whom I was now be- ı great favourite; and at theſe times my little chair ɔle were placed at his left hand before one of the lars. This Prince took a pleaſure in converſing ıe, inquiring into the manners, religion, laws, go- ent, and learning of Europe; wherein I gave him ł account I was able. His apprehenſion was ſo clear, ı judgment ſo exact, that he made very wiſe reflections

ıong other dreadful and diſguſting images which cuſtom dered familiar, are thoſe which ariſe from eating animal He who has ever turned with abhorrence from the ſkele- a beaſt which has been picked whole by birds or ver- uſt confeſs, that habit only could have enabled him to the ſight of the mangled bones and fleſh of a dead carcaſe every day cover his table: and he who reflects on the of lives that have been ſacrificed to ſuſtain his own, nquire by what the account has been balanced, and whe- life is become proportionably of more value, by the exer- virtue and piety, by the ſuperior happineſs which he has ıicated to reaſonable beings, and by the glory which his has aſcribed to God. *Hawkeſ.*

rections in three weeks finiſhed for me a wooden chamber of ſixteen feet ſquare, and twelve high, with ſaſh-windows, a door, and two cloſets, like a London bed-chamber. The board that made the cieling was to be lifted up and down by two hinges to put in a bed ready furniſhed by her Majeſty's upholſterer, which Glumdalclitch took out every day to air, made it with her own hands, and letting it down at night, locked up the roof over me. A nice workman, who was famous for little curioſities, undertook to make me two chairs, with backs and frames, of a ſubſtance not unlike ivory, and two tables, with a cabinet to put my things in. The room was quilted on all ſides, as well as the floor and the cieling, to prevent any accident from the careleſneſs of thoſe who carried me, and to break the force of a jolt when I went in a coach. I deſired a lock for my door, to prevent rats and mice from coming in: the ſmith, after ſeveral attempts, made the ſmalleſt that ever was ſeen among them; for I have known a larger at the gate of a gentleman's houſe in England. I made a ſhift to keep the key in a pocket of my own, fearing Glumdalclitch might loſe it. The Queen likewiſe ordered the thinneſt ſilks that could be gotten to make me cloaths, not much thicker than an Engliſh blanket, very cumberſome, till I was accuſtomed to them. They were after the faſhion of the kingdom, partly reſembling the Perſian, and partly the Chineſe, and are a very grave and decent habit.

The Queen became ſo fond of my company, that ſhe could not dine without me. I had a table placed upon the ſame at which her Majeſty eat, juſt at her left elbow, and a chair to ſit on. Glumdalclitch ſtood on a ſtool on the floor near my table, to aſſiſt and take care of me. I had an entire ſet of ſilver diſhes and plates, and other neceſſaries, which in proportion to thoſe of the Queen, were not much bigger than what I have ſeen in a London toy-ſhop, for the furniture of a baby-houſe: theſe my little nurſe kept in her pocket in a ſilver-box, and gave me at meals as I wanted them, always cleaning them herſelf. No perſon dined with the Queen but the two Princeſſes royal, the elder ſixteen years old, and the younger at that time thirteen and a month. Her Majeſty uſed to put a bit of meat upon one of my diſhes, out of which I carved for myſelf,

myſelf; and her diverſion was to ſee me eat in miniature. For the Queen (who had indeed but a weak ſtomach) took up, at one mouthful, as much as a dozen Engliſh farmers could eat at a meal, which to me was for ſome time a very nauſeous ſight*. She would craunch the wing of a lark, bones and all, between her teeth, altho' it were nine times as large as that of a full grown turkey; and put a bit of bread in her mouth, as big as two twelve-penny loaves. She drank out of a golden cup, above a hogſhead at a draught. Her knives were twice as long as a ſcythe, ſet ſtrait upon the handle. The ſpoons, forks, and other inſtruments, were all in the ſame proportion. I remember, when Glumdalclitch carried me out of curioſity to ſee ſome of the tables at court, where ten or a dozen of theſe enormous knives and forks were lifted up together, I thought I had never till then beheld ſo terrible a ſight.

It is the cuſtom, that every Wedneſday (which, as I have before obſerved, is their Sabbath) the King and Queen, with the royal iſſue of both ſexes, dine together in the apartment of his Majeſty, to whom I was now become a great favourite; and at theſe times my little chair and table were placed at his left hand before one of the ſalt-cellars. This Prince took a pleaſure in converſing with me, inquiring into the manners, religion, laws, government, and learning of Europe; wherein I gave him the beſt account I was able. His apprehenſion was ſo clear, and his judgment ſo exact, that he made very wiſe reflections

* Among other dreadful and diſguſting images which cuſtom has rendered familiar, are thoſe which ariſe from eating animal food. He who has ever turned with abhorrence from the ſkeleton of a beaſt which has been picked whole by birds or vermin, muſt confeſs, that habit only could have enabled him to endure the ſight of the mangled bones and fleſh of a dead carcaſe which every day cover his table: and he who reflects on the number of lives that have been ſacrificed to ſuſtain his own, ſhould inquire by what the account has been balanced, and whether his life is become proportionably of more value, by the exerciſe of virtue and piety, by the ſuperior happineſs which he has communicated to reaſonable beings, and by the glory which his intellect has aſcribed to God. *Hawkeſ.*

tions and obſervations upon all I ſaid. But I confeſs, that after I had been a little too copious in talking of my own beloved country, of our trade, and wars by ſea and land, of our ſchiſms in religion, and parties in the ſtate; the prejudices of his education prevailed ſo far, that he could not forbear taking me up in his right hand, and ſtroaking me gently with the other, after an hearty fit of laughing, aſked me whether I was a Whig or Tory? Then turning to his firſt miniſter, who waited behind him with a white ſtaff near as tall as the main-maſt of the Royal Sovereign, he obſerved how contemptible a thing was human grandeur, which could be mimicked by ſuch diminutive inſects as I: and yet, ſays he, I dare engage, theſe creatures have their titles and diſtinction of honour; they contrive little neſts and burrows, that they call houſes and cities; they make a figure in dreſs and equipage; they love, they fight, they diſpute, they cheat, they betray. And thus he continued on, while my colour came and went ſeveral times with indignation to hear our noble country, the miſtreſs of arts and arms, the ſcourge of France, the arbitreſs of Europe, the ſeat of virtue, piety, honour and truth, the pride and envy of the world, ſo contemptuouſly treated.

But as I was not in a condition to reſent injuries, ſo upon mature thoughts I began to doubt whether I was injured or no. For, after having been accuſtomed ſeveral months to the ſight and converſe of this people, and obſerved every object upon which I caſt mine eyes to be of proportionable magnitude, the horror I had at firſt conceived from their bulk and aſpect, was ſo far worn off, that if I had then beheld a company of Engliſh Lords and Ladies in their finery, and birth-day cloaths, acting their ſeveral parts in the moſt courtly manner of ſtrutting, and bowing, and prating; to ſay the truth, I ſhould have been ſtrongly tempted to laugh as much at them, as the King and his grandees did at me. Neither indeed could I forbear ſmiling at myſelf, when the Queen uſed to place me upon her hand towards a looking-glaſs, by which both our perſons appeared before me in full view together; and there could nothing be more ridiculous than the com*pariſon*: ſo that I really began to imagine myſelf dwin*dled many* degrees below my uſual ſize.

Nothing

NOTHING angered and mortified me ſo much as the Queen's dwarf, who being of the loweſt ſtature that was ever in that country (for I verily think he was not full thirty feet high) became ſo inſolent at ſeeing a creature ſo much beneath him, that he would always affect to ſwagger, and look big as he paſſed by me in the Queen's anti-chamber, while I was ſtanding on ſome table talking with the Lords or Ladies of the court, and he ſeldom failed of a ſmart word or two upon my littleneſs; againſt which I could only revenge myſelf by calling him brother, challenging him to wreſtle, and ſuch repartees as are uſual in the mouths of *court pages*. One day, at dinner, this malicious little cubb was ſo nettled with ſomething I had ſaid to him, that, raiſing himſelf upon the frame of her Majeſty's chair, he took me up by the middle, as I was ſitting down, not thinking any harm, and let me drop into a large ſilver bowl of cream, and then ran away as faſt as he could. I fell over head and ears, and, if I had not been a good ſwimmer, it might have gone very hard with me; for Glumdalclitch in that inſtant happened to be at the other end of the room, and the Queen was in ſuch a fright, that ſhe wanted preſence of mind to aſſiſt me. But my little nurſe ran to my relief, and took me out, after I had ſwallowed above a quart of cream. I was put to bed; however I received no other damage than the loſs of a ſuit of cloaths, which was utterly ſpoiled. The dwarf was ſoundly whipped, and as a farther puniſhment forced to drink up the bowl of cream, into which he had thrown me; neither was he ever reſtored to favour: for ſoon after the Queen beſtowed him on a Lady of high quality, ſo that I ſaw him no more, to my very great ſatisfaction; for I could not tell to what extremity ſuch a malicious urchin might have carried his reſentment.

HE had before ſerved me a ſcurvy trick, which ſet the Queen a laughing, altho' at the ſame time ſhe was heartily vexed, and would have immediately caſhiered him, if I had not been ſo generous as to intercede. Her Majeſty had taken a marrow-bone upon her plate, and, after knocking out the marrow, placed the bone again in the diſh erect, as it ſtood before; the dwarf watching his opportunity, while Glumdalclitch was gone to the

ſide-board, mounted the ſtool that ſhe ſtood on to take care of me at meals, took me up in both hands, and ſqueeſing my legs together, wedged them into the marrow bone above my waiſt, where I ſtuck for ſome time, and made a very ridiculous figure. I believe it was near a minute before any one knew what was become of me: for I thought it below me to cry out. But, as princes ſeldom get their meat hot, my legs were not ſcalded, only my ſtockings and breeches in a ſad condition. The dwarf, at my entreaty, had no other puniſhment than a ſound whipping.

I was frequently rallied by the Queen upon account of my fearfulneſs; and ſhe uſed to aſk me, whether the people of my country were as great cowards as myſelf? The occaſion was this: the kingdom is much peſtered with flies in ſummer, and theſe odious inſects, each of them as big as a Dunſtable lark, hardly gave me any reſt while I ſat at dinner with their continual humming and buzzing about mine ears. They would ſometimes alight upon my victuals, and leave their loathſome excrement or ſpawn behind, which to me was very viſible, tho' not to the natives of that country, whoſe large optics were not ſo acute as mine in viewing ſmaller objects. Sometimes they would fix upon my noſe or fore-head, where they ſtung me to the quick, ſmelling very offenſively; and I could eaſily trace that viſcous matter, which, our naturaliſts tell us, enables thoſe creatures to walk with their feet upwards upon a cieling. I had much ado to defend myſelf againſt theſe deteſtable animals, and could not forbear ſtarting when they came on my face. It was the common practice of the dwarf to catch a number of theſe inſects in his hand, as ſchool-boys do among us, and let them out ſuddenly under my noſe, on purpoſe to frighten me, and divert the Queen. My remedy was to cut them in pieces with my knife, as they flew in the air, wherein my dexterity was much admired.

I remember, one morning, when Glumdalclitch had ſet me in my box upon a window, as ſhe uſually did in fair days to give me air (for I durſt not venture to let the *box* be hung on a nail out of the window, as we do with *cages in England*) after I had lifted up one of my ſaſhes, *and ſat* down at my table to eat a piece of ſweet cake

for

for my breakfaſt, above twenty waſps, allured by the ſmell, came flying into the room, humming louder than the drones of as many bag-pipes. Some of them ſeized my cake, and carried it piece-meal away; others flew about my head and face, confounding me with the noiſe, and putting me in the utmoſt terror of their ſtings. However, I had the courage to riſe and draw my hanger, and attack them in the air. I diſpatched four of them, but the reſt got away, and I preſently ſhut my window. Theſe inſects were as large as partridges; I took out their ſtings, found them an inch and a half long, and as ſharp as needles. I carefully preſerved them all, and having ſince ſhewn them with ſome other curioſities in ſeveral parts of Europe, upon my return to England, I gave three of them to Greſham College, and kept the fourth for myſelf.

CHAP. IV.

The country deſcribed. A propoſal for correcting modern maps. The King's palace, and ſome account of the metropolis. The author's way of travelling. The chief temple deſcribed.

I Now intend to give the reader a ſhort deſcription of this country, as far as I travelled in it, which was not above two thouſand miles round Lorbrulgrud, the metropolis. For the Queen, whom I always attended, never went farther when ſhe accompanied the King in his progreſſes, and there ſtaid till his Majeſty returned from viewing his frontiers. The whole extent of this Prince's dominions reacheth about ſix thouſand miles in length, and from three to five in breadth. From whence I cannot but conclude, that our Geographers of Europe are in a great error, by ſuppoſing nothing but ſea between Japan and California; for it was ever my opinion, that there muſt be a balance of earth to counterpoiſe the great continent of Tartary; and therefore they ought to correct their maps and charts by joining this vaſt tract of land to the north-weſt parts of America, wherein I ſhall be ready to lend them my aſſiſtance.

THE kingdom is a peninſula, terminated to the north-eaſt by a ridge of mountains thirty miles high, which are altogether impaſſable by reaſon of the volcanoes upon the tops; neither do the moſt learned know what ſort of mortals inhabit beyond thoſe mountains, or whether they be inhabited at all. On the three other ſides it is bounded by the ocean. There is not one ſea-port in the whole kingdom, and thoſe parts of the coaſts into which the rivers iſſue are ſo full of pointed rocks, and the ſea generally ſo rough, that there is no venturing with the ſmalleſt of their boats; ſo that theſe people are wholly excluded from any commerce with the reſt of the world. But the large rivers are full of veſſels, and abound with excellent fiſh; for they ſeldom get any from the ſea, becauſe the ſea-fiſh are of the ſame ſize with thoſe in Europe, and conſequently not worth catching; whereby it is manifeſt, that nature in the production of plants and animals of ſo extraordinary a bulk is wholly confined to this continent, of which I leave the reaſons to be determined by philoſophers. However, now and then they take a whale that happens to be daſhed againſt the rocks, which the common people feed on heartily. Theſe whales I have known ſo large that a man could hardly carry one upon his ſhoulders; and ſometimes for curioſity they are brought in hampers to Lorbrulgrud: I ſaw one of them in a diſh at the King's table, which paſſed for a rarity, but I did not obſerve he was fond of it; for I think indeed the bigneſs diſguſted him, altho' I have ſeen one ſomewhat larger in Greenland.

THE country is well inhabited, for it contains fifty one cities, near an hundred walled towns, and a great number of villages. To ſatisfy my curious reader, it may be ſufficient to deſcribe Lorbrulgrud. This city ſtands upon almoſt two equal parts on each ſide the river that paſſes thro'. It contains above eighty thouſand houſes, and about ſix hundred thouſand inhabitants. It is in length three *glomglungs* (which make about fifty four Engliſh miles) and two and a half in breadth, as I meaſured it myſelf in the royal map made by the King's order, which was laid on the ground on purpoſe for me, and extended an hundred feet; I paced the diameter and circumference ſeveral

several times bare-foot, and computing by the scale measured it pretty exactly.

The King's palace is no regular edifice, but an heap of building about seven miles round: the chief rooms are generally two hundred and forty feet high, and broad and long in proportion. A coach was allowed to Glumdalclitch and me, wherein her governess frequently took her out to see the town, or go among the shops; and I was always of the party, carried in my box; altho' the girl at my own desire would often take me out, and hold me in her hand, that I might more conveniently view the houses and the people, as we passed along the streets. I reckoned our coach to be about a square of Westminster-hall, but not altogether so high: however I cannot be very exact. One day the governess ordered our coachman to stop at several shops, where the beggars watching their opportunity, crouded to the sides of the coach, and gave me the most horrible spectacles that ever an European eye beheld. There was a woman with a cancer in her breast, swelled to a monstrous size, full of holes, in two or three of which I could have easily crept, and covered my whole body. There was a fellow with a wen in his neck larger than five wool-packs, and another with a couple of wooden legs, each about twenty feet high. But the most hateful sight of all was the lice crawling on their cloaths. I could see distinctly the limbs of these vermin with my naked eye, much better than those of an European louse thro' a microscope, and their snouts with which they rooted like swine. They were the first I had ever beheld, and I should have been curious enough to dissect one of them, if I had had proper instruments (which I unluckily left behind me in the ship) altho' indeed the sight was so nauseous, that it perfectly turned my stomach.

Besides the large box in which I was usually carried, the Queen ordered a smaller one to be made for me of about twelve feet square and ten high for the convenience of travelling, because the other was somewhat too large for Glumdalclitch's lap, and cumbersome in the coach; it was made by the same artist, whom I directed in the whole contrivance. This travelling closet was an exact square with a window in the middle of three of the squares, and

and each window was latticed with iron wire on the outside to prevent accidents in long journies. On the fourth side, which had no window, two ſtrong ſtaples were fixed, thro' which the perſon that carried me, when I had a mind to be on horſeback, put a leathern belt, and buckled it about his waiſt. This was always the office of ſome grave truſty ſervant in whom I could confide, whether I attended the King and Queen in their progreſſes, or were diſpoſed to ſee the gardens, or pay a viſit to ſome great lady or miniſter of ſtate in the court, when Glumdalclitch happened to be out of order: for I ſoon began to be known and eſteemed among the greateſt officers, I ſuppoſe more upon account of their Majeſty's favour than any merit of my own. In journies, when I was weary of the coach, a ſervant on horſeback would buckle on my box, and place it upon a cuſhion before him: and there I had a full proſpect of the country on three ſides from my three windows. I had in this cloſet a field-bed and a hammock hung from the cieling, two chairs and a table, neatly ſcrewed to the floor, to prevent being toſſed about by the agitation of the horſe or the coach. And having been long uſed to ſea-voyages, thoſe motions, altho' ſometimes very violent, did not much diſcompoſe me.

WHENEVER I had a mind to ſee the town, it was always in my travelling cloſet, which Glumdalclitch held in her lap in a kind of open ſedan, after the faſhion of the country, born by four men, and attended by two others in the Queen's livery. The people, who had often heard of me, were very curious to croud about the ſedan, and the girl was complaiſant enough to make the bearers ſtop, and to take me in her hand that I might be more conveniently ſeen.

I was very deſirous to ſee the chief temple, and particularly the tower belonging to it, which is reckoned the higheſt in the kingdom. Accordingly one day my nurſe carried me thither, but I may truly ſay I came back diſappointed; for the height is not above three thouſand feet, reckoning from the ground to the higheſt pinnacle top; which allowing for the difference between the ſize of thoſe people and us in Europe, is no great matter for admiration, nor at all equal in proportion (if I rightly remember) to Saliſbury ſteeple. But, not to detract from

a nation to which during my life I ſhall acknowledge myſelf extremely obliged, it muſt be allowed, that whatever this famous tower wants in height is amply made up in beauty and ſtrength. For the walls are near an hundred feet thick, built of hewn ſtone, whereof each is about forty feet ſquare, and adorned on all ſides with ſtatues of gods and emperors, cut in marble, larger than the life, placed in their ſeveral niches. I meaſured a little finger which had fallen down from one of theſe ſtatues, and lay unperceived among ſome rubbiſh, and found it exactly four feet and an inch in length. Glumdalclitch wrapped it up in her handkerchief; and carried it home in her pocket to keep among other trinkets, of which the girl was very fond, as children at her age uſually are.

The King's kitchen is indeed a noble building, vaulted at top, and about ſix hundred feet high. The great oven is not ſo wide by ten paces as the cupola at St. Paul's; for I meaſured the latter on purpoſe after my return. But if I ſhould deſcribe the kitchen-grate, the prodigious pots and kettles, the joints of meat turning on the ſpits, with many other particulars, perhaps I ſhould be hardly believed; at leaſt a ſevere critic would be apt to think I enlarged a little, as travellers are often ſuſpected to do. To avoid which cenſure, I fear I have run too much into the other extream; and that if this treatiſe ſhould happen to be tranſlated into the language of Brobdingnag, (which is the general name of that kingdom) and tranſmitted thither, the King and his people would have reaſon to complain, that I had done them an injury by a falſe and diminutive repreſentation.

His Majeſty ſeldom keeps above ſix hundred horſes in his ſtables; they are generally from fifty four to ſixty feet high. But when he goes abroad on ſolemn days, he is attended for ſtate by a militia guard of five hundred horſe, which indeed I thought was the moſt ſplendid ſight that could be ever beheld, till I ſaw part of his army in battalia, whereof I ſhall find another occaſion to ſpeak.

CHAP.

CHAP. V.

Several adventures that happened to the author. The execution of a criminal. The author ſhews his ſkill in navigation.

I SHOULD have lived happy enough in that country, if my littleneſs had not expoſed me to ſeveral ridiculous and troubleſome accidents: ſome of which I ſhall venture to relate. Glumdalclitch often carried me into the gardens of the court in my ſmaller box, and would ſometimes take me out of it, and hold me in her hand, or ſet me down to walk. I remember before the dwarf left the Queen, he followed us one day into thoſe gardens, and my nurſe having ſet me down, he and I being cloſe together, near ſome dwarf apple-trees, I muſt need ſhew my wit by a ſilly alluſion between him and the trees, which happens to hold in their language, as it doth in ours. Whereupon the malicious rogue watching his opportunity, when I was walking under one of them, ſhook it directly over my head, by which a dozen apples, each of them near as large as a Briſtol barrel, came tumbling about my ears; one of them hit me on the back as I chanced to ſtoop, and knocked me down flat on my face; but I received no other hurt, and the dwarf was pardoned at my deſire, becauſe I had given the provocation.

ANOTHER day Glumdalclitch left me on a ſmooth graſs-plot to divert myſelf, while ſhe walked at ſome diſtance with her governeſs. In the mean time there ſuddenly fell ſuch a violent ſhower of hail, that I was immediately by the force of it ſtruck to the ground: and when I was down, the hail-ſtones gave me ſuch cruel bangs all over the body, as if I had been pelted with tennis-balls; however, I made a ſhift to creep on all four, and ſhelter myſelf by lying flat on my face on the lee-ſide of a border of lemon-thyme, but ſo bruiſed from head to foot, that I could not go abroad in ten days. Neither is this at all to be wondered at, becauſe nature in that country obſerving the ſame proportion thro' all her operations, a *hail-ſtone* is near eighteen hundred times as large as one

in Europe, which I can aſſert upon experience, having been ſo curious to weigh and meaſure them.

But a more dangerous accident happened to me in the ſame garden, when my little nurſe believing ſhe had put me in a ſecure place, which I often entreated her to do, that I might enjoy my own thoughts, and having left my box at home to avoid the trouble of carrying it, went to another part of the garden with her governeſs, and ſome ladies of her acquaintance. While ſhe was abſent, and out of hearing, a ſmall white ſpaniel belonging to one of the chief gardeners, having got by accident into the garden, happened to range near the place where I lay: the dog, following the ſcent, came directly up, and taking me in his mouth ran ſtrait to his maſter, wagging his tail, and ſet me gently on the ground. By good fortune he had been ſo well taught, that I was carried between his teeth without the leaſt hurt, or even tearing my cloaths. But the poor gardener who knew me well, and had a great kindneſs for me, was in a terrible fright: he gently took me up in both his hands, and aſked me how I did; but I was ſo amazed and out of breath, that I could not ſpeak a word. In a few minutes I came to myſelf, and he carried me ſafe to my little nurſe, who by this time had returned to the place where ſhe left me, and was in cruel agonies when I did not appear nor anſwer when ſhe called: ſhe ſeverely reprimanded the gardener on account of his dog. But the thing was huſhed up, and never known at court; for the girl was afraid of the Queen's anger, and truly, as to myſelf, I thought it would not be for my reputation that ſuch a ſtory ſhould go about.

This accident abſolutely determined Glumdalclitch never to truſt me abroad for the future out of her ſight. I had been long afraid of this reſolution, and therefore concealed from her ſome little unlucky adventures that happened in thoſe times when I was left by myſelf. Once a kite hovering over the garden, made a ſtoop at me, and if I had not reſolutely drawn my hanger, and run under a thick eſpalier, he would have certainly carried me away in his talons. Another time walking to the top of a freſh mole-hill, I fell to my neck in the hole, thro' which that animal had *caſt up the* earth, and coined ſome lie not *worth remembering*, to excuſe myſelf for ſpoiling my cloaths.

cloaths. I likewiſe broke my right ſhin againſt the ſhell of a ſnail, which I happened to ſtumble over, as I was walking alone, and thinking on poor England.

I cannot tell, whether I were more pleaſed or mortified to obſerve in thoſe ſolitary walks, that the ſmaller birds did not appear to be at all affaid of me, but would hop about within a yard's diſtance, looking for worms and other food with as much indifference and ſecurity, as if no creature at all were near them. I remember, a thruſh had the confidence to ſnatch out of my hand, with his bill, a piece of cake that Glumdalclitch had juſt given me for my breakfaſt. When I attempted to catch any of theſe birds, they would boldly turn againſt me, endeavouring to pick my fingers, which I durſt not venture within their reach; and then they would hop back unconcerned to hunt for worms or ſnails, as they did before. But one day I took a thick cudgel, and threw it with all my ſtrength ſo luckily at a linnet, that I knocked him down, and ſeizing him by the neck with both my hands, ran with him in triumph to my nurſe. However the bird, who had only been ſtunned, recovering himſelf, gave me ſo many boxes with his wings on both ſides of my head and body, tho' I held him at arms length, and was out of the reach of his claws, that I was twenty times thinking to let him go. But I was ſoon relieved by one of our ſervants, who wrung off the bird's neck, and I had him next day for dinner by the Queen's command. This linnet, as near as I can remember, ſeemed to be ſomewhat larger than an England ſwan.

The maids of honour often invited Glumdalclitch to their apartments, and deſired ſhe would bring me along with her, on purpoſe to have the pleaſure of ſeeing and touching me. They would often ſtrip me naked from top to toe, and lay me at full length in their boſoms; wherewith I was much diſguſted; becauſe, to ſay the truth, a very offenſive ſmell came from their ſkins; which I do not mention, or intend, to the diſadvantage of thoſe excellent ladies for whom I have all manner of reſpect; but I conceive that my ſenſe was more acute in proportion to my littleneſs, and that thoſe illuſtrious perſons were *no more* diſagreeable to their lovers, or to each other, *than* people of the ſame quality are with us in England.

And, after all, I found their natural ſmell was much more ſupportable, than when they uſed perfumes, under which I immediately ſwooned away. I cannot forget, that an intimate friend of mine in Lilliput took the freedom in a warm day, when I had uſed a good deal of exerciſe, to complain of a ſtrong ſmell about me, altho' I am as little faulty that way as moſt of my ſex: but I ſuppoſe his faculty of ſmelling was as nice with regard to me, as mine was to that of this people. Upon this point I cannot forbear doing juſtice to the Queen my miſtreſs, and Glumdalclitch my nurſe, whoſe perſons were as ſweet as thoſe of any lady in England.

That which gave me moſt uneaſineſs among theſe maids of honour (when my nurſe carried me to viſit them) was to ſee them uſe me without any manner of ceremony, like a creature who had no ſort of conſequence; for they would ſtrip themſelves to the ſkin, and put on their ſmocks in my preſence, while I was placed on their toylet, directly before their naked bodies, which I am ſure to me was very far from being a tempting ſight, or from giving me any other emotions than thoſe of horror and diſguſt. Their ſkins appeared ſo coarſe and uneven, ſo variouſly coloured, when I ſaw them near, with a mole here and there as broad as a trencher, and hairs hanging from it thicker than pack-threads, to ſay nothing farther concerning the reſt of their perſons. Neither did they at all ſcruple while I was by to diſcharge what they had drank, to the quantity of at leaſt two hogſheads, in a veſſel that held above three tuns. The handſomeſt among thoſe maids of honour, a pleaſant frolicſome girl of ſixteen, would ſometimes ſet me aſtride upon one of her nipples, with many other tricks, wherein the reader will excuſe me for not being over particular. But I was ſo much diſpleaſed, that I entreated Glumdalclitch to contrive ſome excuſe for not ſeeing that young lady any more.

One day a young gentleman, who was nephew to my nurſe's governeſs, came and preſſed them both to ſee an execution. It was of a man, who had murdered one of that gentleman's intimate acquaintance. Glumdalclitch was prevailed on to be of the company, very much againſt her inclination, for ſhe was naturally tender-hearted: and as for myſelf, altho' I abhorred ſuch kind of ſpectacles,

yet

yet my curioſity tempted me to ſee ſomething, that I thought muſt be extraordinary. The malefactor was fixed in a chair upon a ſcaffold erected for that purpoſe, and his head cut off at one blow with a ſword of about forty feet long. The veins and arteries ſpouted up ſuch a prodigious quantity of blood, and ſo high in the air, that the great Jett d'eau at Verſailles was not equal for the time it laſted; and the head, when it fell on the ſcaffold floor, gave ſuch a bounce as made me ſtart, altho' I were at leaſt half an Engliſh mile diſtant.

The Queen, who often uſed to hear me talk of my ſea-voyages, and took all occaſions to divert me when I was melancholy, aſked me whether I underſtood how to handle a ſail or an oar, and whether a little exerciſe of rowing might not be convenient for my health? I anſwered, that I underſtood both very well: for altho' my proper employment had been to be ſurgeon or doctor to the ſhip, yet often upon a pinch I was forced to work like a common mariner. But I could not ſee how this could be done in their country, where the ſmalleſt wherry was equal to a firſt rate man of war among us, and ſuch a boat as I could manage would never live in any of their rivers. Her Majeſty ſaid, if I would contrive a boat, her own joiner ſhould make it, and ſhe would provide a place for me to ſail in. The fellow was an ingenious workman, and by my inſtructions in ten days finiſhed a pleaſure-boat, with all its tackling, able conveniently to hold eight Europeans. When it was finiſhed, the Queen was ſo delighted, that ſhe ran with it in her lap to the King, who ordered it to be put in a ciſtern full of water with me in it by way of trial; where I could not manage my two ſculls, or little oars, for want of room. But the Queen had before contrived another project. She ordered the joiner to make a wooden trough of three hundred feet long, fifty broad, and eight deep; which being well pitched, to prevent leaking, was placed on the floor along the wall in an outer room of the palace. It had a cock near the bottom to let out the water, when it began to grow ſtale; and two ſervants could eaſily fill it in half an hour. Here I often uſed to row for my own diverſion, as well as that of the Queen and her Ladies, who thought themſelves well entertained with my ſkill and agility. Sometimes

times I would put up my ſail, and then my buſineſs was only to ſteer, while the Ladies gave me a gale with their fans; and, when they were weary, ſome of the pages would blow my ſail forward with their breath, while I ſhewed my art by ſteering ſtarboard or larboard, as I pleaſed. When I had done, Glumdalclitch always carried back my boat into her cloſet, and hung it on a nail to dry.

In this exerciſe I once met an accident, which had like to have coſt me my life: for, one of the pages having put my boat into the trough, the governeſs, who attended Glumdalclitch, very officiouſly lifted me up to place me in the boat, but I happened to ſlip thro' her fingers, and ſhould infallibly have fallen down forty feet upon the floor, if, by the luckieſt chance in the world, I had not been ſtopped by a corking-pin that ſtuck in the good gentlewoman's ſtomacher; the head of the pin paſſed between my ſhirt and the waiſtband of my breeches, and thus I was held by the middle in the air, till Glumdalclitch ran to my relief.

Another time, one of the ſervants, whoſe office it was to fill my trough every third day with freſh water, was ſo careleſs to let a huge frog (not perceiving it) ſlip out of his pail. The frog lay concealed till I was put into my boat, but then ſeeing a reſting-place climbed up, and made it lean ſo much on one ſide, that I was forced to balance it with all my weight on the other to prevent overturning. When the frog was got in, it hopped at once half the length of the boat, and then over my head, backwards and forwards, daubing my face and cloaths with its odious ſlime. The largeneſs of its features made it appear the moſt deformed animal that can be conceived. However, I deſired Glumdalclitch to let me deal with it alone. I banged it a good while with one of my ſculls, and at laſt forced it to leap out of the boat.

But the greateſt danger I ever underwent in that kingdom, was from a monkey, who belonged to one of the clerks of the kitchen. Glumdalclitch had locked me up in her cloſet, while ſhe went ſomewhere upon buſineſs, or a viſit. The weather being very warm, the cloſet-window was left open, as well as the windows and the door of my *bigger box*, in which I uſually lived, becauſe *of its largeneſs and* convenience. As I ſat quietly medi-

tating at my table, I heard ſomething bounce in at the cloſet-window, and ſkip about from one ſide to the other: whereat altho' I were much alarmed, yet I ventured to look out, but not ſtirring from my ſeat; and then I ſaw this frolicſome animal friſking and leaping up and down, till at laſt he came to my box, which he ſeemed to view with great pleaſure and curioſity, peeping in at the door and every window. I retreated to the farther corner of my room, or box; but the monkey looking in at every ſide put me into ſuch a fright, that I wanted preſence of mind to conceal myſelf under the bed, as I might eaſily have done. After ſome time ſpent in peeping, grinning, and chattering, he at laſt eſpied me, and reaching one of his paws in at the door, as a cat does when ſhe plays with a mouſe, altho' I often ſhifted place to avoid him, he at length ſeized the lappet of my coat (which being made of that country ſilk, was very thick and ſtrong) and dragged me out. He took me up in his right fore-foot, and held me as a nurſe does a child ſhe is going to ſuckle, juſt as I have ſeen the ſame ſort of creature do with a kitten in Europe: and when I offered to ſtruggle, he ſqueezed me ſo hard, that I thought it more prudent to ſubmit. I have good reaſon to believe, that he took me for a young one of his own ſpecies, by his often ſtroaking my face very gently with his other paw. In theſe diverſions he was interrupted by a noiſe at the cloſet-door, as if ſome body were opening it; whereupon he ſuddenly leaped up to the window at which he had come in, and thence upon the leads and gutters, walking upon three legs, and holding me in the fourth, till he clambered up to a roof that was next to ours. I heard Glumdalclitch give a ſhreek at the moment he was carrying me out. The poor girl was almoſt diſtracted: that quarter of the palace was all in an uproar; the ſervants ran for ladders; the monkey was ſeen by hundreds in the court, ſitting upon the ridge of a building, holding me like a baby in one of his fore-paws, and feeding me with the other, by cramming into my mouth ſome victuals he had ſqueezed out of the bag on one ſide of his chaps, and patting me when I would *not eat*; whereat many of the rabble below could not forbear laughing; neither do I think they juſtly ought to be *blamed*, for without queſtion the ſight was ridiculous enough

enough to every body but myſelf. Some of the people threw up ſtones, hoping to drive the monkey down; but this was ſtrictly forbidden, or elſe very probably my brains had been daſhed out.

The ladders were now applied, and mounted by ſeveral men, which the monkey obſerving, and finding himſelf almoſt encompaſſed, not being able to make ſpeed enough with his three legs, let me drop on a ridge of tyle, and made his eſcape. Here I ſat for ſome time, five hundred yards from the ground, expecting every moment to be blown down by the wind, or to fall by my own giddineſs, and come tumbling over and over from the ridge to the eves: but an honeſt lad, one of my nurſe's footmen, climbed up, and putting me into his breeches-pocket brought me down ſafe.

I was almoſt choaked with the filthy ſtuff the monkey had crammed down my throat; but my dear little nurſe picked it out of my mouth with a ſmall needle, and then I fell a vomiting, which gave me great relief. Yet I was ſo weak, and bruiſed in the ſides with the ſqueezes given me by this odious animal, that I was forced to keep my bed a fortnight. The King, Queen, and all the court, ſent every day to inquire after my health, and her Majeſty made me ſeveral viſits during my ſickneſs. The monkey was killed, and an order made that no ſuch animal ſhould be kept about the palace.

When I attended the King after my recovery to return him thanks for his favours, he was pleaſed to rally me a good deal upon this adventure. He aſked me, what my thoughts and ſpeculations were while I lay in the monkey's paw; how I liked the victuals he gave me; his manner of feeding; and whether the freſh air on the roof had ſharpened my ſtomach. He deſired to know, what I would have done upon ſuch an occaſion in my own country. I told his Majeſty, that in Europe we had no monkies, except ſuch as were brought for curioſities from other places, and ſo ſmall, that I could deal with a dozen of them together, if they preſumed to attack me. And as for that monſtrous animal with whom I was ſo lately engaged (it was indeed as large as an elephant) if my fears had ſuffered me to think ſo far as to make uſe of my hanger (looking fiercely, and clapping my hand upon the hilt, as

I ſpoke) when he poked his paw into my chamber, perhaps I ſhould have given him ſuch a wound, as would have made him glad to withdraw it with more haſte than he put it in. This I delivered in a firm tone, like a perſon who was jealous leſt his courage ſhould be called in queſtion. However, my ſpeech produced nothing elſe beſides a loud laughter, which all the reſpect due to his Majeſty from thoſe about him could not make them contain. This made me reflect, how vain an attempt it is for a man to endeavour to do himſelf honour among thoſe, who are out of all degree of equality or compariſon with him. And yet I have ſeen the moral of my own behaviour very frequent in England ſince my return, where a little contemptible varlet, without the leaſt title to birth, perſon, wit, or common ſenſe, ſhall preſume to look with importance, and put himſelf upon a foot with the greateſt perſons of the kingdom.

I was every day furniſhing the court with ſome ridiculous ſtory; and Glumdalclitch, altho' ſhe loved me to exceſs, yet was arch enough to inform the Queen, whenever I committed any folly that ſhe thought would be diverting to her Majeſty. The girl, who had been out of order, was carried by her governeſs to take the air, about an hour's diſtance, or thirty miles from town. They alighted out of the coach near a ſmall foot-path in a field, and Glumdalclitch ſetting down my travelling-box, I went out of it to walk. There was a cow-dung in the path, and I muſt need try my activity by attempting to leap over it. I took a run, but unfortunately jumped ſhort, and found myſelf juſt in the middle up to my knees. I waded thro' with ſome difficulty, and one of the footmen wiped me as clean as he could with his handkerchief; for I was filthily bemired, and my nurſe confined me to my box till we returned home; where the Queen was ſoon informed of what had paſſed, and the footmen ſpread it about the court; ſo that all the mirth for ſome days was at my expence.

CHAP.

CHAP. VI*.

Several contrivances of the author to please the King and Queen. He shews his skill in music. The King inquires into the state of England, which the author relates to him. The King's observations thereon.

I Used to attend the King's levee once or twice a week, and had often seen him under the barber's hand, which indeed was at first very terrible to behold: for the razor was almost twice as long as an ordinary scythe. His Majesty, according to the custom of the country, was only shaved twice a week. I once prevailed on the barber to give me some of the suds or lather, out of which I picked forty or fifty of the strongest stumps of hair. I then took a piece of fine wood, and cut it like the back of a comb;

* In this chapter the author gives an account of the political state of Europe. His observations are delivered with his usual spirit of humour and severity. He appears most particularly affected with the proceedings of the courts of judicature, and complains of being almost ruined by a chancery-suit, which was *determined in his favour with costs*. It must be confessed, that instances of this kind are too frequent in our courts of justice; and they leave us no room to boast of the execution of our present laws, however excellent the laws, in their own original foundation, may have been. *Judgment, when turned into wormwood, is bitter*; but delays, as Lord Bacon observes, turn it into vinegar. It becomes sharp and corroding: and certainly it is more eligible to die immediately by the wound of an enemy, than to decay lingering by poison, administred from a seeming friend.

Orrery.

The Noble Commentator is mistaken as to his first observation; for Gulliver has here given a political account of no country but England. It is however a mistake to which any commentator would have been liable, who had read little more than the titles or contents of the chapters, into which this work is divided; for the word *Europe* has in some English, and all the Irish editions, been printed in the title of this chapter, instead of *England*. *Hawkes.*

comb, making ſeveral holes in it at equal diſtance with as ſmall a needle as I could get from Glumdalclitch. I fixed in the ſtumps ſo artificially, ſcraping and ſloping them with my knife towards the points, that I made a very tolerable comb; which was a ſeaſonable ſupply, my own being ſo much broken in the teeth, that it was almoſt uſeleſs: neither did I know any artiſt in that country ſo nice and exact, as would undertake to make me another.

And this puts me in mind of an amuſement, wherein I ſpent many of my leiſure hours. I deſired the Queen's woman to ſave for me the combings of her Majeſty's hair, whereof in time I got a good quantity, and conſulting with my friend the cabinet-maker, who had received general orders to do little jobs for me, I directed him to make two chair-frames, no larger than thoſe I had in my box, and then to bore little holes with a fine awl round thoſe parts where I deſigned the backs and ſeats; through theſe holes I wove the ſtrongeſt hairs I could pick out, juſt after the manner of cane-chairs in England. When they were finiſhed, I made a preſent of them to her Majeſty, who kept them in her cabinet, and uſed to ſhew them for curioſities, as indeed they were the wonder of every one that beheld them. The Queen would have had me ſit upon one of theſe chairs, but I abſolutely refuſed to obey her, proteſting I would rather die a thouſand deaths than place a diſhonourable part of my body on thoſe precious hairs, that once adorned her Majeſty's head. Of theſe hairs (as I had always a mechanical genius) I likewiſe made a neat little purſe about five feet long, with her Majeſty's name decyphered in gold letters, which I gave to Glumdalclitch by the Queen's conſent. To ſay the truth, it was more for ſhew than uſe, being not of ſtrength to bear the weight of the larger coins, and therefore ſhe kept nothing in it but ſome little toys that girls are fond of.

The King, who delighted in muſic, had frequent concerts at court, to which I was ſometimes carried, and ſet in my box on a table to hear them: but the noiſe was ſo great, that I could hardly diſtinguiſh the tunes. I am confident, that all the drums and trumpets of a royal army, beating and ſounding together juſt at your ears, could not equal it.

My

My practice was to have my box removed from the place where the performers ſat as far as I could, then to ſhut the doors and windows of it, and draw the window-curtains; after which I found their muſic not diſagreeable.

I had learned in my youth to play a little upon the ſpinet. Glumdalclitch kept one in her chamber; and a Maſter attended twice a week to teach her: I called it a ſpinet, becauſe it ſomewhat reſembled that inſtrument, and was plaid upon in the ſame manner. A fancy came into my head, that I would entertain the King and Queen with an Engliſh tune upon this inſtrument. But this appeared extremely difficult: for the ſpinet was near ſixty feet long, each key being almoſt a foot wide, ſo that with my arms extended I could not reach to above five keys, and to preſs them down required a good ſmart ſtroke with my fiſt, which would be too great a labour, and to no purpoſe. The method I contrived was this: I prepared two round ſticks about the bigneſs of common cudgels; they were thicker at one end than the other, and I covered the thicker ends with a piece of a mouſe's ſkin, that by rapping on them I might neither damage the tops of the keys, nor interrupt the ſound. Before the ſpinet a bench was placed about four feet below the keys, and I was put upon the bench. I ran ſideling upon it that way and this as faſt as I could, banging the proper keys with my two ſticks, and made a ſhift to play a jigg to the great ſatisfaction of both their Majeſties: but it was the moſt violent exerciſe I ever underwent, and yet I could not ſtrike above ſixteen keys, nor conſequently play the baſs and treble together, as other artiſts do; which was a great diſadvantage to my performance.

The King, who, as I before obſerved, was a Prince of excellent underſtanding, would frequently order that I ſhould be brought in my box, and ſet upon the table in his cloſet: he would then command me to bring one of my chairs out of the box, and ſit down within three yards diſtance upon the top of the cabinet, which brought me almoſt to a level with his face. In this manner I had ſeveral converſations with him. I one day took the freedom to tell his Majeſty, that the contempt he diſcovered towards Europe, and the reſt of the world, did not ſeem anſwerable to thoſe excellent qualities of mind, that he

was

was maſter of: that reaſon did not extend itſelf with the bulk of the body; on the contrary, we obſerved in our country, that the talleſt perſons were uſually leaſt provided with it: that among other animals, bees and ants had the reputation of more induſtry, art, and ſagacity, than many of the larger kinds; and that, as inconſiderable as he took me to be, I hoped I might live to do his Majeſty ſome ſignal ſervice. The King heard me with attention, and began to conceive a much better opinion of me than he had ever before. He deſired I would give him as exact an account of the government of England, as I poſſibly could; becauſe, as fond as princes commonly are of their own cuſtoms, (for ſo he conjectured of other monarchs by my former diſcourſes) he ſhould be glad to hear of any thing that might deſerve imitation.

IMAGINE with thyſelf, courteous reader, how often I then wiſhed for the tongue of Demoſthenes or Cicero, that might have enabled me to celebrate the praiſe of my own dear native country in a ſtyle equal to its merits and felicity.

I began my diſcourſe by informing his Majeſty, that our dominions conſiſted of two iſlands, which compoſed three mighty kingdoms under one ſovereign, beſides our plantations in America. I dwelt long upon the fertility of our ſoil, and the temperature of our climate. I then ſpoke at large upon the conſtitution of an Engliſh parliament, partly made up of an illuſtrious body called the houſe of Peers, perſons of the nobleſt blood, and of the moſt antient and ample patrimonies. I deſcribed that extraordinary care always taken of their education in arts and arms, to qualify them for being counſellors both to the King and kingdom; to have a ſhare in the legiſlature; to be members of the higheſt court of judicature, from whence there could be no appeal; and to be champions always ready for the defence of their prince and country, by their valour, conduct, and fidelity. That theſe were the ornament and bulwark of the kingdom, worthy followers of their moſt renowned anceſtors, whoſe honour had been the reward of their virtue, from which their poſterity were never once known to degenerate. To theſe were joined ſeveral holy perſons as part of that aſſembly under the title of biſhops, whoſe peculiar buſineſs it is to take care

of

of religion, and of those who instruct the people therein. These were searched and sought out thro' the whole nation, by the Prince and his wisest counsellors, among such of the priesthood, as were most deservedly distinguished by the sanctity of their lives, and the depth of their erudition, who were indeed the spiritual fathers of the clergy and the people.

That the other part of the parliament consisted of an assembly called the house of commons, who, were all principal gentlemen, *freely* picked and culled out by the people themselves, for their great abilities and love of their country, to represent the wisdom of the whole nation. And that these two bodies made up the most august assembly in Europe, to whom in conjunction with the Prince the whole legislature is committed.

I then descended to the courts of justice, over which the judges, those venerable sages and interpreters of the law, presided for determining the disputed rights and properties of men, as well as for the punishment of vice and protection of innocence. I mentioned the prudent management of our treasury, the valour and atchievements of our forces by sea and land. I computed the number of our people, by reckoning how many millions there might be of each religious sect, or political party among us. I did not omit even our sports and pastimes, or any other particular which I thought might redound to the honour of my country. And I finished all with a brief historical account of affairs and events in England for about an hundred years past.

This conversation was not ended under five audiences, each of several hours; and the King heard the whole with great attention, frequently taking notes of what I spoke, as well as memorandums of what questions he intended to ask me.

When I had put an end to these long discourses, his Majesty in a sixth audience consulting his notes proposed many doubts, queries, and objections upon every article. He asked what methods we used to cultivate the minds and bodies of our young nobility, and in what kind of business they commonly spent the first and teachable part of their lives. What course was taken to supply that assembly when any noble family became extinct. What

qualifications

qualifications were neceſſary in thoſe who are to be created new lords: whether the humour of the Prince, a ſum of money to a court lady or a prime miniſter, or a deſign of ſtrengthening a party oppoſite to the public intereſt, ever happened to be motives in thoſe advancements. What ſhare of knowledge theſe lords had in the laws of their country, and how they came by it, ſo as to enable them to decide the properties of their fellow-ſubjects in the laſt reſort. Whether they were always ſo free from avarice, partialities, or want, that a bribe or ſome other ſiniſter view could have no place among them. Whether thoſe holy lords I ſpoke of were always promoted to that rank upon account of their knowledge in religious matters, and the ſanctity of their lives; had never been compliers with the times while they were common prieſts, or ſlaviſh proſtitute chaplains to ſome nobleman, whoſe opinions they continued ſervilely to follow after they were admitted into that aſſembly.

He then deſired to know, what arts were practiſed in electing thoſe whom I called commoners: whether a ſtranger with a ſtrong purſe might not influence the vulgar voters to chuſe him before their own landlord, or the moſt conſiderable gentleman in the neighbourhood. How it came to paſs, that people were ſo violently bent upon getting into this aſſembly, which I allowed to be a great trouble and expence, often to the ruin of their families, without any ſalary or penſion: becauſe this appeared ſuch an exalted ſtrain of virtue and public ſpirit, that his Majeſty ſeemed to doubt it might poſſibly not be always ſincere: and he deſired to know, whether ſuch zealous gentlemen could have any views of refunding themſelves for the charges and trouble they were at, by ſacrificing the public good to the deſigns of a weak and vitious prince in conjunction with a corrupted miniſtry. He multiplied his queſtions, and ſifted me thoroughly upon every part of this head, propoſing numberleſs inquiries and objections, which I think it not prudent or convenient to repeat.

Upon what I ſaid in relation to our courts of juſtice, his Majeſty deſired to be ſatisfied in ſeveral points: and this I was the better able to do, having been formerly almoſt ruined by a long ſuit in chancery, which was decreed

creed for me with coſts. He aſked what time was uſually ſpent in determining between right and wrong, and what degree of expence. Whether advocates and orators had liberty to plead in cauſes manifeſtly known to be unjuſt, vexatious, or oppreſſive. Whether party in religion or politics were obſerved to be of any weight in the ſcale of juſtice. Whether thoſe pleading orators were perſons educated in the general knowledge of equity, or only in provincial, national, and other local cuſtoms. Whether they or their judges had any part in penning thoſe laws, which they aſſumed the liberty of interpreting and gloſſing upon at their pleaſure. Whether they had ever at different times pleaded for and againſt the ſame cauſe, and cited precedents to prove contrary opinions. Whether they were a rich or a poor corporation. Whether they received any pecuniary reward for pleading or delivering their opinions. And particularly, whether they were ever admitted as members in the lower ſenate.

He fell next upon the management of our treaſury; and ſaid, he thought my memory had failed me, becauſe I computed our taxes at about five or ſix millions a year, and when I came to mention the iſſues, he found they ſometimes amounted to more than double: for the notes he had taken were very particular in this point, becauſe he hoped, as he told me, that the knowledge of our conduct might be uſeful to him, and he could not be deceived in his calculations. But, if what I told him were true, he was ſtill at a loſs how a kingdom could run out of its eſtate like a private perſon. He aſked me who were our creditors; and where we found money to pay them. He wondered to hear me talk of ſuch chargeable and expenſive wars; that certainly we muſt be a quarrelſome people, or live among very bad neighbours, and that our generals muſt needs be richer than our kings. He aſked what buſineſs we had out of our own iſlands, unleſs upon the ſcore of trade or treaty, or to defend the coaſts with our fleet. Above all, he was amazed to hear me talk of a mercenary ſtanding army in the midſt of peace, and among a free people. He ſaid, if we were governed by our own conſent in the perſons of our repreſentatives, he could not imagine of whom we were afraid, or againſt whom we were to fight; and would hear my opinion, whether a

private

private man's houſe might not better be defended by himſelf, his children, and family, than by half a dozen raſcals picked up at a venture in the ſtreets for ſmall wages, who might get an hundred times more by cutting their throats.

He laughed at my odd kind of arithmetic (as he was pleaſed to call it) in reckoning the numbers of our people by a computation drawn from the ſeveral ſects among us in religion and politics. He ſaid, he knew no reaſon why thoſe, who entertain opinions prejudicial to the public, ſhould be obliged to change, or ſhould not be obliged to conceal them. And as it was tyranny in any government to require the firſt, ſo it was weakneſs not to enforce the ſecond: for a man may be allowed to keep poiſons in his cloſet, but not to vend them about for cordials.

He obſerved, that among the diverſions of our nobility and gentry I had mentioned gaming: he deſired to know at what age this entertainment was uſually taken up, and when it was laid down; how much of their time it employed: whether it ever went ſo high as to affect their fortunes: whether mean vicious people by their dexterity in that art might not arrive at great riches, and ſometimes keep our very nobles in dependence, as well as habituate them to vile companions, wholly take them from the improvement of their minds, and force them by the loſſes they received to learn and practiſe that infamous dexterity upon others.

He was perfectly aſtoniſhed with the hiſtorical account I gave him of our affairs during the laſt century, proteſting it was only a heap of conſpiracies, rebellions, murders, maſſacres, revolutions, baniſhments, the very worſt effects that avarice, faction, hypocriſy, perfidiouſneſs, cruelty, rage, madneſs, hatred, envy, luſt, malice, and ambition could produce.

His Majeſty in another audience was at the pains to recapitulate the ſum of all I had ſpoken; compared the queſtions he made with the anſwers I had given; then taking me into his hands, and ſtroaking me gently, delivered himſelf in theſe words, which I ſhall never forget, nor the manner he ſpoke them in: My little friend Grildrig, you have made a moſt admirable panegyric upon *your* country; you have clearly proved, that ignorance, idleneſs,

idleneſs and vice, are the proper ingredients for qualifying a legiſlator; that laws are beſt explained, interpreted, and applied by thoſe whoſe intereſt and abilities lie in perverting, confounding, and eluding them. I obſerve among you ſome lines of an inſtitution, which in its original might have been tolerable, but theſe half eraſed, and the reſt wholly blurred and blotted by corruptions. It doth not appear from all you have ſaid, how any one perfection is required toward the procurement of any one ſtation among you; much leſs that men are ennobled on account of their virtue, that prieſts are advanced for their piety or learning, ſoldiers for their conduct or valour, judges for their integrity, ſenators for the love of their country, or counſellors for their wiſdom. As for yourſelf, continued the King, who have ſpent the greateſt part of your life in travelling, I am well diſpoſed to hope you may hitherto have eſcaped many vices of your country. But by what I have gathered from your own relation, and the anſwers I have with much pains wringed and extorted from you, I cannot but conclude the bulk of your natives to be the moſt pernicious race of little odious vermin that nature ever ſuffered to crawl upon the ſurface of the earth.

CHAP. VII.*

The author's love of his country. He makes a propoſal of much advantage to the King, which is rejected. The King's great ignorance in politics. The learning of that country very imperfect and confined. The laws, and military affairs, and parties in the ſtate.

NOTHING but an extreme love of truth could have hindered me from concealing this part of my ſtory. It was in vain to diſcover my reſentments, which

* This chapter contains ſuch ſarcaſms on the ſtructure of the human body, as too plainly ſhew, that the author was unwilling to loſe any opportunity of debaſing and ridiculing his own ſpecies.——Here a reflection naturally occurs, which, without any ſuperſtition, leads taçitly to admire and confeſs the ways of Providence.

were always turned into ridicule; and I was forced to rest with patience, while my noble and moſt beloved country was ſo injuriouſly treated. I am as heartily ſorry as any of my readers can poſſibly be, that ſuch an occaſion was given: but this Prince happened to be ſo curious and inquiſitive upon every particular, that it could not conſiſt either with gratitude or good manners to refuſe giving him what ſatisfaction I was able. Yet thus much I may be allowed to ſay in my own vindication, that I artfully eluded many of his queſtions, and gave to every point a more favourable turn by many degrees than the ſtrictneſs of truth would allow. For I have always born that laudable partiality to my own country, which Dionyſius Halicarnaſſenſis with ſo much juſtice recommends to an hiſtorian: I would hide the frailties and deformities of my political mother, and place her virtues and beauties in the moſt advantageous light. This was my ſincere endeavour in thoſe many diſcourſes I had with that Monarch, altho' it unfortunately failed of ſucceſs.

But great allowances ſhould be given to a King, who lives wholly ſecluded from the reſt of the world, and muſt therefore be altogether unacquainted with the manners and cuſtoms that moſt prevail in other nations: the want of which knowledge will ever produce many *prejudices*, and a certain *narrowneſs of thinking*, from which we and the politer countries of Europe are wholly exempted. And it would be hard indeed, if ſo remote a Prince's notions of virtue and vice were to be offered as a ſtandard for all mankind.

To confirm what I have now ſaid, and further to ſhew the miſerable effects of a *confined education*, I ſhall here inſert a paſſage which will hardly obtain belief. In hopes to ingratiate myſelf farther into his Majeſty's favour, I told him of an invention diſcovered between three and four hundred years ago to make a certain powder, into an heap of which the ſmalleſt ſpark of fire falling would kindle the whole in a moment, altho' it were as big a

Providence. For this great genius, this mighty wit, who ſeemed *to ſcoff* and ſcorn at all mankind, lived not only to be an example *to punish* his own pride, and to terrify ours, but underwent ſome *of the* greateſt miſeries to which human nature is liable. Over *See the* author's life prefixed to vol. i. and vol. iv. p. 343—3

a mountain, and make it all fly up in the air together, with a noiſe and agitation greater than thunder. That a proper quantity of this powder rammed into an hollow tube of braſs or iron, according to its bigneſs, would drive a ball of iron or lead with ſuch violence and ſpeed, as nothing was able to ſuſtain its force. That the largeſt balls thus diſcharged would not only deſtroy whole ranks of an army at once, but batter the ſtrongeſt walls to the ground, ſink down ſhips, with a thouſand men in each, to the bottom of the ſea; and, when linked together by a chain, would cut thro' maſts and rigging, divide hundreds of bodies in the middle, and lay all waſte before them. That we often put this powder into large hollow balls of iron, and diſcharged them by an engine into ſome city we were beſieging, which would rip up the pavements, tear the houſes to pieces, burſt and throw ſplinters on every ſide, daſhing out the brains of all who came near. That I knew the ingredients very well, which were cheap and common; I underſtood the manner of compounding them, and could direct his workmen how to make thoſe tubes of a ſize proportionable to all other things in his Majeſty's kingdom, and the largeſt need not be above an hundred feet long; twenty or thirty of which tubes, charged with the proper quantity of powder and balls, would batter down the walls of the ſtrongeſt town in his dominions in a few hours, or deſtroy the whole metropolis, if ever it ſhould pretend to diſpute his abſolute commands. This I humbly offered to his Majeſty, as a ſmall tribute of acknowledgment in return of ſo many marks that I had received of his royal favour and protection.

The King was ſtruck with horror at the deſcription I had given of thoſe terrible engines, and the propoſal I had made. He was amazed, how ſo impotent and groveling an inſect as I (theſe were his expreſſions) could entertain ſuch inhuman ideas, and in ſo familiar a manner, as to appear wholly unmoved at all the ſcenes of blood and deſolation, which I had painted as the common effects of thoſe deſtructive machines, whereof he ſaid ſome evil genius, enemy to mankind, muſt have been the firſt contriver. As for himſelf, he proteſted, that altho' few things delighted him ſo much as new diſcoveries in art or in nature, yet he

he would rather loſe half his kingdom, than be privy to ſuch a ſecret, which he commanded me, as I valued my life, never to mention any more.

A ſtrange effect of *narrow principles* and *ſhort views!* that a Prince poſſeſſed of every quality which procures veneration, love, and eſteem; of ſtrong parts, great wiſdom, and profound learning, endowed with admirable talents for government, and almoſt adored by his ſubjects, ſhould from a *nice unneceſſary ſcruple*, whereof in Europe we can have no conception, let ſlip an opportunity put into his hands, that would have made him abſolute maſter of the lives, the liberties, and the fortunes of his people. Neither do I ſay this with the leaſt intention to detract from the many virtues of that excellent King, whoſe character I am ſenſible will on this account be very much leſſened in the opinion of an Engliſh reader: but I take this defect among them to have riſen from their ignorance by not having hitherto reduced politics into a ſcience, as the more acute wits of Europe have done. For I remember very well in a diſcourſe one day with the King, when I happened to ſay there were ſeveral thouſand books among us written upon the *art of government*, it gave him (directly contrary to my intention) a very mean opinion of our underſtandings. He profeſſed both to abominate and deſpiſe all *myſtery*, *refinement*, and *intrigue*, either in a prince or a miniſter. He could not tell what I meant by *ſecrets of ſtate*, where an enemy or ſome rival nation were not in the caſe. He confined the knowledge of governing within very *narrow bounds*, to common ſenſe and reaſon, to juſtice and lenity, to the ſpeedy determination of civil and criminal cauſes; with ſome other obvious topics, which are not worth conſidering. And he gave it for his opinion, that whoever could make two ears of corn, or two blades of graſs, to grow upon a ſpot of ground where only one grew before, would deſerve better of mankind, and do more eſſential ſervice to his country, than the whole race of politicians put together.

THE learning of this people is very defective, conſiſting only in morality, hiſtory, poetry, and mathematics, where*in they* muſt be allowed to excel. But the laſt of theſe is *wholly* applied to what may be uſeful in life, to the improvement of agriculture, and all mechanical arts; ſo that among

among us it would be little eſteemed. And as to ideas, entities, abſtractions, and tranſcendentals, I could never drive the leaſt conception into their heads.

No law of that country muſt exceed in words the number of letters in their alphabet, which conſiſts only in two and twenty. But indeed few of them extend even to that length. They are expreſſed in the moſt plain and ſimple terms, wherein thoſe people are not mercurial enough to diſcover above one interpretation: and to write a comment upon any law is a capital crime. As to the deciſion of civil cauſes, or proceedings againſt criminals, their precedents are ſo few, that they have little reaſon to boaſt of any extraordinary ſkill in either.

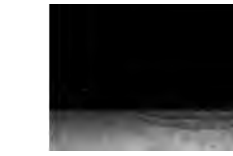
They have had the art of printing as well as the Chineſe, time out of mind: but their libraries are not very large; for that of the King, which is reckoned the largeſt, doth not amount to above a thouſand volumes placed in a gallery of twelve hundred feet long, from whence I had liberty to borrow what books I pleaſed. The Queen's joiner had contrived in one of Glumdalclitch's rooms a kind of wooden machine five and twenty feet high, formed like a ſtanding ladder, the ſteps were each fifty feet long: it was indeed a moveable pair of ſtairs, the loweſt end placed at ten feet diſtance from the wall of the chamber. The book I had a mind to read was put up leaning againſt the wall: I firſt mounted to the upper ſtep of the ladder, and turning my face towards the book, began at the top of the page, and ſo walking to the right and left about eight or ten paces, according to the length of the lines, till I had gotten a little below the level of mine eyes, and then deſcending gradually till I came to the bottom: after which I mounted again, and began the other page in the ſame manner, and ſo turned over the leaf, which I could eaſily do with both my hands, for it was as thick and ſtiff as a paſte-board, and in the largeſt folio's not above eighteen or twenty feet long.

Their ſtyle is clear, maſculine, and ſmooth, but not florid; for they avoid nothing more than multiplying unneceſſary words, or uſing various expreſſions. I have peruſed many of their books, eſpecially thoſe in hiſtory and morality. Among the reſt, I was much diverted with a little old treatiſe, which always lay in Glumdalclitch's

bed-chamber, and belonged to her governeſs, a grave elderly gentlewoman, who dealt in writings of morality and devotion. The book treats of the weakneſs of human kind, and is in little eſteem, except among the women and the vulgar. However, I was curious to ſee what an author of that country could ſay upon ſuch a ſubject. This writer went thro' all the uſual topics of European moraliſts, ſhewing how diminutive, contemptible, and helpleſs an animal man was in his own nature; how unable to defend himſelf from inclemencies of the air, or the fury of wild beaſts; how much he was excelled by one creature in ſtrength, by another in ſpeed, by a third in foreſight, by a fourth in induſtry. He added, that nature was degenerated in theſe latter declining ages of the world, and could now produce only ſmall abortive births, in compariſon of thoſe in ancient times. He ſaid, it was very reaſonable to think, not only that the ſpecies of men were originally much larger, but alſo that there muſt have been giants in former ages; which, as it is aſſerted by hiſtory and tradition, ſo it hath been confirmed by huge bones and ſkulls caſually dug up in ſeveral parts of the kingdom, far exceeding the common dwindled race of man in our days. He argued, that the very laws of nature abſolutely required we ſhould have been made in the beginning of a ſize more large and robuſt, not ſo liable to deſtruction from every little accident of a tile falling from an houſe, or a ſtone caſt from the hand of a boy, or being drowned in a little brook. From this way of reaſoning, the author drew ſeveral moral applications uſeful in the conduct of life, but needleſs here to repeat. For my own part, I could not avoid reflecting how univerſally this talent was ſpread, of drawing lectures in morality, or indeed rather matter of diſcontent and repining, from the quarrels we raiſe with nature. And I believe, upon a ſtrict inquiry, thoſe quarrels might be ſhewn as ill-grounded among us, as they are among that people *.

As

* The author's zeal to juſtify Providence has before been remarked; and theſe quarrels with Nature, or, in other words, with God, could not have been more forcibly reproved, than by ſhewing, that the complaints upon which they are founded, would be equally ſpecious among beings of ſuch aſtoniſhing ſuperiority of ſtature and ſtrength. *Hawkeſ.*



As to their military affairs, they boaſt that the King's army conſiſts of an hundred and ſeventy ſix thouſand foot, and thirty two thouſand horſe; if that may be called an army, which is made up of tradeſmen in the ſeveral cities, and farmers in the country, whoſe commanders are only the nobility and gentry without pay or reward. They are indeed perfect enough in their exerciſes, and under very good diſcipline, wherein I ſaw no great merit; for how ſhould it be otherwiſe, where every farmer is under the command of his own landlord, and every citizen under that of the principal men in his own city, choſen after the manner of Venice by *bailot?*

I have often ſeen the militia of Lorbrulgrud drawn out to exerciſe in a great field near the city of twenty miles ſquare. They were in all not above twenty five thouſand foot, and ſix thouſand horſe: but it was impoſſible for me to compute their number, conſidering the ſpace of ground they took up. A cavalier, mounted on a large ſteed, might be about ninety feet high. I have ſeen this whole body of horſe, upon a word of command, draw their ſwords at once, and brandiſh them in the air. Imagination can figure nothing ſo grand, ſo ſurpriſing, and ſo aſtoniſhing! It looked as if ten thouſand flaſhes of lightning were darting at the ſame time from every quarter of the ſky.

I was curious to know how this Prince, to whoſe dominions there is no acceſs from any other country, came to think of armies, or to teach his people the practice of military diſcipline. But I was ſoon informed both by converſation and reading their hiſtories: for in the courſe of many ages they have been troubled with the ſame diſeaſe to which the whole race of mankind is ſubject; the nobility often contending for power, the people for liberty, and the King for abſolute dominion. All which, however happily tempered by the laws of that kingdom, have been ſometimes violated by each of the three parties, and have more than once occaſioned civil wars, the laſt whereof was happily put an end to by this Prince's grandfather in a general compoſition; and the militia, then ſettled with common conſent, hath been ever ſince kept in the ſtricteſt duty.

CHAP.

CHAP. VIII.

*The King and Queen make a progreſs to the frontiers. The author attends them. The manner in which he leaves the country very particularly related. He returns to England *.*

I Had always a ſtrong impulſe, that I ſhould ſome time recover my liberty, tho' it was impoſſible to conjecture by what means, or to form any project with the leaſt hope of ſucceeding. The ſhip in which I ſailed was the firſt ever known to be driven within ſight of that coaſt, and the King had given ſtrict orders, that if at any time another appeared, it ſhould be taken aſhore, and with all its crew and paſſengers brought in a tumbril to Lorbrulgrud. He was ſtrongly bent to get me a woman of my own ſize, by whom I might propagate the breed: but I think I ſhould rather have died, than undergone the diſgrace of leaving a poſterity to be kept in cages like tame Canary birds, and perhaps in time ſold about the kingdom to perſons of quality for curioſities. I was indeed treated with much kindneſs: I was the favourite of a great King and Queen, and the delight of the whole court; but it was upon ſuch a foot, as ill became the dignity of human kind. I could never forget thoſe domeſtic pledges I had left behind me. I wanted to be among people with whom I could converſe upon even terms, and walk about the ſtreets and fields, without being afraid of being trod to death like a frog, or a young puppy. But my deliverance came ſooner than I expected, and in a manner not very common: the whole ſtory and circumſtances of which I ſhall faithfully relate.

I had now been two years in this country; and about the beginning of the third Glumdalclitch and I attended the King and Queen in a progreſs to the *ſouth* coaſt of the kingdom. I was carried as uſual in my travelling-box, which, as I have already deſcribed, was a very convenient cloſet of twelve feet wide. And I had ordered a hammock to be fixed by ſilken ropes from the four corners at the top, to break the jolts, when a ſervant carried me

* Gulliver's eſcape from Brobdingnag, is humorous, ſatirical, and decent. *Orrery.*

me before him on horſeback, as I ſometimes deſired, and would often ſleep in my hammock while we were upon the road. On the roof of my cloſet, not directly over the middle of the hammock, I ordered the joiner to cut out a hole of a foot ſquare, to give me air in hot weather, as I ſlept; which hole I ſhut at pleaſure with a board, that drew backwards and forwards through a groove.

When we came to our journey's end, the King thought proper to paſs a few days at a palace he hath near Flanflaſnic, a city within eighteen Engliſh miles of the ſea-ſide. Glumdalclitch and I were much fatigued: I had gotten a ſmall cold, but the poor girl was ſo ill as to be confined to her chamber. I longed to ſee the ocean, which muſt be the only ſcene of my eſcape, if ever it ſhould happen. I pretended to be worſe than I really was, and deſired leave to take the freſh air of the ſea with a page, whom I was very fond of, and who had ſometimes been truſted with me. I ſhall never forget with what unwillingneſs Glumdalclitch conſented, nor the ſtrict charge ſhe gave the page to be careful of me, burſting at the ſame time into a flood of tears, as if ſhe had ſome foreboding of what was to happen. The boy took me out in my box about half an hour's walk from the palace towards the rocks on the ſea-ſhore. I ordered him to ſet me down, and lifting up one of my ſaſhes caſt many a wiſtful melancholy look towards the ſea. I found myſelf not very well, and told the page that I had a mind to take a nap in my hammock, which I hoped would do me good. I got in, and the boy ſhut the window cloſe down to keep out the cold. I ſoon fell aſleep, and all I can conjecture is, that while I ſlept, the page, thinking no danger could happen, went among the rocks to look for birds eggs, having before obſerved him from my window ſearching about, and picking up one or two in the clefts. Be that as it will, I found myſelf ſuddenly awaked with a violent pull upon the ring, which was faſtened at the top of my box for the conveniency of carriage. I felt my box raiſed very high in the air, and then born forward with prodigious ſpeed. The firſt jolt had like to have ſhaken me out of my hammock, but afterwards the motion was eaſy enough. I called out ſeveral times, as loud as I could raiſe my voice, but all to no purpoſe. I looked towards

my windows, and could ſee nothing but the clouds and ſky. I heard a noiſe juſt over my head like the clapping of wings, and then began to perceive the woeful condition I was in, that ſome eagle had got the ring of my box in his beak, with an intent to let it fall on a rock like a tortoiſe in a ſhell, and then pick out my body, and devour it: for the ſagacity and ſmell of this bird enabled him to diſcover his quarry at a great diſtance, tho' better concealed than I could be within a two-inch board.

In a little time I obſerved the noiſe and flutter of wings to increaſe very faſt, and my box was toſſed up and down like a ſign in a windy day. I heard ſeveral bangs or buffets, as I thought, given to the eagle (for ſuch I am certain it muſt have been that held the ring of my box in his beak) and then all on a ſudden felt myſelf falling perpendicularly down for above a minute, but with ſuch incredible ſwiftneſs that I almoſt loſt my breath. My fall was ſtopped by a terrible ſquaſh, that ſounded louder to my ears than the cataract of Niagara *; after which I was quite in the dark for another minute, and then my box began to riſe ſo high that I could ſee light from the tops of the windows. I now perceived that I was fallen into the ſea. My box, by the weight of my body, the goods that were in, and the broad plates of iron fixed for ſtrength at the four corners of the top and bottom, floated about five feet depth in water. I did then, and do now ſuppoſe, that the eagle which flew away with my box was purſued by two or three others, and forced to let me drop while he defended himſelf againſt the reſt, who hoped to ſhare in the prey. The plates of iron faſtened at the bottom of the box (for thoſe were the ſtrongeſt) preſerved the balance while it fell, and hindered it from being broken on the ſurface of the water. Every joint of it was well grooved; and the door did not move on hinges, but up and down like a ſaſh, which kept my cloſet ſo tight that very

* Niagara is a ſettlement of the French in North-America, and the cataract is produced by the fall of a conflux of water (formed of the four vaſt lakes of Canada) from a rocky precipice, the perpendicular height of which is one hundred and thirty ſeven feet; and it is ſaid to have been heard fifteen leagues. *Hawkeſ.*

very little water came in. I got with much difficulty out of my hammock, having firſt ventured to draw back the ſlip-board on the roof already mentioned, contrived on purpoſe to let in the air, for want of which I found myſelf almoſt ſtifled.

How often did I then wiſh myſelf with my dear Glumdalclitch, from whom one ſingle hour had ſo far divided me! And I may ſay with truth, that in the midſt of my own misfortunes I could not forbear lamenting my poor nurſe, the grief ſhe would ſuffer for my loſs, the diſpleaſure of the Queen, and the ruin of her fortune. Perhaps many travellers have not been under greater difficulties and diſtreſs than I was at this juncture, expecting every moment to ſee my box daſhed to pieces, or at leaſt overſet by the firſt violent blaſt or riſing wave. A breach in one ſingle pane of glaſs would have been immediate death: nor could any thing have preſerved the windows but the ſtrong lattice-wires placed on the outſide againſt accidents in travelling. I ſaw the water ooze in at ſeveral crannies, altho' the leaks were not conſiderable, and I endeavoured to ſtop them as well as I could. I was not able to lift up the roof of my cloſet, which otherwiſe I certainly ſhould have done, and ſat on the top of it, where I might at leaſt preſerve myſelf ſome hours longer than by being ſhut up (as I may call it) in the hold. Or if I eſcaped theſe dangers for a day or two, what could I expect but a miſerable death of cold and hunger? I was four hours under theſe circumſtances, expecting, and indeed wiſhing every moment to be my laſt.

I have already told the reader, that there were two ſtrong ſtaples fixed upon that ſide of my box which had no window, and into which the ſervant who uſed to carry me on horſeback would put a leathern belt, and buckle it about his waiſt. Being in this diſconſolate ſtate, I heard, or at leaſt thought I heard ſome kind of grating noiſe on that ſide of my box where the ſtaples were fixed, and ſoon after I began to fancy, that the box was pulled or towed along in the ſea; for I now and then felt a ſort of tugging, which made the waves riſe near the tops of my windows, leaving me almoſt in the dark. This gave me ſome faint hopes of relief; altho' I was not able to imagine how it could be brought about. I ventured to

unſcrew

unſcrew one of my chairs, which were always faſtened to the floor, and having made a hard ſhift to ſcrew it down again directly under the ſlipping-board that I had lately opened, I mounted on the chair, and putting my mouth as near as I could to the hole, I called for help in a loud voice, and in all the languages I underſtood. I then faſtened my handkerchief to a ſtick I uſually carried, and thruſting it up the hole waved it ſeveral times in the air, that if any boat or ſhip were near, the ſeamen might conjecture ſome unhappy mortal to be ſhut up in the box.

I found no effect from all I could do, but plainly perceived my cloſet to be moved along; and in the ſpace of an hour, or better, that ſide of the box where the ſtaples were, and had no window, ſtruck againſt ſomething that was hard. I apprehended it to be a rock, and found myſelf toſſed more than ever. I plainly heard a noiſe upon the cover of my cloſet like that of a cable, and the grating of it as it paſſed thro' the ring. I then found myſelf hoiſted up by degrees at leaſt three feet higher than I was before. Whereupon I again thruſt up my ſtick and handkerchief, calling for help till I was almoſt hoarſe. In return to which, I heard a great ſhout repeated three times, giving me ſuch tranſports of joy as are not to be conceived but by thoſe who feel them. I now heard a trampling over my head, and ſomebody calling thro' the hole with a loud voice in the Engliſh tongue, If there be any body below, let them ſpeak. I anſwered, I was an Engliſhman, drawn by ill fortune into the greateſt calamity that ever any creature underwent, and begged by all that was moving to be delivered out of the dungeon I was in. The voice replied, I was ſafe, for my box was faſtened to their ſhip; and the carpenter ſhould immediately come and ſaw a hole in the cover large enough to pull me out. I anſwered, that was needleſs, and would take up too much time, for there was no more to be done, but let one of the crew put his finger into the ring, and take the box out of the ſea into the ſhip, and ſo into the Captain's cabbin*. Some of them upon hearing me talk ſo wildly

* There are ſeveral little incidents which ſhew the author to have had a deep knowledge of human nature; and I think this is one. Altho' the principal advantages enumerated by Gulliver

wildly thought I was mad: others laughed; for indeed it never came into my head that I was now got among people of my own ſtature and ſtrength. The carpenter came, and in a few minutes ſawed a paſſage about four feet ſquare, then let down a ſmall ladder, upon which I mounted, and from thence was taken into the ſhip in a very weak condition.

THE ſailors were all in amazement, and aſked me a thouſand queſtions, which I had no inclination to anſwer. I was equally confounded at the ſight of ſo many pigmies, for ſuch I took them to be, after having ſo long accuſtomed mine eyes to the monſtrous objects I had left. But the Captain, Mr. Thomas Wilcocks, an honeſt worthy Shropſhireman, obſerving I was ready to faint, took me into his cabbin, gave me a cordial to comfort me, and made me *turn in* upon his own bed, adviſing me to take a little reſt, of which I had great need. Before I went to ſleep, I gave him to underſtand that I had ſome valuable furniture in my box too good to be loſt; a fine hammock, an handſome field-bed, two chairs, a table and a cabinet. That my cloſet was hung on all ſides, or rather quilted, with ſilk and cotton: that if he would let one of the crew bring my cloſet into his cabbin, I would open it there before him and ſhew him my goods. The Captain hearing me utter theſe abſurdities concluded I was raving: however (I ſuppoſe to pacify me) he promiſed to give order as I deſired, and going upon deck ſent ſome of his men down into my cloſet, from whence (as I afterwards found) they drew up all my goods, and ſtripped off the quilting; but the chairs, cabinet, and bedſtead, being ſcrewed to the floor, were much damaged by the ignorance of the ſeamen, who tore them up by force. Then they knocked off ſome of the boards for the uſe of the ſhip; and when they had got all they had a mind for let the hull drop into the ſea, which by reaſon of many breaches made in the bottom and ſides ſunk to rights. And in-

Gulliver in the beginning of this chapter, of mingling again among his countrymen, depended on their being of the ſame ſize with himſelf; yet this is forgotten, in his ardour to be delivered: and he is afterwards betrayed into the ſame abſurdity, by his zeal to preſerve his furniture. *Hawkeſ.*

deed I was glad not to have been a ſpectator of the havock they made; becauſe I am confident it would have ſenſibly touched me by bringing former paſſages into my mind, which I had rather forget.

I ſlept ſome hours, but perpetually diſturbed with dreams of the place I had left, and the dangers I had eſcaped. However, upon waking I found myſelf much recovered. It was now about eight o'clock at night, and the Captain ordered ſupper immediately, thinking I had already faſted too long. He entertained me with great kindneſs, obſerving me not to look wildly, or talk inconſiſtently; and, when we were left alone, deſired I would give him a relation of my travels, and by what accident I came to be ſet adrift in that monſtrous wooden cheſt. He ſaid, that about twelve o'clock at noon, as he was looking thro' his glaſs, he ſpied it at a diſtance, and thought it was a ſail, which he had a mind to make, being not much out of his courſe, in hopes of buying ſome biſket his own beginning to fall ſhort. That upon coming nearer, and finding his error, he ſent out his long-boat to diſcover what I was; that his men came back in a fright, ſwearing they had ſeen a ſwimming houſe. That he laughed at their folly, and went himſelf in the boat, ordering his men to take a ſtrong cable along with them. That the weather being calm, he rowed round me ſeveral times, obſerved my windows, and the wire-lattices that defended them. That he diſcovered two ſtaples upon one ſide, which was all of boards without any paſſage for light. He then commanded his men to row up to that ſide, and faſtening a cable to one of the ſtaples, ordered them to tow my cheſt (as they called it) towards the ſhip. When it was there, he gave directions to faſten another cable to the ring fixed in the cover, and to raiſe up my cheſt with pullies, which all the ſailors were not able to do above two or three feet. He ſaid, they ſaw my ſtick and handkerchief thruſt out of the hole, and concluded that ſome unhappy man muſt be ſhut up in the cavity. I aſked, whether he or the crew had ſeen any prodigious birds in the air about the time he firſt diſcovered me? to which he anſwered, that, diſcourſing this *matter with* the ſailors while I was aſleep, one of them *ſaid*, he had *obſerved* three eagles flying towards the north,

north, but remarked nothing of their being larger than the uſual ſize, which I ſuppoſe muſt be imputed to the great height they were at; and he could not gueſs the reaſon of my queſtion. I then aſked the Captain, how far he reckoned we might be from land? he ſaid, by the beſt computation he could make, we were at leaſt an hundred leagues. I aſſured him that he muſt be miſtaken by almoſt half; for I had not left the country from whence I came above two hours before I dropt into the ſea. Whereupon he began again to think that my brain was diſturbed, of which he gave me a hint, and adviſed me to go to bed in a cabbin he had provided. I aſſured him I was well refreſhed with his good entertainment and company, and as much in my ſenſes as ever I was in my life. He then grew ſerious, and deſired to aſk me freely, whether I were not troubled in mind by the conſciouſneſs of ſome enormous crime, for which I was puniſhed at the command of ſome prince by expoſing me in that cheſt, as great criminals in other countries have been forced to ſea in a leaky veſſel without proviſions: for altho' he ſhould be ſorry to have taken ſo ill a man into his ſhip, yet he would engage his word to ſet me ſafe a-ſhore in the firſt port where we arrived. He added, that his ſuſpicions were much increaſed by ſome very abſurd ſpeeches I had delivered at firſt to the ſailors, and afterwards to himſelf, in relation to my cloſet or cheſt, as well as by my odd looks and behaviour while I was at ſupper.

I begged his patience to hear me tell my ſtory, which I faithfully did from the laſt time I left England to the moment he firſt diſcovered me. And as truth always forceth its way into rational minds, ſo this honeſt worthy gentleman, who had ſome tincture of learning, and very good ſenſe, was immediately convinced of my candour and veracity. But, farther to confirm all I had ſaid, I entreated him to give order that my cabinet ſhould be brought, of which I had the key in my pocket (for he had already informed me how the ſeamen diſpoſed of my cloſet.) I opened it in his own preſence, and ſhewed him the ſmall collection of rarities I made in the country from whence I had been ſo ſtrangely delivered. There was the comb I had contrived out of the ſtumps of the

King's beard, and another of the ſame materials, but fixed into a paring of her Majeſty's thumb-nail which ſerved for the back. There was a collection of needles and pins from a foot to half a yard long; four waſp-ſtings, like joiners tacks; ſome combings of the Queen's hair; a gold ring which one day ſhe made me a preſent of in a moſt obliging manner, taking it from her little finger, and throwing it over my head like a collar. I deſired the Captain would pleaſe to accept this ring in return of his civilities; which he abſolutely refuſed. I ſhewed him a corn that I had cut off with my own hand from a maid of honour's toe; it was about the bigneſs of a Kentiſh pippin, and grown ſo hard, that, when I returned to England, I got it hollowed into a cup, and ſet in ſilver. Laſtly, I deſired him to ſee the breeches I had then on, which were made of a mouſe's ſkin.

I could force nothing on him but a footman's tooth, which I obſerved him to examine with great curioſity, and found he had a fancy for it. He received it with abundance of thanks, more than ſuch a trifle could deſerve. It was drawn by an unſkilful ſurgeon in a miſtake from one of Glumdalclitch's men, who was afflicted with the tooth-ack, but it was as ſound as any in his head. I got it cleaned, and put it into my cabinet. It was about a foot long, and four inches in diameter.

The Captain was very well ſatisfied with this plain relation I had given him, and ſaid, he hoped, when we returned to England, I would oblige the world, by putting it on paper, and making it public. My anſwer was, that I thought we were already over-ſtocked with books of travels: that nothing could now paſs which was not extraordinary; wherein I doubted ſome authors leſs conſulted truth, than their own vanity, or intereſt, or the diverſion of ignorant readers: that my ſtory could contain little beſides common events, without thoſe ornamental deſcriptions of ſtrange plants, trees, birds, and other animals; or of the barbarous cuſtoms and idolatry of ſavage people, with which moſt writers abound. However, I thanked him for his good opinion, and promiſed to take the matter into my thoughts.

He ſaid, he wondered at one thing very much, which was, to hear me ſpeak ſo loud, aſking me whether the King

King or Queen of that country were thick of hearing. I told him, it was what I had been uſed to for above two years paſt; and that I admired as much at the voices of him and his men, who ſeemed to me only to whiſper, and yet I could hear them well enough. But, when I ſpoke in that country, it was like a man talking in the ſtreet to another looking out from the top of a ſteeple, unleſs when I was placed on a table, or held in any perſon's hand. I told him, I had likewiſe obſerved another thing, that when I firſt got into the ſhip, and the ſailors ſtood all about me, I thought they were the moſt little contemptible creatures I had ever beheld. For indeed, while I was in that Prince's country, I could never endure to look in a glaſs, after mine eyes had been accuſtomed to ſuch prodigious objects; becauſe the compariſon gave me ſo deſpicable a conceit of myſelf. The Captain ſaid, that while we were at ſupper he obſerved me to look at every thing with a ſort of wonder, and that I often ſeemed hardly able to contain my laughter, which he knew not well how to take, but imputed it to ſome diſorder in my brain. I anſwered, it was very true; and I wondered how I could forbear, when I ſaw his diſhes of the ſize of a ſilver three-pence, a leg of pork hardly a mouthful, a cup not ſo big as a nut-ſhell; and ſo I went on, deſcribing the reſt of his houſhold-ſtuff and proviſions after the ſame manner. For altho' the Queen had ordered a little equipage of all things neceſſary for me, while I was in her ſervice, yet my ideas were wholly taken up with what I ſaw on every ſide of me, and I winked at my own littleneſs, as people do at their own faults. The Captain underſtood my raillery very well, and merrily replied with the old Engliſh proverb, that he doubted mine eyes were bigger than my belly, for he did not obſerve my ſtomach ſo good altho' I had faſted all day; and, continuing in his mirth, proteſted he would have gladly given an hundred pounds to have ſeen my cloſet in the eagle's bill, and afterwards in its fall from ſo great a height into the ſea; which would certainly have been a moſt aſtoniſhing object, worthy to have the deſcription of it tranſmitted to future ages: and the compariſon of *Phaeton was ſo obvious, that* he could not forbear applying *it, altho' I did not* much admire the conceit.

THE Captain, having been at Tonquin, was in his return to England driven north-eaſtward to the latitude of 44 degrees, and of longitude 143. But meeting a trade-wind two days after I came on board him, we ſailed ſouthward a long time, and coaſting New-Holland, kept our courſe weſt-ſouth-weſt, and then ſouth-ſouth-weſt, till we doubled the Cape of Good-Hope. Our voyage was very proſperous, but I ſhall not trouble the reader with a journal of it. The Captain called in at one or two ports, and ſent in his long-boat for proviſions and freſh water, but I never went out of the ſhip till we came into the Downs, which was on the third day of June 1706, about nine months after my eſcape. I offered to leave my goods in ſecurity for payment of my freight; but the Captain proteſted he would not receive one farthing. We took a kind leave of each other, and I made him promiſe he would come to ſee me at my houſe in Redriff. I hired a horſe and guide for five ſhillings, which I borrowed of the Captain.

As I was on the road, obſerving the littleneſs of the houſes, the trees, the cattle, and the people, I began to think myſelf in Lilliput. I was afraid of trampling on every traveller I met, and often called aloud to have them ſtand out of the way, ſo that I had like to have gotten one or two broken heads for my impertinence.

WHEN I came to my own houſe, for which I was forced to inquire, one of the ſervants opening the door, I bent down to go in (like a gooſe under a gate) for fear of ſtriking my head. My wife ran out to embrace me, but I ſtooped lower than her knees, thinking ſhe could otherwiſe never be able to reach my mouth. My daughter kneeled to aſk me bleſſing, but I could not ſee her till ſhe aroſe, having been ſo long uſed to ſtand with my head and eyes erect to above ſixty feet; and then I went to take her up with one hand by the waiſt. I looked down upon the ſervants, and one or two friends who were in the houſe, as if they had been pigmies, and I a giant. I told my wife ſhe had been too thrifty, for I found ſhe had ſtarved herſelf and her daughter to nothing. In ſhort, I behaved myſelf ſo unaccountably, that they were all of the Captain's opinion when he firſt ſaw me, and concluded

cluded I had loſt my wits. This I mention as an inſtance of the great power of habit and prejudice.

In a little time, I and my family and friends came to a right underſtanding: but my wife proteſted I ſhould never go to ſea any more; altho' my evil deſtiny ſo ordered, that ſhe had not power to hinder me, as the reader may know hereafter. In the mean time, I here conclude the ſecond part of my unfortunate voyages*.

A

* From the whole of theſe two voyages to Lilliput and Brobdingnag, ariſes one general remark, which, however obvious, has been overlooked by thoſe who conſider them as little more than the ſport of a wanton imagination. When human actions are aſcribed to pigmies and giants, there are few that do not excite either contempt, diſguſt, or horror. To aſcribe them therefore to ſuch beings, was perhaps the moſt probable method of engaging the mind to examine them with attention, and judge of them with impartiality, by ſuſpending the faſcination of habit, and exhibiting familiar objects in a new light. The uſe of the fable then is not leſs apparent, than important and extenſive; and that this uſe was intended by the author, can be doubted only by thoſe who are diſpoſed to affirm, that order and regularity are the effects of chance. *Hawkeſ.*

Upon reading over the two firſt parts of theſe travels, I think that I can diſcover a very great reſemblance between certain paſſages in Gulliver's voyage to Lilliput, and the voyage of Cyrano de Bergerac to the ſun and moon.——Cyrano de Bergerac is a French author of a ſingular character, who had a very peculiar turn of wit and humour, in many reſpects reſembling that of Swift. He wanted the advantages of learning, and a regular education. His imagination was leſs guarded and correct, but more agreeably extravagant. He has introduced into his philoſophical romance the ſyſtem of Deſcartes (which was then much admired) intermixed with ſeveral fine ſtrokes of juſt ſatire on the wild and immechanical inquiries of the philoſophers and aſtronomers of that age; and in many parts he has evidently directed the plan which the Dean of St Patrick's has purſued. *Orrery.*

A

VOYAGE

TO

LAPUTA, BALNIBARBI, LUGGNAGG, GLUBBDUBDRIB, AND JAPAN*.

CHAP. I.

The author ſets out on his third voyage, is taken by pyrats. The malice of a Dutchman. *His arrival at an iſland. He is received into* Laputa.

I Had not been at home above ten days, when Captain William Robinſon a Corniſh man, Commander of the Hope-well, a ſtout ſhip of three hundred tuns, came to my houſe: I had formerly been ſurgeon of another ſhip, where he was maſter and a fourth part owner, in

* The third part is in general written againſt chymiſts, mathematicians, mechanics, and projectors of all kinds.

Swift was little acquainted with mathematical knowledge, and was prejudiced againſt it, by obſerving the ſtrange effects it produced in thoſe who applied themſelves entirely to that ſcience. No part of human literature has given greater ſtrength to the mind, or has produced greater benefits to mankind, than the ſeveral branches of learning that may paſs under the general denomination of mathematics. But the abuſes of this ſtudy, the idle, *thin*, immechanical refinements of it, are juſt ſubjects of ſatire. *The* real uſe of knowledge is to invigorate, not to enervate the *faculties of* reaſon. Learning degenerates into a ſpecies of madneſs, when it is not ſuperior to what it poſſeſſeth. The ſcienti-

por

in a voyage to the Levant; he had always treated me more like a brother than an inferior officer, and hearing of my arrival made me a viſit, as I apprehended, only out of friendſhip; for nothing paſſed more than what is uſual

powers are moſt evident, when they are capable of exerting themſelves in the ſocial duties of life; when they wear no chains, but can freely diſengage themſelves, and, like a ſound conſtitution of body, riſe chearful, and more vigorous by the food they have acquired, being neither oppreſſed, nor rendered ſtupid by the labours of digeſtion.

Lord Bacon has juſtly expoſed the vain purſuits of oſtentatious pedants in the different parts of learning; and their unaccountable temerity in deducing general rules from arbitrary maxims, or few experiments: he has likewiſe fixed upon a ſure and certain baſis, the procedure and limits of the human underſtanding. Swift has purſued the ſame plan in a different manner, and has placed the imaginary ſchemes of all pretenders, in a more ludicrous, and therefore in a more proper light.

Ridiculum acri
Fortius ac melius, magnas plerumque ſecat res.

He cannot be ſuppoſed to condemn uſeful experiments, or the right application of them: but he ridicules the vain attempts and irregular productions of thoſe raſh men, who, like Ixion, embracing a cloud inſtead of a goddeſs, plagued the world with Centaurs; whilſt Jupiter, from the embraces of a Juno, and an Alcmena, bleſſed the earth with an Hebe, and an Hercules.

Orrery.

The deſign of Gulliver in his voyage to Laputa, is to ridicule the vain pretenſions of chymiſts, mathematicians, projectors, and the reſt of that ſpeculative tribe, who ſpend their time in aerial ſtudies, by no means calculated to improve the faculties of the mind, or to enlarge the number of ideas; mathematicians (I mean thoſe only who are entirely devoted to their circles, their teleſcopes, and their laboratory) being a race of men ſo very abſtracted from all ſublunary affairs, that ſcarce one in twenty of them can give you a rational anſwer. However, indeed, a certain degree of mathematical knowledge is, without diſpute, extremely neceſſary in the purſuit of the Æſculapian ſcience, architecture, and other ſpecies of mechanics. But when the ſoul rambles after a thouſand chimæras, and the brain is wholly abſorbed

uſual after long abſences. But repeating his viſits often, expreſſing his joy to find me in good health, aſking whether I were now ſettled for life, adding that he intended a voyage to the Eaſt-Indies in two months; at laſt he plainly invited me, tho' with ſome apologies, to be ſurgeon of the ſhip; that I ſhould have another ſurgeon under me, beſides our two mates; that my ſalary ſhould be double to the uſual pay; and that having experienced my knowledge in ſea-affairs to be at leaſt equal to his, he would enter into any engagement to follow my advice, as much as if I had ſhared in the command.

He ſaid ſo many other obliging things, and I knew him to be ſo honeſt a man, that I could not reject his propoſal; the thirſt I had of ſeeing the world, notwithſtanding my paſt misfortunes, continuing as violent as ever. The only difficulty that remained was to perſuade my wife, whoſe conſent however I at laſt obtained by the proſpect of advantage ſhe propoſed to her children.

We ſet out the 5th day of Auguſt 1706, and arrived at Fort St. George the 11th of April 1707. We ſtaid there three weeks to refreſh our crew, many of whom were ſick. From thence we went to Tonquin, where the Captain reſolved to continue ſome time, becauſe many of the goods he intended to buy were not ready, nor could he expect to be diſpatched in ſeveral months. Therefore, in hopes to defray ſome of the charges he muſt be at, he bought a ſloop, loaded it with ſeveral ſorts

in the conſideration of the ſeveral powers of attraction, repulſion, and the circulation of the heavenly bodies; or when a projector, with ſooty hands and face, is employed in his laboratory in producing a conſiderable degree of cold, in order to refrigerate the air, and qualify the raging of the dog ſtar, which exactly anſwers to the project of extracting ſun-beams out of cucumbers; ſuch follies and extravagancies are certainly the objects of deriſion. And accordingly Dr Swift has laughed egregiouſly in the voyage to Laputa, and exerted a vein of humour, not againſt the whole tribe of chymiſts, projectors, and mathematicians in general; but againſt thoſe, and thoſe only, who deſpiſe the uſeful branches of ſcience, and waſte their lives in the purſuit of aerial vanities and extravagancies. *Swift.*

ſorts of goods, wherewith the Tonquineſe uſually trade to the neighbouring iſlands, and putting fourteen men on board, whereof three were of the country, he appointed me maſter of the ſloop, and gave me power to traffic, while he tranſacted his affairs at Tonquin.

We had not ſailed above three days, when, a great ſtorm ariſing, we were driven five days to the north-north-eaſt, and then to the eaſt; after which we had fair weather, but ſtill with a pretty ſtrong gale from the weſt. Upon the tenth day we were chaced by two pyrates, who ſoon overtook us; for my ſloop was ſo deep laden, that ſhe ſailed very ſlow, neither were we in a condition to defend ourſelves.

We were boarded about the ſame time by both the pyrates, who entered furiouſly at the head of their men; but finding us all proſtrate upon our faces (for ſo I gave order) they pinioned us with ſtrong ropes, and, ſetting a guard upon us, went to ſearch the ſloop.

I obſerved among them a Dutchman, who ſeemed to be of ſome authority, tho' he was not commander of either ſhip. He knew us by our countenances to be Engliſhmen, and jabbering to us in his own language, ſwore we ſhould be tied back to back, and thrown into the ſea. I ſpoke Dutch tolerably well; I told him who we were, and begged him in conſideration of our being Chriſtians and Proteſtants, of neighbouring countries in ſtrict alliance, that he would move the Captains to take ſome pity on us. This inflamed his rage, he repeated his threatenings, and turning to his companions, ſpoke with great vehemence in the Japaneſe language, as I ſuppoſe, often uſing the word *chriſtianos*.

The largeſt of the two pyrate ſhips was commanded by a Japaneſe Captain, who ſpoke a little Dutch, but very imperfectly. He came up to me, and after ſeveral queſtions, which I anſwered in great humility, he ſaid we ſhould not die. I made the Captain a very low bow, and then turning to the Dutchman ſaid, I was ſorry to find more mercy in a Heathen, than in a brother Chriſtian. But I had ſoon reaſon to repent thoſe fooliſh words: for that malicious reprobate, having often endeavoured in vain to perſuade both the Captains that I might be thrown *into the ſea* (which they would not yield to after the promiſe

miſe made me that I ſhould not die) however prevailed ſo far as to have a puniſhment inflicted on me, worſe, in all human appearance, than death itſelf. My men were ſent by an equal diviſion into both the pyrate ſhips, and my ſloop new manned. As to myſelf, it was determined that I ſhould be ſet a-drift in a ſmall canoe, with paddles and a ſail, and four days proviſions, which laſt the Japaneſe Captain was ſo kind to double out of his own ſtores, and would permit no man to ſearch me. I got down into the canoe, while the Dutchman ſtanding upon the deck loaded me with all the curſes and injurious terms his language could afford.

About an hour before we ſaw the pyrates, I had taken an obſervation, and found we were in the latitude of 46·N. and of longitude 183. When I was at ſome diſtance from the pyrates, I diſcovered by my pocket-glaſs ſeveral iſlands to the ſouth-eaſt. I ſet up my ſail, the wind being fair, with a deſign to reach the neareſt of thoſe iſlands, which I made a ſhift to do in about three hours. It was all rocky, however I got many birds eggs, and ſtriking fire I kindled ſome heath and dry ſea-weed, by which I roaſted my eggs. I eat no other ſupper, being reſolved to ſpare my proviſions as much as I could. I paſſed the night under the ſhelter of a rock, ſtrewing ſome heath under me, and ſlept pretty well.

The next day I ſailed to another iſland, and thence to a third and fourth, ſometimes uſing my ſail, and ſometimes my paddles. But, not to trouble the reader with a particular account of my diſtreſſes, let it ſuffice, that on the fifth day I arrived at the laſt iſland in my ſight, which lay ſouth-ſouth-eaſt to the former.

This iſland was at a greater diſtance than I expected, and I did not reach it in leſs than five hours. I encompaſſed it almoſt round, before I could find a convenient place to land in, which was a ſmall creek about three times the wideneſs of my canoe. I found the iſland to be all rocky, only a little intermingled with turfs of graſs, and ſweet-ſmelling herbs. I took out my ſmall proviſions, and after having refreſhed myſelf, I ſecured the remainder in a cave, whereof there were great numbers. I gathered plenty of eggs upon the rocks, and got a quantity of dry ſea-weed, and parched graſs, which I deſigned

ed to kindle the next day, and roaſt my eggs as well as I could (for I had about me my flint, ſteel, match, and burning-glaſs). I lay all night in the cave where I had lodged my proviſions. My bed was the ſame dry graſs and ſea-weed which I intended for fewel. I ſlept very little, for the diſquiets of my mind prevailed over my wearineſs, and kept me awake. I conſidered how impoſſible it was to preſerve my life in ſo deſolate a place, and how miſerable my end muſt be; yet found myſelf ſo liſtleſs and deſponding, that I had not the heart to riſe; and before I could get ſpirits enough to creep out of my cave, the day was far advanced. I walked a while among the rocks, the ſky was perfectly clear, and the ſun ſo hot, that I was forced to turn my face from it; when all on a ſudden it became obſcure, as I thought, in a manner very different from what happens by the interpoſition of a cloud. I turned back, and perceived a vaſt opake body between me and the ſun, moving forwards towards the iſland: it ſeemed to be about two miles high, and hid the ſun ſix or ſeven minutes; but I did not obſerve the air to be much colder, or the ſky more darkened, than if I had ſtood under the ſhade of a mountain. As it approached nearer over the place where I was, it appeared to be a firm ſubſtance, the bottom flat, ſmooth, and ſhining very bright from the reflexion of the ſea below. I ſtood upon a height about two hundred yards from the ſhore, and ſaw this vaſt body deſcending almoſt to a parallel with me at leſs than an Engliſh mile diſtance. I took out my pocket-perſpective, and could plainly diſcover numbers of people moving up and down the ſides of it, which appeared to be ſloping; but what thoſe people were doing, I was not able to diſtinguiſh.

The natural love of life gave me ſome inward motions of joy, and I was ready to entertain a hope, that this adventure might ſome way or other help to deliver me from the deſolate place and condition I was in. But at the ſame time, the reader can hardly conceive my aſtoniſhment to behold an iſland in the air, inhabited by men, who were able (as it ſhould ſeem) to raiſe or ſink, or put it into a progreſſive motion, as they pleaſed. But not being at that time in a diſpoſition to philoſophiſe upon this phænomenon, I rather choſe to obſerve what courſe the

the iſland would take, becauſe it ſeemed for a while to ſtand ſtill. Yet ſoon after it advanced nearer, and I could ſee the ſides of it encompaſſed with ſeveral gradations of galleries, and ſtairs at certain intervals to deſcend from one to the other. In the loweſt gallery I beheld ſome people fiſhing with long angling rods, and others looking on. I waved my cap (for my hat was long ſince worn out) and my handkerchief towards the iſland; and upon its nearer approach I called and ſhouted with the utmoſt ſtrength of my voice; and then, looking circumſpectly, I beheld a crowd gathered to that ſide which was moſt in my view. I found by their pointing towards me and to each other, that they plainly diſcovered me, altho' they made no return to my ſhouting. But I could ſee four or five men running in great haſte up the ſtairs to the top of the iſland, who then diſappeared. I happened rightly to conjecture, that theſe were ſent for orders to ſome perſon in authority upon this occaſion.

The number of people encreaſed, and in leſs than half an hour the iſland was moved and raiſed in ſuch a manner, that the loweſt gallery appeared in a parallel of leſs than an hundred yards diſtance from the height where I ſtood. I then put myſelf into the moſt ſupplicating poſtures, and ſpoke in the humbleſt accent, but received no anſwer. Thoſe, who ſtood neareſt over-againſt me, ſeemed to be perſons of diſtinction, as I ſuppoſed by their habit. They conferred earneſtly with each other, looking often upon me. At length one of them called out in a clear, polite, ſmooth dialect, not unlike in ſound to the Italian, and therefore I returned an anſwer in that language, hoping at leaſt that the cadence might be more agreeable to his ears. Altho' neither of us underſtood the other, yet my meaning was eaſily known, for the people ſaw the diſtreſs I was in.

They made ſigns for me to come down from the rock, and go towards the ſhore, which I accordingly did; and the flying iſland being raiſed to a convenient height, the verge directly over me, a chain was let down from the loweſt gallery with a ſeat faſtened to the bottom, to which I fixed myſelf, and was drawn up by pullies.

CHAP.

CHAP. II.

The humours and diſpoſitions of the Laputians *deſcribed. An account of their learning. Of the King and his court. The author's reception there. The inhabitants ſubject to fear and diſquietudes. An account of the women.*

AT my alighting I was ſurrounded with a crowd of people, but thoſe who ſtood neareſt ſeemed to be of better quality. They beheld me with all the marks and circumſtances of wonder, neither indeed was I much in their debt; having never till then ſeen a race of mortals ſo ſingular in their ſhapes, habits, and countenances. Their heads were all reclined either to the right or the left; one of their eyes turned inward, and the other directly up to the zenith *. Their outward garments were adorned with the figures of ſuns, moons, and ſtars, interwoven with thoſe of fiddles, flutes, harps, trumpets, guitars, harpſicords, and many other inſtruments of muſic unknown to us in Europe. I obſerved here and there many in the habit of ſervants with a blown bladder faſtened like a flayl to the end of a ſhort ſtick, which they carried in their hands. In each bladder was a ſmall quantity of dried peaſe, or little pebbles (as I was afterwards informed). With theſe bladders they now and then flapped the mouths and ears of thoſe who ſtood near them, of which practice I could not then conceive the meaning. It ſeems the minds of theſe people are ſo taken up with intenſe ſpeculations, that they neither can ſpeak, nor attend to the diſcourſes of others, without being rouſed by ſome external action upon the organs of ſpeech and hearing; for which reaſon thoſe perſons who are able to afford it, always keep a *flapper* (the original is *climenole*) in their family, as one of their domeſtics, nor ever walk abroad, or make viſits without him. And the buſineſs of

* By this deſcription the author intended to ridicule thoſe who waſte life in ſpeculative ſcience, the powers of whoſe minds are as abſurdly employed as the eyes of the Laputians. Hawkeſ.

of this officer is, when two, three, or more perſons are in company, gently to ſtrike with his bladder the mouth of him who is to ſpeak, and the right ear of him or them to whom the ſpeaker addreſſeth himſelf. This *flapper* is likewiſe employed diligently to attend his maſter in his walks, and upon occaſion to give him a ſoft flap on his eyes, becauſe he is always ſo wrapped up in cogitation, that he is in manifeſt danger of falling down every precipice, and bouncing his head againſt every poſt; and in the ſtreets of juſtling others, or being juſtled himſelf into the kennel.

It was neceſſary to give the reader this information, without which he would be at the ſame loſs with me to underſtand the proceedings of theſe people, as they conducted me up the ſtairs to the top of the iſland, and from thence to the royal palace. While we were aſcending, they forgot ſeveral times what they were about, and left me to myſelf, till their memories were again rouſed by their *flappers*; for they appeared altogether unmoved by the ſight of my foreign habit and countenance, and by the ſhouts of the vulgar, whoſe thoughts and minds were more diſengaged.

At laſt we entered the palace, and proceeded into the chamber of preſence, where I ſaw the King ſeated on his throne, attended on each ſide by perſons of prime quality. Before the throne was a large table filled with globes and ſpheres, and mathematical inſtruments of all kinds. His Majeſty took not the leaſt notice of us, altho' our entrance was not without ſufficient noiſe by the concourſe of all perſons belonging to the court. But he was then deep in a problem, and we attended at leaſt an hour, before he could ſolve it. There ſtood by him on each ſide a young page with flaps in their hands, and when they ſaw he was at leiſure, one of them gently ſtruck his mouth, and the other his right ear; at which he ſtarted like one awaked on the ſudden, and looking towards me and the company I was in, recollected the occaſion of our coming, whereof he had been informed before. He ſpoke ſome words, whereupon immediately a young man with a flap came up to my ſide, and flapt me gently on the right ear, but I made ſigns as well as I could, that I had no occaſion for ſuch an inſtrument; which, as I afterwards found,

found, gave his Majesty and the whole court a very mean opinion of my understanding. The King, as far as I could conjecture, asked me several questions, and I addressed myself to him in all the languages I had. When it was found, that I could neither understand, nor be understood, I was conducted by his order to an apartment in his palace, (this Prince being distinguished above all his predecessors for his hospitality to strangers) where two servants were appointed to attend me. My dinner was brought, and four persons of quality, whom I remembered to have seen very near the King's person, did me the honour to dine with me. We had two courses of three dishes each. In the first course there was a shoulder of mutton cut into an æquilateral triangle, a piece of beef into a rhomboides, and a pudding into a cycloid. The second course was two ducks trussed up into the form of fiddles, sausages and puddings resembling flutes and hautboys, and a breast of veal in the shape of a harp. The servants cut our bread into cones, cylinders, parallelograms, and several other mathematical figures.

While we were at dinner, I made bold to ask the names of several things in their language, and those noble persons by the assistance of their *flappers* delighted to give me answers, hoping to raise my admiration of their great abilities, if I could be brought to converse with them. I was soon able to call for bread and drink, or whatever else I wanted.

After dinner my company withdrew, and a person was sent to me by the King's order attended by a *flapper*. He brought with him pen, ink, and paper, and three or four books, giving me to understand by signs, that he was sent to teach me the language. We sat together four hours, in which time I wrote down a great number of words in columns with the translations over-against them; I likewise made a shift to learn several short sentences. For my tutor would order one of my servants to fetch something, to turn about, to make a bow, to sit, or to stand, or walk, and the like. Then I took down the sentence in writing. He shewed me also in one of his books the figures of the sun, moon, and stars, the zodiac, the tropics, and polar circles, together with the denominations of many figures of planes and solids. He gave me the

names and deſcriptions of all the muſical inſtruments, and the general terms of art in playing on each of them. After he had left me, I placed all my words with their interpretations in alphabetical order. And thus in a few days, by the help of a very faithful memory, I got ſome inſight into their language.

THE word, which I interpret the *flying* or *floating iſland*, is in the original Laputa, whereof I could never learn the true etymology. *Lap* in the old obſolete language ſignifieth *high*, and *untuh* a *governor*, from which, they ſay by corruption was derived Laputa, from Lapuntuh. But I do not approve of this derivation, which ſeems to be a little ſtrained. I ventured to offer to the learned among them a conjecture of my own, that Laputa was *quaſi lap outed*; *lap* ſignifying properly the dancing of the ſun beams in the ſea, and *outed* a wing, which however I ſhall not obtrude, but ſubmit to the judicious reader.

THOSE to whom the King had entruſted me, obſerving how ill I was clad, ordered a taylor to come next morning, and take meaſure for a ſuit of cloaths. This operator did his office after a different manner from thoſe of his trade in Europe. He firſt took my altitude by a quadrant, and then with rule and compaſſes deſcribed the dimenſions and out-lines of my whole body, all which he entered upon paper; and in ſix days brought my cloaths very ill made, and quite out of ſhape; by happening to miſtake a figure in the calculation. But my comfort was, that I obſerved ſuch accidents very frequent, and little regarded.

DURING my confinement for want of cloaths, and by an indiſpoſition that held me ſome days longer, I much enlarged my dictionary; and when I went next to court, was able to underſtand many things the King ſpoke, and to return him ſome kind of anſwers. His Majeſty had given orders, that the iſland ſhould move north-eaſt and by eaſt to the vertical point over Lagado, the metropolis of the whole kingdom below upon the firm earth. It was about ninety leagues diſtant, and our voyage laſted four days and an half. I was not in the leaſt ſenſible of the progreſſive motion made in the air by the iſland. On the ſecond morning about eleven o'clock, the King himſelf in perſon

perſon attended by his nobility, courtiers and officers, having prepared all their muſical inſtruments, played on them for three hours without intermiſſion, ſo that I was quite ſtunned with the noiſe; neither could I poſſibly gueſs the meaning, till my tutor informed me. He ſaid, that the people of their iſland had their ears adapted to hear the muſic of the ſpheres, which always played at certain periods, and the court was now prepared to bear their part, in whatever inſtrument they moſt excelled.

In our journey towards Lagado, the capital city, his Majeſty ordered that the iſland ſhould ſtop over certain towns and villages, from whence he might receive the petitions of his ſubjects. And to this purpoſe ſeveral packthreads were let down with ſmall weights at the bottom. On theſe packthreads the people ſtrung their petitions, which mounted up directly, like the ſcraps of paper faſtened by ſchool-boys at the end of the ſtring that holds their kite. Sometimes we received wine and victuals from below, which were drawn up by pullies.

The knowledge I had in mathematics gave me great aſſiſtance in acquiring their phraſeology, which depended much upon that ſcience and muſic; and in the latter I was not unſkilled. Their ideas are perpetually converſant in lines and figures. If they would for example praiſe the beauty of a woman, or any other animal, they deſcribe it by rhombs, circles, parallelograms, ellipſes and other geometrical terms, or by words of art drawn from muſic, needleſs here to repeat. I obſerved in the King's kitchen all ſorts of mathematical and muſical inſtruments, after the figures of which they cut up the joints that were ſerved to his Majeſty's table.

Their houſes are very ill built, the walls bevil, without one right angle in any apartment; and this defect ariſeth from the contempt they bear to practical geometry, which they deſpiſe as vulgar and mechanic, thoſe inſtructions they give being too refined for the intellectuals of their workmen, which occaſions perpetual miſtakes. And altho' they are dextrous enough upon a piece of paper in the management of the rule, the pencil, and the divider, yet in the common actions and behaviour of life I have not ſeen a more clumſy, awkward, and unhandy people, nor ſo ſlow and perplexed in their conceptions upon

upon all other ſubjects, except thoſe of mathematics and muſic. They are very bad reaſoners, and vehemently given to oppoſition, unleſs when they happen to be of the right opinion, which is ſeldom their caſe. Imagination, fancy, and invention they are wholly ſtrangers to, nor have any words in their language by which thoſe ideas can be expreſſed; the whole compaſs of their thoughts and mind being ſhut up within the two forementioned ſciences.

Most of them, and eſpecially thoſe who deal in the aſtronomical part, have great faith in judicial aſtrology, altho' they are aſhamed to own it publicly. But what I chiefly admired, and thought altogether unaccountable, was the ſtrong diſpoſition I obſerved in them towards news and politics, perpetually inquiring into public affairs, giving their judgments in matters of ſtate, and paſſionately diſputing every inch of a party opinion. I have indeed obſerved the ſame diſpoſition among moſt of the mathematicians I have known in Europe, altho' I could never diſcover the leaſt analogy between the two ſciences unleſs thoſe people ſuppoſe, that becauſe the ſmalleſt circle hath as many degrees as the largeſt, therefore the regulation and management of the world require no more abilities, than the handling and turning of a globe: but I rather take this quality to ſpring from a very common infirmity of human nature, inclining us to be moſt curious and conceited in matters where we have leaſt concern, and for which we are leaſt adapted either by ſtudy or nature.

These people are under continual diſquietudes, never enjoying a minute's peace of mind; and their diſturbances proceed from cauſes, which very little affect the reſt of mortals. Their apprehenſions ariſe from ſeveral changes they dread in the celeſtial bodies. For inſtance, that the earth by the continual approaches of the ſun towards it muſt in courſe of time be abſorbed, or ſwallowed up. That the face of the ſun will by degrees be encruſted with its own effluvia, and give no more light to the world. That the earth very narrowly eſcaped a bruſh from the tail of the laſt comet, which would have infallibly reduced it to aſhes; and that the next, which they have calculated for one and thirty years hence, will probably deſtroy

ſtroy us. For, if in its perihelion it ſhould approach within a certain degree of the ſun (as by their calculations they have reaſon to dread) it will receive a degree of heat ten thouſand times more intenſe than that of red hot glowing iron; and, in its abſence from the ſun, carry a blazing tail ten hundred thouſand and fourteen miles long; through which if the earth ſhould paſs at the diſtance of one hundred thouſand miles from the *nucleus*, or main body of the comet, it muſt in its paſſage be ſet on fire, and reduced to aſhes. That the ſun, daily ſpending its rays without any nutriment to ſupply them, will at laſt be wholly conſumed and annihilated; which muſt be attended with the deſtruction of this earth and of all the planets that receive their light from it *.

They are ſo perpetually alarmed with the apprehenſions of theſe, and the like impending dangers, that they can neither ſleep quietly in their beds, nor have any reliſh for the common pleaſures or amuſements of life. When they meet an acquaintance in the morning, the firſt queſtion is about the ſun's health, how he looked at his ſetting and riſing, and what hopes they have to avoid the ſtroke of the approaching comet. This converſation they are apt to run into with the ſame temper, that boys diſcover in delighting to hear terrible ſtories of ſpirits and hobgoblins, which they greedily liſten to, and dare not go to bed for fear.

The women of the iſland have abundance of vivacity; they contemn their huſbands, and are exceedingly fond of ſtrangers, whereof there is always a conſiderable number from the continent below attending at court, either upon affairs of the ſeveral towns and corporations, or their own particular occaſions, but are much deſpiſed, becauſe they want the ſame endowments. Among theſe the ladies chooſe their gallants: but the vexation is, that they act with too much eaſe and ſecurity, for the huſband is always ſo rapt in ſpeculation, that the miſtreſs and lover may proceed to the greateſt familiarities before his face, if he be but provided with paper and implements, and without his *flapper* at his ſide.

The

* *All theſe* were ſuppoſitions of perſons eminent in their time *for mathematical knowledge.* Hawkeſ.

The wives and daughters lament their confinement to the iſland, altho' I think it the moſt delicious ſpot of ground in the world; and altho' they live here in the greateſt plenty and magnificence, and are allowed to do whatever they pleaſe, they long to ſee the world, and take the diverſions of the metropolis, which they are not allowed to do without a particular licence from the King; and this is not eaſy to be obtained, becauſe the people of quality have found by frequent experience, how hard it is to perſuade their women to return from below. I was told, that a great court Lady, who had ſeveral children, is married to the prime miniſter, the richeſt ſubject in the kingdom, a very graceful perſon, extremely fond of her, and lives in the fineſt palace of the iſland, went down to Lagado on the pretence of health, there hid herſelf for ſeveral months, till the King ſent a warrant to ſearch for her, and ſhe was found in an obſcure eating-houſe all in rags, having pawned her cloaths to maintain an old deformed footman, who beat her every day, and in whoſe company ſhe was taken much againſt her will. And altho' her huſband received her with all poſſible kindneſs, and without the leaſt reproach, ſhe ſoon after contrived to ſteal down again with all her jewels to the ſame gallant, and hath not been heard of ſince.

This may perhaps paſs with the reader rather for an European or Engliſh ſtory, than for one of a country ſo remote. But he may pleaſe to conſider, that the caprices of women-kind are not limited by any climate or nation, and that they are much more uniform than can be eaſily imagined.

In about a month's time, I had made a tolerable proficiency in their language, and was able to anſwer moſt of the King's queſtions, when I had the honour to attend him. His Majeſty diſcovered not the leaſt curioſity to inquire into the laws, government, hiſtory, religion, or manners of the countries where I had been, but confined his queſtions to the ſtate of mathematics, and received the account I gave him with great contempt and indifference, tho' often rouſed by his *flapper* on each ſide.

CHAP.

CHAP. III.

A phænomenon solved by modern philosophy and astronomy. The Laputians *great improvements in the latter. The King's method of suppressing insurrections.*

I Desired leave of this Prince to see the curiosities of the island, which he was graciously pleased to grant, and ordered my tutor to attend me. I chiefly wanted to know, to what cause in art or in nature it owed its several motions, whereof I will now give a philosophical account to the reader.

The flying or floating island is exactly circular, its diameter 7837 yards, or about four miles and an half, and consequently contains ten thousand acres. It is three hundred yards thick. The bottom, or under surface, which appears to those who view it from below, is one even regular plate of adamant, shooting up to the height of about two hundred yards. Above it lie the several minerals in their usual order, and over all is a coat of rich mould, ten or twelve feet deep. The declivity of the upper surface, from the circumference to the center, is the natural cause why all the dews and rains, which fall upon the island, are conveyed in small rivulets towards the middle, where they are emptied into four large basons, each of about half a mile in circuit, and two hundred yards distant from the center. From these basons the water is continually exhaled by the sun in the day-time, which effectually prevents their overflowing. Besides, as it is in the power of the Monarch to raise the island above the region of clouds and vapours, he can prevent the falling of dews and rains whenever he pleases. For the highest clouds cannot rise above two miles, as naturalists agree, at least they were never known to do so in that country.

At the center of the island there is a chasm about fifty yards in diameter, from whence the astronomers descend into a large dome, which is therefore called *flandona gagnole*, or the *astronomer's cave*, situated at the depth of a hundred yards beneath the upper surface of the adamant.

mant. In this cave are twenty lamps continually burning, which from the reflection of the adamant, caſt a ſtrong light into every part. The place is ſtored with great variety of ſextants, quadrants, teleſcopes, aſtrolabes, and other aſtronomical inſtruments. But the greateſt curioſity, upon which the fate of the iſland depends, is a loadſtone of a prodigious ſize, in ſhape reſembling a weaver's ſhuttle. It is in length ſix yards, and in the thickeſt part at leaſt three yards over. This magnet is ſuſtained by a very ſtrong axle of adamant paſſing thro' its middle, upon which it plays, and is poiſed ſo exactly, that the weakeſt hand can turn it. It is hooped round with an hollow cylinder of adamant, four feet deep, as many thick, and twelve yards in diameter, placed horizontally, and ſupported by eight adamantine feet, each ſix yards high. In the middle of the concave ſide there is a groove twelve inches deep, in which the extremities of the axle are lodged, and turned round as there is occaſion.

The ſtone cannot be moved from its place by any force; becauſe the hoop and its feet are one continued piece with that body of adamant which conſtitutes the bottom of the iſland.

By means of this loadſtone the iſland is made to riſe and fall, and move from one place to another. For, with reſpect to that part of the earth over which the Monarch preſides, the ſtone is endued at one of its ſides with an attractive power, and at the other with a repulſive. Upon placing the magnet erect, with its attracting end towards the earth, the iſland deſcends; but when the repelling extremity points downwards, the iſland mounts directly upwards. When the poſition of the ſtone is oblique, the motion of the iſland is ſo too: for in this magnet the forces always act in lines parallel to its direction.

By this oblique motion the iſland is conveyed to different parts of the Monarch's dominions. To explain the manner of its progreſs, let *A B* repreſent a line drawn croſs the dominions of Balnibarbi, let the line *c d* repreſent the loadſtone, of which let *d* be the repelling end, and *c* the attracting end, the iſland being over *C*; let the ſtone be placed in the poſition *c d*, with its repelling end down-

downwards; then the island will be driven upwards obliquely towards *D*. When it is arrived at *D*, let the stone be turned upon its axle till its attracting end points towards *E*, and then the island will be carried obliquely towards *E*; where if the stone be again turned upon its axle till it stands in the position *E F*, with its repelling point downward, the island will rise obliquely towards *F*, where, by directing the attracting end towards *G*, the island may be carried to *G*, and from *G* to *H*, by turning the stone, so as to make its repelling extremity point directly downward. And thus, by changing the situation of the stone as often as there is occasion, the island is made to rise and fall by turns in an oblique direction, and by those alternate risings and fallings (the obliquity being not considerable) is conveyed from one part of the dominions to the other.

But it must be observed, that this island cannot move beyond the extent of the dominions below, nor can it rise above the height of four miles. For which the astronomers (who have written large systems concerning the stone) assign the following reason: that the magnetic virtue does not extend beyond the distance of four miles, and that the mineral, which acts upon the stone in the bowels of the earth, and in the sea about six leagues distant from the shore, is not diffused thro' the whole globe, but terminated with the limits of the King's dominions; and it was easy, from the great advantage of such a superior situation, for a Prince to bring under his obedience whatever country lay within the attraction of that magnet.

When the stone is put parallel to the plane of the horizon, the island standeth still; for in that case the extremities of it, being at equal distance from the earth, act with equal force, the one in drawing downwards, the other in pushing upwards, and consequently no motion can ensue.

This loadstone is under the care of certain astronomers, who from time to time give it such positions as the Monarch directs. They spend the greatest part of their lives in observing the celestial bodies, which they do by the assistance of glasses, far excelling ours in goodness. For, altho' their largest telescopes do not exceed three feet.

feet, they magnify much more than thoſe of an hundred with us, and ſhew the ſtars with greater clearneſs. This advantage hath enabled them to extend their diſcoveries much farther than our aſtronomers in Europe; for they have made a catalogue of ten thouſand fixed ſtars, whereas the largeſt of ours do not contain above one third part of that number. They have likewiſe diſcovered two leſſer ſtars, or *ſatellites*, which revolve about Mars, whereof the innermoſt is diſtant from the center of the primary planet exactly three of his diameters, and the uttermoſt, five; the former revolves in the ſpace of ten hours, and the latter in twenty one and an half; ſo that the ſquares of their periodical times are very near in the ſame proportion with the cubes of their diſtance from the centre of Mars, which evidently ſhews them to be governed by the ſame law of gravitation, that influences the other heavenly bodies.

They have obſerved ninety three different comets, and ſettled their periods with great exactneſs. If this be true (and they affirm it with great confidence) it is much to be wiſhed, that their obſervations were made public, whereby the theory of comets, which at preſent is very lame and defective, might be brought to the ſame perfection with other parts of aſtronomy.

The King would be the moſt abſolute Prince in the univerſe, if he could but prevail on a miniſtry to join with him; but theſe having their eſtates below on the continent, and conſidering that the office of a favourite hath a very uncertain tenure, would never conſent to the enſlaving their country.

If any town ſhould engage in rebellion or mutiny, fall into violent factions, or refuſe to pay the uſual tribute, the King hath two methods of reducing them to obedience The firſt and the mildeſt courſe is by keeping the iſland hovering over ſuch a town, and the lands about it, whereby he can deprive them of the benefit of the ſun and the rain, and conſequently afflict the inhabitants with dearth and diſeaſes. And, if the crime deſerve it, they are at the ſame time pelted from above with great ſtones, againſt which they have no defence but by creeping into cellars or caves, while the roofs of their houſes are beat*en to pieces.* But if they ſtill continue obſtinate, or offer

fer to raiſe inſurrections, he proceeds to the laſt remedy, by letting the iſland drop directly upon their heads, which makes an univerſal deſtruction both of houſes and men. However this is an extremity to which the Prince is ſeldom driven, neither indeed is he willing to put it in execution, nor dare his miniſters adviſe him to an action, which, as it would render them odious to the people, ſo it would be a great damage to their own eſtates, which lie all below; for the iſland is the King's demeſn.

But there is ſtill indeed a more weighty reaſon why the kings of this country have been always averſe from executing ſo terrible an action, unleſs upon the utmoſt neceſſity. For, if the town intended to be deſtroyed ſhould have in it any tall rocks, as it generally falls out in the larger cities, a ſituation probably choſen at firſt with a view to prevent ſuch a cataſtrophe; or if it abound in high ſpires, or pillars of ſtone, a ſudden fall might endanger the bottom or under ſurface of the iſland, which, altho' it conſiſt, as I have ſaid, of one entire adamant two hundred yards thick, might happen to crack by too great a ſhock, or burſt by approaching too near the fire from the houſes below, as the backs both of iron and ſtone will often do in our chimnies. Of all this the people are well appriſed, and underſtand how far to carry their obſtinacy, where their liberty or property is concerned. And the King, when he is higheſt provoked, and moſt determined to preſs a city to rubbiſh, orders the iſland to deſcend with great gentleneſs, out of a preſervation of tenderneſs to his people; but indeed for fear of breaking the adamantine bottom; in which caſe, it is the opinion of all their philoſophers, that the loadſtone could no longer hold it up, and the whole maſs would fall to the ground.

By a fundamental law of this realm, neither the *King*, nor either of his two elder ſons, are permitted to leave the iſland; nor the Queen, till ſhe is paſt child-bearing.

CHAP. IV.

The author leaves Laputa, *is conveyed to* Balnibarbi, *arrives at the metropolis. A deſcription of the metropolis, and the country adjoining. The author hoſpitably received by a great Lord. His converſation with that Lord.*

ALTHO' I cannot ſay that I was ill-treated in this iſland, yet I muſt confeſs I thought myſelf too much neglected, not without ſome degree of contempt. For neither Prince nor people appeared to be curious in any part of knowledge, except mathematics and muſic, wherein I was far their inferior, and upon that account very little regarded.

ON the other ſide, after having ſeen all the curioſities of the iſland, I was very deſirous to leave it, being heartily weary of thoſe people. They were indeed excellent in two ſciences, for which I have great eſteem, and wherein I am not unverſed; but at the ſame time ſo abſtracted and involved in ſpeculation, that I never met with ſuch diſagreeable companions. I converſed only with women, tradeſmen, *flappers*, and court-pages, during two months of my abode there; by which at laſt I rendered myſelf extremely contemptible; yet theſe were the only people from whom I could ever receive a reaſonable anſwer.

I had obtained by hard ſtudy a good degree of knowledge in their language; I was weary of being confined to an iſland, where I received ſo little countenance, and reſolved to leave it with the firſt opportunity.

THERE was a great Lord at court, nearly related to the King, and for that reaſon alone uſed with reſpect. He was univerſally reckoned the moſt ignorant and ſtupid perſon among them. He had performed many eminent ſervices for the crown, had great natural and acquired parts, adorned with integrity and honour, but ſo ill an ear for muſic, that his detractors reported he had been often known to beat time in the wrong place; neither could his tutors without extreme difficulty teach him to demonſtrate

monſtrate the moſt eaſy propoſition in the mathematics. He was pleaſed to ſhew me many marks of favour, often did me the honour of a viſit, deſired to be informed in the affairs of Europe, the laws and cuſtoms, the manners and learning of the ſeveral countries where I had travelled. He liſtened to me with great attention, and made very wiſe obſervations on all I ſpoke. He had two *flappers* attending him for ſtate, but never made uſe of them, except at court and in viſits of ceremony, and would always command them to withdraw, when we were alone together.

I entreated this illuſtrious perſon to intercede in my behalf with his Majeſty for leave to depart, which he accordingly did, as he was pleaſed to tell me with regret: for indeed he had made me ſeveral offers very advantageous, which however I refuſed with expreſſions of the higheſt acknowledgment.

On the 16th of February I took leave of his Majeſty and the court. The King made me a preſent to the value of about two hundred pounds Engliſh, and my protector, his kinſman, as much more, together with a letter of recommendation to a friend of his in Lagado, the metropolis: the iſland being then hovering over a mountain about two miles from it, I was let down from the loweſt gallery, in the ſame manner as I had been taken up.

The continent, as far as it is ſubject to the Monarch of the *flying iſland*, paſſes under the general name of Balnibarbi; and the metropolis, as I ſaid before, is called Lagado. I felt ſome little ſatisfaction in finding myſelf on firm ground. I walked to the city without any concern, being clad like one of the natives, and ſufficiently inſtructed to converſe with them. I ſoon found out the perſon's houſe to whom I was recommended, preſented my letter from his friend the grandee in the iſland, and was received with much kindneſs. This great Lord, whoſe name was Munodi, ordered me an apartment in his own houſe, where I continued during my ſtay, and was entertained in a moſt hoſpitable manner.

The next morning after my arrival he took me in his chariot to ſee the town, which is about half the bigneſs of London, but the houſes very ſtrangely built, and

moſt of them out of repair. The people in the ſtreets walked faſt, looked wild, their eyes fixed, and were generally in rags We paſſed thro' one of the town-gates, and went about three miles into the country, where I ſaw many labourers working with ſeveral ſorts of tools in the ground, but was not able to conjecture what they were about; neither did I obſerve any expectation either of corn or graſs, altho' the ſoil appeared to be excellent. I could not forbear admiring at theſe odd appearances both in town and country; and I made bold to deſire my conductor, that he would be pleaſed to explain to me, what could be meant by ſo many buſy heads, hands, and faces both in the ſtreets and the fields, becauſe I did not diſcover any good effects they produced; but on the contrary I never knew a ſoil ſo unhappily cultivated, houſes ſo ill contrived and ſo ruinous, or a people whoſe countenances and habit expreſſed ſo much miſery and want.

THIS Lord Munodi was a perſon of the firſt rank, and had been ſome years governor of Lagado; but by a cabal of miniſters was diſcharged for inſufficiency. However the King treated him with tenderneſs, as a well-meaning man, but of a low contemptible underſtanding.

WHEN I gave that free cenſure of the country and its inhabitants, he made no further anſwer, than by telling me, that I had not been long enough among them to form a judgment, and that the different nations of the world had different cuſtoms; with other common topics to the ſame purpoſe. But when we returned to his palace, he aſked me how I liked the building, what abſurdities I obſerved, and what quarrel I had with the dreſs or looks of his domeſtics. This he might ſafely do; becauſe every thing about him was magnificent, regular, and polite. I anſwered, that his Excellency's prudence, quality, and fortune, had exempted him from thoſe defects, which folly and beggary had produced in others. He ſaid, if I would go with him to his country-houſe about twenty miles diſtant, where his eſtate lay, there would be more leiſure for this kind of converſation. I told his Excellency, that I was entirely at his diſpoſal; and accordingly we ſet out next morning.

DURING our journey he made me obſerve the ſeveral methods

methods used by farmers in managing their lands; which to me were wholly unaccountable; for except in some very few places, I could not discover one ear of corn or blade of grass. But in three hours travelling the scene was wholly altered; we came into a most beautiful country; farmers houses at small distances neatly built, the fields inclosed, containing vineyards, corn-grounds, and meadows. Neither do I remember to have seen a more delightful prospect. His Excellency observed my countenance to clear up; he told me with a sigh, that there his estate began, and would continue the same, till we should come to his house. That his countrymen ridiculed and despised him for managing his affairs no better, and for setting so ill an example to the kingdom, which however was followed by very few, such as were old, and wilful, and weak like himself.

We came at length to the house, which was indeed a noble structure, built according to the best rules of ancient architecture. The fountains, gardens, walks, avenues, and groves, were all disposed with exact judgment and taste. I gave due praises to every thing I saw, whereof his Excellency took not the least notice till after supper; when, there being no third companion, he told me with a very melancholy air, that he doubted he must throw down his houses in town and country to rebuild them after the present mode, destroy all his plantations, and cast others into such a form as modern usage required, and give the same directions to all his tenants, unless he would submit to incur the censure of pride, singularity, affectation, ignorance, caprice, and perhaps encrease his Majesty's displeasure.

That the admiration I appeared to be under, would cease or diminish, when he had informed me of some particulars, which probably I never heard of at court, the people there being too much taken up in their own speculations to have regard to what passed here below.

The sum of his discourse was to this effect: that about forty years ago certain persons went up to Laputa, either upon business or diversion, and after five months continuance came back with a very little smattering in mathematics, but full of volatile spirits acquired in that airy region. That these persons upon their return began

to

to diſlike the management of every thing below, and fell into ſchemes of putting all arts, ſciences, languages, and mechanics upon a new foot. To this end they procured a royal patent for erecting an academy of projectors in Lagado; and the humour prevailed ſo ſtrongly among the people, that there is not a town of any conſequence in the kingdom without ſuch an academy. In theſe colleges the profeſſors contrive new rules and methods of agriculture and building, and new inſtruments and tools for all trades and manufactures, whereby, as they undertake, one man ſhall do the work of ten, a palace may be built in a week of materials ſo durable as to laſt for ever without repairing: all the fruits of the earth ſhall come to maturity at whatever ſeaſon we think fit to chooſe, and increaſe an hundred fold more than they do at preſent: with innumerable other happy propoſals. The only inconvenience is, that none of theſe projects are yet brought to perfection; and in the mean time the whole country lies miſerably waſte, the houſes in ruins, and the people without food or cloaths. By all which, inſtead of being diſcouraged, they are fifty times more violently bent upon proſecuting their ſchemes, driven equally on by hope and deſpair: that as for himſelf, being not of an enterpriſing ſpirit, he was content to go on in the old forms, to live in the houſes his anceſtors had built, and act as they did in every part of life without innovation. That ſome few other perſons of quality and gentry had done the ſame, but were looked on with an eye of contempt and ill-will, as enemies to art. ignorant, and ill commonwealths men, preferring their own eaſe and ſloth before the general improvement of their country.

His Lordſhip added, that he would not by any farther particulars prevent the pleaſure I ſhould certainly take in viewing the grand academy, whither he was reſolved I ſhould go. He only deſired me to obſerve a ruined building upon the ſide of a mountain about three miles diſtant, of which he gave me this account: that he had a very convenient mill within half a mile of his houſe, turned by a current from a large river, and ſufficient for his own family as well as a great number of his tenants. That about ſeven years ago, a club of thoſe projectors came to him with propoſals to deſtroy this mill, and build another on

on the side of that mountain, on the long ridge whereof a long canal must be cut for a repository of water to be conveyed up by pipes and engines to supply the mill: because the wind and air upon a height agitated the water, and thereby made it fitter for motion: and because the water descending down a declivity would turn the mill with half the current of a river, whose course is more upon a level. He said, that being then not very well with the court, and pressed by many of his friends, he complied with the proposal; and after employing an hundred men for two years, the work miscarried, the projectors went off, laying the blame entirely upon him, railing at him ever since, and putting others upon the same experiment with equal assurance of success, as well as equal disappointment.

In a few days we came back to town, and his Excellency considering the bad character he had in the academy would not go with me himself, but recommended me to a friend of his to bear me company thither. My Lord was pleased to represent me as a great admirer of projects, and a person of much curiosity and easy belief: which indeed was not without truth; for I had myself been a sort of projector in my younger days.

CHAP. V.*

The author permitted to see the grand academy of Lagado. *The academy largely described. The arts wherein the professors employ themselves.*

THIS academy is not an entire single building, but a continuation of several houses on both sides of a street, which growing waste was purchased, and applied to that use.

I

* However wild the description of the flying island, and the manners and various projects of the philosophers of Lagado may appear, yet it is a real picture embellished with much *latent* wit and humour. It is a satire upon those astronomers and mathematicians who have so entirely dedicated their time to the planets,

I was received very kindly by the warden, and went for many days to the academy. Every room hath in it one or more projectors; and I believe I could not be in fewer than five hundred rooms.

THE firſt man I ſaw was of a meagre aſpect, with ſooty hands and face, his hair and beard long, ragged and ſinged in ſeveral places. His cloaths, ſhirt, and ſkin, were all of the ſame colour. He had been eight years upon a project for extracting ſunbeams out of cucumbers, which were to be put into vials hermetically ſealed, and let out to warm the air in raw inclement ſummers. He told

nets, that they have been careleſs of their family and country, and have been chiefly anxious about the oeconomy and welfare of the upper worlds. But if we conſider Swift's romance in a ſerious light, we ſhall find him of opinion, that thoſe determinations in philoſophy, which at preſent ſeem to the moſt knowing men to be perfectly well-founded and underſtood, are in reality unſettled, or uncertain, and may perhaps ſome ages hence be as much decried as the axioms of Ariſtotle are at this day. Sir Iſaac Newton and his notions may hereafter be out of faſhion. There is a kind of mode in philoſophy as well as in other things: and ſuch modes often change more from the humour and caprice of men, than either from the unreaſonable, or the ill-founded concluſions of the philoſophy itſelf. The reaſonings of ſome philoſophers have undoubtedly better foundation than thoſe of others: but I am of opinion, (and Swift ſeems to be in the ſame way of thinking), that the moſt applauded philoſophy hitherto extant, has not fully, clearly, and certainly explained many difficulties in the phenomena of nature. I am induced to believe, that God may have abſolutely denied us the perfect knowledge of many points in philoſophy, ſo that we ſhall never arrive at that perfection, however certain we may ſuppoſe ourſelves of having attained to it already. Upon the whole, we may ſay with Tully, *Omnibus fere in rebus, et maxime in phyſicis, quid non ſit citius quam quid ſit, dixerim.*

Orrery.

This note in general ſeems to be a teſtimony of his Lordſhip's approbation, but it is not eaſy to diſcover what in particular is meant by the word *real*, ſince every picture is a real picture, whether it be copied from nature or fancy; and indeed it is equally difficult to conceive how a *picture* of any kind can be *embelliſhed* with that which is *hidden*. *Hawkeſ.*

told me, he did not doubt, that in eight years more he should be able to supply the governor's gardens with sunshine at a reasonable rate; but he complained that his stock was low, and entreated me to give him something as an encouragement to ingenuity, especially since this had been a very dear season for cucumbers. I made him a small present, for my Lord had furnished me with money on purpose, because he knew their practice of begging from all who go to see them.

I went into another chamber, but was ready to hasten back, being almost overcome with a horrible stink. My conductor pressed me forward, conjuring me in a whisper to give no offence, which would be highly resented, and therefore I durst not so much as stop my nose. The projector of this cell was the most antient student of the academy; his face and beard were of a pale yellow; his hands and cloaths dawbed over with filth. When I was presented to him he gave me a close embrace (a compliment I could well have excused). His employment from his first coming into the academy, was an operation to reduce human excrement to its original food by separating the several parts, removing the tincture which it receives from the gall, making the odour exhale, and scumming off the saliva. He had a weekly allowance from the society of a vessel filled with human odour about the bigness of a Bristol barrel.

I saw another at work to calcine ice into gun-powder, who likewise shewed me a treatise he had written concerning the malleability of fire, which he intended to publish.

THERE was a most ingenious architect, who had contrived a new method for building houses, by beginning at the roof and working downwards to the foundation, which he justified to me by the like practice of those two prudent insects, the bee and the spider.

THERE was a man born blind, who had several apprentices in his own condition: their employment was to mix colours for painters, which their master taught them to distinguish by feeling and smelling. It was indeed my misfortune to find them at that time not very perfect in their lessons, and the professor himself happened to be generally

nerally miſtaken. This artiſt is much encouraged and eſteemed by the whole fraternity.

In another apartment I was highly pleaſed with a projector, who had found a device of plowing the ground with hogs, to ſave the charges of ploughs, cattle and labour. The method is this: in an acre of ground you bury at ſix inches diſtance and eight deep a quantity of acorns, dates, cheſnuts, and other maſte or vegetables, whereof theſe animals are fondeſt: then you drive ſix hundred or more of them into the field, where in a few days they will root up the whole ground in ſearch of their food, and make it fit for ſowing, at the ſame time manuring it with their dung: it is true upon experiment they found the charge and trouble very great, and they had little or no crop. However, it is not doubted that this invention may be capable of great improvement.

I went into another room, where the walls and cieling were all hung round with cobwebs, except a narrow paſſage for the artiſt to go in and out. At my entrance he called aloud to me not to diſturb his webs. He lamented the fatal miſtake the world had been ſo long in of uſing ſilk-worms, while we had ſuch plenty of domeſtic inſects who infinitely excelled the former, becauſe they underſtood how to weave as well as ſpin. And he propoſed farther, that by employing ſpiders the charge of dying ſilks ſhould be wholly ſaved; whereof I was fully convinced, when he ſhewed me a vaſt number of flies moſt beautifully coloured, wherewith he fed his ſpiders, aſſuring us that the webs would take a tincture from them; and as he had them of all hues, he hoped to fit every body's fancy, as ſoon as he could find proper food for the flies of certain gums, oils, and other glutinous matter to give a ſtrength and conſiſtence to the threads.

There was an aſtronomer, who had undertaken to place a ſun-dial upon the great weather-cock on the town-houſe, by adjuſting the annual and diurnal motions of the earth and ſun, ſo as to anſwer and coincide with all accidental turnings of the wind.

I was complaining of a ſmall fit of the cholic, upon which my conductor led me into a room where a great phyſician reſided, who was famous for curing that diſeaſe by contrary operations from the ſame inſtrument. He had

had a large pair of bellows with a long ſlender muzzle of ivory: this he conveyed eight inches up the *anus*, and drawing in the wind he affirmed he could make the guts as lank as a dried bladder. But when the diſeaſe was more ſtubborn and violent, he let in the muzzle while the bellows were full of wind, which he diſcharged into the body of the patient; then withdrew the inſtrument to repleniſh it, clapping his thumb ſtrongly againſt the orifice of the fundament; and this being repeated three or four times, the adventitious wind would ruſh out, bringing the noxious along with it (like water put into a pump) and the patient recover. I ſaw him try both experiments upon a dog, but could not diſcern any effect from the former. After the latter the animal was ready to burſt, and made ſo violent a diſcharge, as was very offenſive to me and my companions. The dog died on the ſpot, and we left the doctor endeavouring to recover him by the ſame operation.

I viſited many other apartments, but ſhall not trouble my reader with all the curioſities I obſerved, being ſtudious of brevity.

I had hitherto ſeen only one ſide of the academy, the other being appropriated to the advancers of ſpeculative learning, of whom I ſhall ſay ſomething when I have mentioned one illuſtrious perſon more, who is called among them *the univerſal artiſt*. He told us, he had been thirty years employing his thoughts for the improvement of human life. He had two large rooms full of wonderful curioſities, and fifty men at work. Some were condenſing air into a dry tangible ſubſtance by extracting the nitre, and letting the aqueous or fluid particles perſpirate; others ſoftening marble for pillows and pincuſhions; others petrifying the hoofs of a living horſe to preſerve them from foundering. The artiſt himſelf was at that time buſy upon two great deſigns; the firſt to ſow land with chaff, wherein he affirmed the true ſeminal virtue to be contained, as he demonſtrated by ſeveral experiments, which I was not ſkilful enough to comprehend. The other was by a certain compoſition of gums, minerals, and vegetables, outwardly applied, to prevent the wth of wool upon two young lambs; and he hoped

in a reaſonable time to propagate the breed of naked ſheep all over the kingdom.

We croſſed a walk to the other part of the academy, where, as I have already ſaid, the projectors in ſpeculative learning reſided.

The firſt profeſſor I ſaw was in a very large room with forty pupils about him. After ſalutation obſerving me to look earneſtly upon a frame, which took up the greateſt part of both the length and breadth of the room, he ſaid, perhaps I might wonder to ſee him employed in a project for improving ſpeculative knowledge by practical and mechanical operations. But the world would ſoon be ſenſible of its uſefulneſs; and he flattered himſelf, that a more noble exalted thought never ſprang in any other man's head. Every one knew, how laborious the uſual method is of attaining to arts and ſciences; whereas by his contrivance the moſt ignorant perſon at a reaſonable charge, and with a little bodily labour, might write books in philoſophy, poetry, politics, law, mathematics, and theology, without the leaſt aſſiſtance from genius or ſtudy. He then led me to the frame, about the ſides whereof all his pupils ſtood in ranks. It was twenty feet ſquare, placed in the middle of the room. The ſuperficies was compoſed of ſeveral bits of wood about the bigneſs of a dye, but ſome larger than others. They were all linked together by ſlender wires. Theſe bits of wood were covered on every ſquare with paper paſted on them; and on theſe papers were written all the words of their language in their ſeveral moods, tenſes, and declenſions; but without any order. The profeſſor then deſired me to obſerve; for he was going to ſet his engine at work. The pupils at his command took each of them hold of an iron handle, whereof there were forty fixed round the edges of the frame; and giving them a ſudden turn, the whole diſpoſition of the words was entirely changed. He then commanded ſix and thirty of the lads to read the ſeveral lines ſoftly as they appeared upon the frame; and where they found three or four words together that might make part of a ſentence, they dictated to the four remaining boys, who were ſcribes. This work was repeated three or four times, and at every turn the engine was

was so contrived, that the words shifted into new places, as the square bits of wood moved upside down.

Six hours a day the young students were employed in this labour, and the professor shewed me several volumes in large folio already collected of broken sentences which he intended to piece together, and out of those rich materials to give the world a compleat body of all arts and sciences; which however might be still improved and much expedited, if the public would raise a fund for making and employing five hundred such frames in Lagado, and oblige the managers to contribute in common their several collections.

He assured me, that this invention had employed all his thoughts from his youth; that he had emptied the whole vocabulary into his frame, and made the strictest computation of the general proportion there is in books between the numbers of particles, nouns, and verbs, and other parts of speech *.

I made my humblest acknowledgment to this illustrious person for his great communicativeness; and promised, if ever I had the good fortune to return to my native country, that I would do him justice as the sole inventor of this wonderful machine; the form and contrivance of which I desired leave to delineate upon paper, as in the figure here annexed. I told him, altho' it were the custom of our learned in Europe to steal inventions from each other, who had thereby at least this advantage, that it became a controversy which was the right owner; yet I would take such caution, that he should have the honour entire without a rival.

We next went to the school of languages, where three professors sat in consultation upon improving that of their own country.

* The project for a more easy and expeditious method of writing a treatise in any science, by a wooden engine, is entertainingly satirical; and is aimed at those authors, who, instead of receiving materials from their own thoughts and observations, collect from dictionaries and common-place books, an irregular variety, without order, use, or design:

Ut nec pes nec caput uni
Reddatur formæ. Ogilby.

THE firſt project was to ſhorten diſcourſe by cutting polyſyllables into one, and leaving out verbs and participles; becauſe in reality all things imaginable are but nouns *.

THE other project was a ſcheme for entirely aboliſhing all words whatſoever; and this was urged as a great advantage in point of health, as well as brevity. For it is plain, that every word we ſpeak is in ſome degree a diminution of our lungs by corroſion; and conſequently contributes to the ſhortening of our lives. An expedient was therefore offered, that ſince words are only names for *things*, it would be more convenient for all men to carry about them ſuch *things* as were neceſſary to expreſs the particular buſineſs they are to diſcourſe on. And this invention would certainly have taken place, to the great eaſe as well as health of the ſubject, if the women in conjunction with the vulgar and illiterate had not threatened to raiſe a rebellion, unleſs they might be allowed the liberty to ſpeak with their tongues after the manner of their forefathers; ſuch conſtant irreconcileable enemies to ſcience are the common people. However, many of the moſt learned and wiſe adhere to the new ſcheme of expreſſing themſelves by *things*; which hath only this inconvenience attending it, that if a man's buſineſs be very great and of various kinds, he muſt be obliged in proportion to carry a greater bundle of *things* upon his back, unleſs he can afford one or two ſtrong ſervants to attend him. I have often beheld two of thoſe ſages almoſt ſinking under the weight of their packs, like pedlars among us; who, when they met in the ſtreets, would lay down their loads, open their ſacks, and hold converſation for an hour together; then put up their implements, help each other to reſume their burdens, and take their leave.

BUT

* This project is pointed at the pernicious cuſtom of contracting the Engliſh language, the dialect of which is naturally harſh, and that harſhneſs is ſtill increaſed by improper contractions. As Swift was ſcrupulouſly exact in the pronunciation of his own tongue, not the leaſt improper expreſſion ever eſcaped his cenſure. And I remember to have ſeen in manuſcript a *dictionary* of hard words, compoſed by him for the uſe of his *female* ſenate. *Orrery.*

But for short conversations a man may carry implements in his pockets, and under his arms enough to supply him; and in his house he cannot be at a loss. Therefore the room, where company meet who practise this art, is full of all *things* ready at hand requisite to furnish matter for this kind of artificial converse.

Another great advantage proposed by this invention was, that it would serve as an universal language to be understood in all civilized nations, whose goods and utensils are generally of the same kind, or nearly resembling, so that their uses might easily be comprehended. And thus ambassadors would be qualified to treat with foreign princes, or ministers of state, to whose tongues they were utter strangers.

I was at the mathematical school, where the master taught his pupils after a method scarce imaginable to us in Europe. The proposition and demonstration were fairly written on a thin wafer with ink composed of a cephalic tincture. This the student was to swallow upon a fasting stomach, and for three days following eat nothing but bread and water. As the wafer digested, the tincture mounted to his brain, bearing the proposition along with it. But the success hath not hitherto been answerable, partly by some error in the *quantum* or composition, and partly by the perverseness of lads; to whom this bolus is so nauseous, that they generally steal aside and discharge it upwards, before it can operate; neither have they been yet persuaded to use so long an abstinence as the prescription requires.

CHAP. VI*.

A further account of the academy. The author proposes some improvements, which are honourably received.

In the school of political projectors I was but ill entertained; the professors appearing in my judgment wholly out of their senses; which is a scene that never

* This chapter is full of severity and satire. Sometimes it is exerted against the legislative power; sometimes against par-

fails to make me melancholy. Theſe unhappy people were propoſing ſchemes for perſuading monarchs to chooſe favourites upon the ſcore of their wiſdom, capacity, and virtue; of teaching miniſters to conſult the public good; of rewarding merit, great abilities, and eminent ſervices; of inſtructing princes to know their true intereſt, by placing it on the ſame foundation with that of their people; of chooſing for employments perſons qualified to exerciſe them; with many other wild impoſſible chimæras that never entered before into the heart of man to conceive; and confirmed in me the old obſervation, that there is nothing ſo extravagant and irrational, which ſome philoſophers have not maintained for truth.

But however I ſhall ſo far do juſtice to this part of the academy, as to acknowledge that all of them were not ſo viſionary. There was a moſt ingenious doctor, who ſeemed to be perfectly verſed in the whole nature and ſyſtem of government. This illuſtrious perſon had very uſefully employed his ſtudies in finding out effectual remedies for all diſeaſes and corruptions, to which the ſeveral kinds of public adminiſtration are ſubject by the vices or infirmities of thoſe who govern, as well as by the licentiouſneſs of thoſe who are to obey. For inſtance; whereas all writers and reaſoners have agreed, that there is a ſtrict univerſal reſemblance between the natural and the political body; can there be any thing more evident, than that the health of both muſt be preſerved and the diſeaſes cured by the ſame preſcriptions? It is allowed, that ſenates and great councils are often troubled

ticular politicians; ſometimes againſt women; and ſometimes it degenerates into filth. True humour ought to be kept up with decency and dignity, or it loſes every tincture of entertainment. Deſcriptions that ſhock our delicacy, cannot have the leaſt good effect upon our minds. They offend us, and we fly precipitately from the ſight. We cannot ſtay long enough to examine, whether wit, ſenſe, or morality, may be couched under ſuch odious appearances. I am ſorry to ſay, that theſe ſort of deſcriptions, which are too often interſperſed throughout all Swift's works, are ſeldom written with any other view, or from any other motive, than a wild unbridled indulgence of his own humour and diſpoſition. *Orrery.*

bled with redundant, ebullient, and other peccant humours; with many diſeaſes of the head, and more of the heart; with ſtrong convulſions, with grievous contractions of the nerves and ſinews in both hands, but eſpecially the right; with ſpleen, flatus, vertigos and deliriums; with ſcrophulous tumours full of fœtid purulent matter; with ſour frothy ructations; with canine appetites, and crudeneſs of digeſtion; beſides many others needleſs to mention. This doctor therefore propoſed, that upon the meeting of a ſenate certain phyſicians ſhould attend at the three firſt days of their ſitting, and at the cloſe of each day's debate feel the pulſes of every ſenator; after which, having maturely conſidered and conſulted upon the nature of the ſeveral maladies and the methods of cure, they ſhould on the fourth day return to the ſenate-houſe attended by their apothecaries ſtored with proper medicines; and before the members ſat, adminiſter to each of them lenitives, aperitives, abſterſives, corroſives, reſtringents, palliatives, laxatives, cephalalgics, icterics, apophlegmatics, acouſtics, as their ſeveral caſes required; and according as theſe medicines ſhould operate, repeat, alter, or omit them at the next meeting.

This project could not be of any great expence to the public; and might in my poor opinion be of much uſe for the diſpatch of buſineſs in thoſe countries, where ſenates have any ſhare in the legiſlative power; beget unanimity, ſhorten debates, open a few mouths which are now cloſed, and cloſe many more which are now open; curb the petulancy of the young, and correct the poſitiveneſs of the old; rouze the ſtupid, and damp the pert.

Again, becauſe it is a general complaint, that the favourites of princes are troubled with ſhort and weak memories; the ſame doctor propoſed, that whoever attended a firſt miniſter, after having told his buſineſs with the utmoſt brevity and in the plaineſt words, ſhould at his departure give the ſaid miniſter a tweak by the noſe, or a kick in the belly, or tread on his corns, or lug him thrice by both ears, or run a pin into his breech, or pinch his arm black and blue, to prevent forgetfulneſs: and at every levee-day repeat the ſame operation, till the buſineſs were done, or abſolutely refuſed.

He likewiſe directed, that every ſenator in the great council

council of a nation, after he had delivered his opinion, and argued in the defence of it, ſhould be obliged to give his vote directly contrary; becauſe, if that were done, the reſult would infallibly terminate in the good of the public.

When parties in a ſtate are violent, he offered a wonderful contrivance to reconcile them. The method is this: you take an hundred leaders of each party; you diſpoſe them into couples of ſuch whoſe heads are neareſt of a ſize; then let two nice operators ſaw off the *ſeciput* of each couple at the ſame time, in ſuch a manner that the brain may be equally divided. Let the *ſeciputs* thus cut off be interchanged, applying each to the head of his oppoſite party-man. It ſeems indeed to be a work that requireth ſome exactneſs; but the profeſſor aſſured us, that if it were dextrouſly performed the cure would be infallible. For he argued thus; that the two half brains being left to debate the matter between themſelves within the ſpace of one ſcull, would ſoon come to a good underſtanding, and produce that moderation, as well as regularity of thinking, ſo much to be wiſhed for in the heads of thoſe, who imagine they come into the world only to watch and govern its motion: and as to the difference of brains in quantity or quality, among thoſe who are directors in faction; the doctor aſſured us, from his own knowledge, that it was a perfect trifle.

I heard a very warm debate between two profeſſors about the moſt commodious and effectual ways and means of raiſing money without grieving the ſubject. The firſt affirmed, the juſted method would be to lay a certain tax upon vices and folly; and the ſum fixed upon every man to be rated after the faireſt manner by a jury of his neighbours. The ſecond was of an opinion directly contrary; to tax thoſe qualities of body and mind, for which men chiefly value themſelves; the rate to be more or leſs according to the degrees of excelling; the deciſion whereof ſhould be left entirely to their own breaſt. The higheſt tax was upon men who are the greateſt favourites of the other ſex, and the aſſeſſments according to the number and natures of the favours they have received; for which they are allowed to be their own vouchers. Wit, valour, and politeneſs were likewiſe propoſed to be large*ly taxed*, and collected in the ſame manner, by every perſon's

perſon's giving his own word for the quantum of what he poſſeſſed. But as to honour, juſtice, wiſdom, and learning, they ſhould not be taxed at all; becauſe they are qualifications of ſo ſingular a kind, that no man will either allow them in his neighbour, or value them in himſelf.

The women were propoſed to be taxed according to their beauty and ſkill in dreſſing; wherein they had the ſame privilege with the men, to be determined by their own judgment. But conſtancy, chaſtity, good ſenſe, and good nature were not rated, becauſe they would not bear the charge of collecting.

To keep ſenators in the intereſt of the crown, it was propoſed, that the members ſhould raffle for employments; every man firſt taking an oath, and giving ſecurity, that he would vote for the court, whether he won or no; after which the loſers had in their turn the liberty of raffling upon the next vacancy. Thus hope and expectation would be kept alive; none would complain of broken promiſes, but impute their diſappointments wholly to fortune, whoſe ſhoulders are broader and ſtronger than thoſe of a miniſtry.

Another profeſſor ſhewed me a large paper of inſtructions for diſcovering plots and conſpiracies againſt the government. He adviſed great ſtateſmen to examine into the diet of all ſuſpected perſons; their times of eating; upon which ſide they lay in bed; with which hand they wiped their poſteriors; to take a ſtrict view of their excrements; and from the colour, the odour, the taſte, the conſiſtence, the crudeneſs, or maturity of digeſtion, form a judgment of their thoughts and deſigns. Becauſe men are never ſo ſerious, thoughtful, and intent, as when they are at ſtool, which he found by frequent experiment: for in ſuch conjunctures, when he uſed merely as a trial to conſider which was the beſt way of murdering the King, his ordure would have a tincture of green; but quite different, when he thought only of raiſing an inſurrection, or burning the metropolis.

The whole diſcourſe was written with great acuteneſs, containing many obſervations both curious and uſeful for politicians; but, as I conceived, not altogether compleat. This I ventured to tell the author, and offered if he plea-

ſed

ſed to ſupply him with ſome additions. He received my propoſition with more compliance than is uſual among writers, eſpecially thoſe of the projecting ſpecies; profeſſing he would be glad to receive farther information.

I told him, that in the kingdom of Tribnia, by the natives called Langdon, where I had ſojourned ſome time in my travels, the bulk of the people conſiſt in a manner wholly of diſcoverers, witneſſes, informers, accuſers, proſecutors, evidences, ſwearers, together with their ſeveral ſubſervient and ſubaltern inſtruments, all under the colours, the conduct, and pay of miniſters of ſtate and their deputies. The plots in that kingdom are uſually the workmanſhip of thoſe perſons who deſire to raiſe their own characters of profound politicians; to reſtore new vigour to a crazy adminiſtration; to ſtifle or divert general diſcontents; to fill their coffers with forfeitures; and raiſe or ſink the opinion of public credit, as either ſhall beſt anſwer their private advantage. It is firſt agreed and ſettled among them, what ſuſpected perſons ſhall be accuſed of a plot; then, effectual care is taken to ſecure all their letters and papers, and put the owners in chains. Theſe papers are delivered to a ſet of artiſts, very dextrous in finding out the myſterious meanings of words, ſyllables, and letters: for inſtance, they can diſcover a cloſe-ſtool to ſignify a privy-council; a flock of geeſe, a ſenate; a lame dog *, an invader; the plague, a ſtanding army; a buzzard, a prime miniſter; the gout, a high prieſt; a gibbet, a ſecretary of ſtate; a chamber-pot, a committee of grandees; a ſieve, a court-lady; a broom, a revolution; a mouſe-trap, an employment; a bottomleſs pit, a treaſury; a ſink, a court; a cap and bells, a favourite; a broken reed, a court of juſtice; an empty tun, a general; a running ſore, the adminiſtration.

When this method fails, they have two others more effectual, which the learned among them call *acroſtics* and *anagrams*. *Firſt*, they can decypher all initial letters into political meanings. Thus, *N* ſhall ſignify a plot, *B*, a regiment of horſe, *L*, a fleet at ſea: or, *ſecondly*,

* *See the* proceedings againſt Dr. Atterbury, Biſhop of Rochester, State-Trials, vol. 6.

condly, by transposing the letters of the alphabet in any suspected paper, they can lay open the deepest designs of a discontented party. So, for example, if I should say in a letter to a friend, *Our brother Tom has just got the piles*, a skilful decypherer would discover, that the same letters, which compose that sentence, may be analysed into the following words, *Resist——a plot is brought home——The Tour*. And this is the anagrammatic method.

The professor made me great acknowledgments for communicating these observations, and promised to make honourable mention of me in this treatise.

I saw nothing in this country that could invite me to a longer continuance, and began to think of returning home to England.

CHAP. VII*.

The author leaves Lagado, *arrives at* Maldonada. *No ship ready. He takes a short voyage to* Glubbdubdrib. *His reception by the governor.*

THE continent, of which this kingdom is a part, extends itself, as I have reason to believe, eastward to that unknown tract of America westward of California,

* Gulliver seems to have finished his voyage to Laputa in a careless hurrying manner; which makes me almost think, that sometimes he was tired with his work, and attempted to run thro' it as fast as he could; otherwise why was the curtain dropt so soon; or why were we deprived of so noble a scene as might have been discovered in the island of Glubbdubdrib, where the governor, by his skill in necromancy, had the power of calling whom he pleased from the dead. I have not time by this post to write to you my thoughts upon a subject, which I confess awakened, but by no means satisfied my curiosity. I lamented to find so many illustrious ghosts vanish so quickly and so abruptly from my sight, many of whom were of the brightest characters in history. In my next letter I shall endeavour to detain them a little longer in Leicester fields, than Swift suffered them to stay in the island of Sorcerers. *Orrery*.

lifornia, and north to the Pacific ocean, which is not above a hundred and fifty miles from Lagado, where there is a good port, and much commerce with the great iſland of Luggnagg, ſituated to the north-weſt about 29 degrees north latitude, and 140 longitude. This iſland of Luggnagg ſtands ſouth-eaſtward of Japan, about an hundred leagues diſtant. There is a ſtrict alliance between the Japaneſe Emperor and the King of Luggnagg, which affords frequent opportunities of ſailing from one iſland to the other. I determined therefore to direct my courſe this way in order to my return to Europe. I hired two mules, with a guide, to ſhew me the way, and carry my ſmall baggage. I took leave of my noble protector, who had ſhewn me ſo much favour, and made me a generous preſent at my departure.

My journey was without any accident or adventure worth relating. When I arrived at the port of Maldonada (for ſo it is called) there was no ſhip in the harbour bound for Luggnagg, nor like to be in ſome time. The town is about as large as Portſmouth. I ſoon fell into ſome acquaintance, and was very hoſpitably received. A gentleman of diſtinction ſaid to me, that ſince the ſhips bound for Luggnagg could not be ready in leſs than a month, it might be no diſagreeable amuſement for me to take a trip to the little iſland of Glubbdubdrib, about five leagues off to the ſouth-weſt. He offered himſelf and a friend to accompany me, and that I ſhould be provided with a ſmall convenient barque for the voyage.

Glubbdubdrib, as nearly as I can interpret the word, ſignifies the iſland of Sorcerers or Magicians. It is about one third as large as the Iſle of Wight, and extremely fruitful: it is governed by the head of a certain tribe, who are all magicians. This tribe marries only among each other, and the eldeſt in ſucceſſion is prince or governor. He hath a noble palace, and a park of about three thouſand acres, ſurrounded by a wall of hewn ſtone twenty feet high. In this park are ſeveral ſmall incloſures for cattle, corn, and gardening.

The governor and his family are ſerved and attended by domeſtics of a kind ſomewhat unuſual. By his ſkill in necromancy he hath a power of calling whom he pleaſeth from the dead, and commanding their ſervice for twenty

twenty four hours, but no longer; nor can he call the ſame perſons up again in leſs than three months, except upon very extraordinary occaſions.

When we arrived at the iſland, which was about eleven in the morning, one of the gentlemen, who accompanied me, went to the governor, and deſired admittance for a ſtranger, who came on purpoſe to have the honour of attending on his highneſs. This was immediately granted, and we all three entered the gate of the palace, between two rows of guards armed and dreſſed after a very antic manner, and ſomething in their countenances that made my fleſh creep with a horror I cannot expreſs. We paſſed through ſeveral apartments between ſervants of the ſame ſort, ranked on each ſide, as before, till we came to the chamber of preſence, where, after three profound obeyſances, and a few general queſtions, we were permitted to ſit on three ſtools near the loweſt ſtep of his highneſs's throne. He underſtood the language of Balnibarbi, although it were different from that of this iſland. He deſired me to give him ſome account of my travels; and, to let me ſee that I ſhould be treated without ceremony, he diſmiſſed all his attendants with a turn of his finger, at which to my great aſtoniſhment they vaniſhed in an inſtant, like viſions in a dream when we awake on a ſudden. I could not recover myſelf in ſome time, till the governor aſſured me, that I ſhould receive no hurt; and obſerving my two companions to be under no concern, who had been often entertained in the ſame manner, I began to take courage, and related to his highneſs a ſhort hiſtory of my ſeveral adventures; yet not without ſome heſitation, and frequently looking behind me to the place, where I had ſeen thoſe domeſtic ſpectres. I had the honour to dine with the governor, where a new ſett of ghoſts ſerved up the meat, and waited at table. I now obſerved myſelf to be leſs terrified, than I had been in the morning. I ſtaid till ſun-ſet, but humbly deſired his highneſs to excuſe me for not accepting his invitation of lodging in the palace. My two friends and I lay at a private houſe in the town adjoining, which is the capital of this little iſland; and the next morning we returned to pay our duty to the governor, as he was pleaſed to command us.

After this manner we continued in the iſland for ten days, moſt part of every day with the governor, and at night in our lodging. I ſoon grew ſo familiarized to the ſight of ſpirits, that after the third or fourth time they gave me no emotion at all; or if I had any apprehenſions left, my curioſity prevailed over them. For his highneſs the governor ordered me to call up whatever perſons I would chuſe to name, and in whatever numbers, among all the dead from the beginning of the world to the preſent time, and command them to anſwer any queſtions I ſhould think fit to aſk; with this condition, that my queſtions muſt be confined within the compaſs of the times they lived in. And one thing I might depend upon, that they would certainly tell me truth, for lying was a talent of no uſe in the lower world. I made my humble acknowledgments to his highneſs for ſo great a favour *. We were in a chamber, from whence there was a fair proſpect into the park. And, becauſe my firſt inclination was to be entertained with ſcenes of pomp and magnificence, I deſired to ſee Alexander the Great at the head of his army juſt after the battle of Arbela, which, upon a motion of the governor's finger, immediately appeared in a large field under the window where we ſtood. Alexander was called up into the room: it was with great difficulty that I underſtood his Greek, and had but little of my own. He aſſured me upon his honour, that he was not poiſoned, but died of a fever by exceſſive drinking †.

Next

* I believe it would be impoſſible to find out the deſign of Dr. Swift, in ſummoning up a parcel of apparitions, that, from their behaviour, or from any thing they ſay, are almoſt of as little conſequence, as the ghoſts in Gay's farce of the *What d' ye call it.* Perhaps Swift's general deſign might be to arraign the conduct of eminent perſons after their death, and to convey their names and images to poſterity, deprived of thoſe falſe colours in which they formerly appeared. If theſe were his intentions, he has miſſed his aim; or at leaſt has been ſo far carried away by his diſpoſition to raillery, that the moral which ought to ariſe from ſuch a fable, is buried in obſcurity. *Orrery.*

† The firſt airy ſubſtance introduced is Alexander the Great. *After* a hint from Gulliver, that we have loſt the true Greek idiom,

NEXT I saw Hannibal passing the Alps, who told me, he had not a drop of vinegar in his camp *.

I

idiom, the conqueror of the universe is made to declare upon his honour, "that he died by excessive drinking, not by poi-"son." A trifling and an improper observation, because the apparition is called up as he appeared at the head of his army, just after the battle of Arbela. I own my expectations were great, when I found his appearance was to be at that particular juncture. Or rather I could have wished to have seen him after the battle of *ISSUS*, when the temperate use which he made of his victory was highly worthy of imitation. Such a circumstance might have graced his triumph. There are others too in the historical records of him, that redound to his honour. The tender regard which he shewed to Pindar, by sparing the house of that poet, when he razed the city of Thebes, seems to demand perpetual gratitude from all succeeding bards. The manner in which he visited the tomb of Achilles; the affection and respect paid by him to Aristotle; the undaunted confidence placed in his physician Philip; are instances sufficient to shew, that Alexander did not want some virtues of humanity. And when we consider several of his rash actions of inebriety, they convince us, how far the native excellencies of the mind may be debased and changed by passions which too often attend success and luxury,

Utcunque defecere mores
Dedecorant bene nata culpae.

It is evident, that Swift had conceived an absolute disgust to Alexander, whose character he aims to destroy, by touching it in so slight a manner, that he puts me in mind of the visit paid by Augustus Caesar to Alexander's sepulchre at Alexandria. Upon the Emperor's arrival, the body of the Macedonian hero was found in its full dimensions, but so tender, notwithstanding all the former imbalming, that Caesar, by touching only the nose of it, defaced the whole figure immediately. *Orrery.*

In this passage there is a peculiar beauty, though it is not discovered at an hasty view. The appearance of Alexander with a victorious army immediately after the battle of Arbela, produces only a declaration that he died by drunkenness; thus inadequate and ridiculous in the eye of reason is the ultimate purpose for which Alexander with his army marched into a remote country, subverted a mighty empire, and deluged a nation with blood; he gained no more than an epithet to his name, which after a few repetitions was no longer regarded even by himself: thus the purpose of his resurrection appears to be at least equally important with that of his life, upon which it is a satire not more bitter than just. *Hawkes.*

* Hannibal seems to have been summoned with no other view than to censure Livy the historian. It is not only improbable,

I ſaw Caeſar and Pompey at the head of their troops juſt ready to engage. I ſaw the former in his laſt great triumph. I deſired, that the ſenate of Rome might appear before me in one large chamber, and a modern repreſentative in counterview in another. The firſt ſeemed to be an aſſembly of heroes and demy-gods, the other a knot of pedlars, pick-pockets, highwaymen, and bullies.

The governor at my requeſt gave the ſign for Caeſar and Brutus to advance towards us. I was ſtruck with a profound

but impoſſible, that Hannibal ſhould have carried a ſufficient quantity of vinegar for the purpoſe related by Livy: but as vinegar will certainly ſoften and diſſolve ſtones, the experiment might have been improved, or ſo contrived by Hannibal, as to appear to make an eaſy and expeditious opening through ſome particular paſſage already fitted for the purpoſe. Such a trial practiſed in that age of darkneſs, and properly managed, might have been univerſally received as a kind of miracle: ſo that Livy could ſcarce have avoided inſerting the report as an acknowledged truth; eſpecially as the fact itſelf ſeems to infer that the Romans were invincible, unleſs from ſome ſupernatural cauſe. Swift, no friend to military men, thinks the Carthaginian general unworthy of any farther notice, and haſtens to call up the ſenate of Rome. This gives him an opportunity of being very ſevere upon a certain modern aſſembly, which he treats in a manner more reſembling the cynic in his cell, than the free-humoured Rabelais in his eaſy chair. *Orrery.*

Livy the Roman hiſtorian has related, that Hannibal burnt a great pile of wood upon a rock that ſtopped his paſſage, and when it was thus heated poured *vinegar* upon it, by which it was made ſo ſoft as to be eaſily cut through. *Hawkeſ.*

Gulliver's account of his entertainment at Glubbdubdrib is ſtrangely and whimſically diverting. Alexander the Great, at the head of his army juſt after the battle of Arbela, aſſured Gulliver upon his honour, that he was not poiſoned, but died of a fever by exceſſive drinking. And afterwards Hannibal paſſing the Alps, declared to him, that he had not a drop of vinegar in his camp. How ridiculous, how contemptible are theſe plagues of the world, theſe deſtroyers of the human race, when ſtripped of their royalty and command, as well as their ability to perpetrate any further miſchief?

——Mors ſola fatetur
Quantula ſint hominum corpuſcula. Juv. ſat. 10.

Swift.

profound veneration at the ſight of Brutus, and could eaſily diſcover the moſt conſummate virtue, the greateſt intrepidity and firmneſs of mind, the trueſt love of his country, and general benevolence for mankind, in every lineament of his countenance. I obſerved with much pleaſure, that theſe two perſons were in good intelligence with each other; and Caeſar freely confeſſed to me, that the greateſt actions of his own life were not equal, by many degrees, to the glory of taking it away. I had the honour to have much converſation with Brutus; and was told, that his anceſtor Junius, Socrates, Epaminondas, Cato the younger, Sir Thomas Moore, and himſelf, were perpetually together: a *ſextumvirate*, to which all the ages of the world cannot add a ſeventh *.

It

* Pompey and Caeſar only appear to grace the entry of Brutus, who is Swift's favourite patriot. But as Caeſar generouſly confeſſed to Gulliver, "that the greateſt actions of his life were not equal, by many degrees, to the glory of taking it away;" it would have been a proper alleviation of the Dictator's crimes, to have acknowledged him the greateſt ſtateſman, orator, and ſoldier of the age in which he lived; an age fertile of eminent men; an age when ambition was ſcarce looked upon as a crime; and when the Roman virtue, (once the ſupport and preſervation of the commonwealth) was long ſince loſt in vice and luxury. At ſuch a time a ſingle maſter was become neceſſary, and Pompey would have ſeized the reins of government, had not Caeſar interpoſed. If the conſpirators had reſtored liberty to their country, their act had been completely glorious, and would have ſhewed, that Caeſar, not Rome, was degenerated. But if we may judge from the conſequences, Heaven diſapproved of the deed. A particular fate attended the conſpirators, not one of whom died a natural death. And even Brutus, perhaps recollecting in his laſt moments the benefits which he had received from Caeſar, was ſtaggered in his thoughts of virtue, and imagining himſelf deceived by a ſhadow, broke out into a pathetical expreſſion, ſignifying, "that he had worſhipped virtue "as a ſubſtance, and had found it only a ſhadow:" ſo that he ſeems to have wanted that fortitude of mind, which conſtantly attends true virtue to the grave. This defect in the character of Brutus is not improperly expreſſed in the famous gallery of the Great Duke of Tuſcany, where there is a very fine head of Brutus, begun by Michael Angelo, but left unfiniſhed: under it is ingraven upon a copper-plate this diſtich,

Dum BRUTI *effigiem ſculptor de marmore ducit,*
In mentem ferri venit, et abſtinuit.

It would be tedious to trouble the reader with relating, what vaſt numbers of illuſtrious perſons were called up to gratify that inſatiable deſire I had to ſee the world

If Brutus erred, it was from a wrong notion of virtue. The character of Caeſar is perhaps more amiable, but leſs perfect. His faults were great; however, many of them were foils to his virtues. A modern eminent writer has repreſented him as a glutton. He tells us, that when Caeſar went to the public feaſts, he conſtantly took a vomit in the morning, with a deſign to indulge himſelf with more keenneſs, and to increaſe his appetite for the enſuing feaſt. The fact is true, but I would willingly believe the inference unjuſt. It is more than probable, that he practiſed this cuſtom by the advice of his phyſicians, who might direct ſuch a regimen as the moſt certain and immediate preſervation againſt epileptic fits, to which the Dictator was often liable. My honoured father, who was excelled by few phyſicians in the theory of phyſic, has often told me, that thoſe kinds of convulſions were of ſuch a nature as generally to come on after eating, and more violently if the ſtomach was overloaded. Caeſar was ſo careful in obſerving a decent dignity in his behaviour, that he dreaded the ſhame of expoſing publicly this weakneſs in his conſtitution; and therefore guarded againſt it in a prudent manner, which has ſince been conſtrued into a reproach. This ſurmiſe reſts upon the ſtronger foundation, as all authors agree, that he was moſt ſtrictly and remarkably abſtemious.

In his public character, Caeſar appears a ſtrong example, how far the greateſt natural and acquired accompliſhments may loſe their luſtre, when made ſubſervient to falſe glory, and an immoderate thirſt of power; as, on the other hand, the hiſtory of Brutus may inſtruct us, what unhappy effects the rigid exerciſe of ſuperior virtue, when miſapplied and carried too far, may produce in the moſt ſtedfaſt mind, or the ſoundeſt judgment.

Gulliver has given to Brutus five companions, Junius Brutus, Socrates, Epaminondas, Cato the Cenſor, and Sir Thomas Moore. Such a ſextumvirate is not eaſily to be increaſed: yet let me hope, that the reflection is too ſeverely critical, when he adds, "that all the ages of the world cannot furniſh out a "ſeventh." Every age has produced men of virtue and abilities in the higheſt degree. The race of mankind, ſince their firſt creation, have been always the ſame. The greateſt characters have been blended with the greateſt faults. Poets and hiſtorians have fingled out particular perſons for fame and immortality: they have adorned them with accompliſhments which perhaps they never poſſeſſed, while other men equally meritorious have been ſilently buried in oblivion, with only the ſelf-conſciouſneſs

world in every period of antiquity placed before me. I chiefly fed mine eyes with beholding the destroyers of tyrants and usurpers, and the restorers of liberty to oppressed

self-consciousness of deserving a rank among the companions of Brutus in the Elysian fields.

In this illustrious sextumvirate, Socrates and Sir Thomas Moore undoubtedly deserve the pre-eminence. The extravagant virtue of Junius Brutus is shocking to every parent, and every good-natured mind. The important services of the father might justly have claimed from the public the pardon of his sons: and when his paternal piety had saved their lives, his precepts and example might so effectually have reclaimed their errors, as to have made them become useful members of the commonwealth. I am fully persuaded, that if Dr. Swift had been a father, we should not have found the name of Junius Brutus where it is now placed.

In Epaminondas the Theban glory first appeared, and died. His own merit, in overcoming the greatest difficulties, entirely fixed his reputation. A happy concurrence of circumstances has often given fame to others; but Epaminondas was indebted for his superior character only to himself.

I am in some doubt, whether Cato the Censor can fairly claim a rank among so choice a group of ghosts *. He justly indeed condemned the luxury of the Romans, and he punished their vices with an impartial severity. But herein he seems to have indulged his own natural temper, rather than to have acted absolutely from a love of virtue. He was a declared enemy to poetry, painting, and all the politer arts. He was proud, vain, and morose. But, above all, he was so extremely avaricious, that Rhadamanthus, in the Archbishop of Cambray's dialogues of the dead, after expressing some regard to his merits, tells him, as he was an usurer, he could not be admitted into the Elysian fields; and therefore orders him to keep the gate as porter; in which situation he might gratify the consciousness of his disposition, by examining every [illegible] that attempted to come into Elysium, and by shutting the door against all those who were not qualified for admittance. Rhadamanthus then gives him money, to pay Charon for such passengers who were not able to pay for themselves; and at the same time declares, that he will punish him as a robber, if he offers to lend out that money upon usury. How very different are the sentiments of

* *This note of his Lordship is an encomium on the judgment of our author, who knew that Cato the Censor and Cato the younger were very different persons, and for good reasons preferred the latter.* Hawkes.

preſſed and injured nations. But it is impoſſible to expreſs the ſatisfaction I received in my own mind, after ſuch a manner as to make it a ſuitable entertainment to the reader.

CHAP.

of Abp Fenelon, and of Dr. Swift, in their judgment of Cato? The one thinks him unworthy of a place among millions in Elyſium, while the other diſtinguiſhes him among the greateſt men of antiquity. From this diſſenſion of opinions may be traced, perhaps, the particular temper both of the Archbiſhop and of the Dean; and from thence may be deduced the reaſon why the Cenſor was eſteemed by the latter, and condemned by the former. *Orrery.*

The noble author finiſhes his remarks on this ſeventh chapter, by obſerving, that "Gulliver, after having taken a tranſient "view of numberleſs illuſtrious perſons, whom he does not "name, cloſes the chapter, and gives him an opportunity of fi-"niſhing his letter;" and then addreſſes his ſon thus: "Late, "very late, may you become a ghoſt; and when one, may you "equal any of Swift's ſextumvirate: and may his ghoſt (grown "leſs cynical and better inſtructed) rejoice to admit your into the "company, from which he has ſo arbitrarily excluded all future "generations!"

Gulliver has not excluded all future generations from adding to this ſextumvirate. For he ſpeaks only of the time paſt. What Cato's may appear to bleſs the world, and oppoſe the torrent of corruption, in after ages, God only knows. *Swift.*

CHAP. VIII.

A further account of Glubbdubdrib. *Ancient and modern history corrected.*

HAVING a desire to see those ancients, who were most renowned for wit and learning, I set apart one day on purpose. * I proposed that Homer and Aristotle might appear at the head of all their commentators; but these were so numerous, that some hundreds were

* Gulliver, tired of heroes, changes the scene in this 8th chapter, and becomes curious to know the situation of poets and philosophers, who, in their turn, have as eagerly contended for fame, as Cæsar did for power, or Brutus for liberty. He desires, that Homer and Aristotle may make their appearance at the head of their commentators. "Homer, says our traveller, "was the tallest and comeliest person of the two; walked very erect for one of his age, and his eyes were the most "quick and piercing I ever beheld." † It is certain, that Homer has rather gained, than lost vigour by his years. Twenty six centuries have not unbraced his nerves, or given one wrinkle to his brow. And although Gulliver has bestowed upon him the additional ornament of fine eyes, yet I am apt to think they made the figure of this divine old man less awful: at least I am glad that he wanted his eye-sight while he lived; since it is impossible not to conclude from the productions of Homer and Milton, that the *mind's eye* becomes more intensely discerning, when it is not interrupted by external objects. It is an old observation, that Homer has nourished more persons than Sylla, Cæsar, and Augustus; and while their pictures have decayed, not a letter of the Iliad has been lost. The Grecian poet not only preserves his original form, but breathes freely, and looks beautifully, in other languages: a happier metempsychosis than Pythagoras ever dreamed of. However, if Homer was absolutely obliged to wear the different dresses which have been given to him, he would sometimes, I believe, find the motion of his limbs uneasy and confined; and would prefer his own simple attire even to the birth-day suit which our English bard has given him. The commentators have done less honour to Homer, than the translators. Some of these learned pedants have entirely

† *All that is meant by Gulliver is,* that Homer had the most *quick and piercing genius of all the human race.* Swift.——See vol. 6. p. 8.

were forced to attend in the court and outward rooms of the palace. I knew and could diſtinguiſh thoſe two heroes at firſt ſight, not only from the croud, but from each other. Homer was the taller and comelier perſon of the two, walked very erect for one of his age, and his eyes were the moſt quick and piercing I ever beheld. Ariſtotle ſtooped much, and made uſe of a ſtaff. His viſage was meagre, his hair lank and thin, and his voice hollow.

entirely waſted their obſervations upon particles and words; others have run into a minute exactneſs, in comparing the propriety of his images; while others, again, have endeavoured to trace out from the Iliad and Odyſſey, all the rudiments of arts and ſciences. Some there are who dwell on ſuch narrow circumſtances as were neglected by Homer, and can only be ſuitable to their own confined genius. They are not able to purſue him in his ſublime flights, and attempt therefore to bring him upon a level with themſelves. Their low mechanical notions remind me of an abſurd problem propoſed by the famous Monſ. Huet, whether the Iliad might not be written upon vellum in ſo ſmall a hand, that the whole might be contained within a nut-ſhell? This important queſtion is ſaid to have engaged the thoughts and attention of the French court, and gives us a true picture of a laborious, taſteleſs critic upon Homer. The Dauphin and his train are for putting the Iliad into a nut-ſhell, when Alexander and his courtiers choſe the richeſt and moſt curious cabinet of Darius, as the only proper repoſitory for Homer's works.

Homer and Ariſtotle were as oppoſite as poſſible in their characters: but Dr. Swift has placed them together, chiefly with a view of ſhewing their commentators in that juſt and ridiculous light in which thoſe ſcholiaſts ought to appear. When an age is bleſſed with the productions of an uncommon genius, ſuch as reſembles Homer, it muſt, in ſome meaſure, be puniſhed by bad imitations and comments; in the ſame manner that you may have obſerved the ſun, by its heat and influence, raiſing vapours, and animating inſects, that infect, and perhaps corrupt the air, in which he ſhines with ſo much luſtre. But when an original admired author, as Ariſtotle, is really erroneous, and deceives with falſe ſpecious principles, what a train of errors muſt ariſe from commentators on ſuch ſubjects, who, while they endeavour to purſue and extend a pleaſing inchanted proſpect, that has no real foundation, deviate into a dark, diſagreeable road of briers and thorns? —— It is on this account that the Dean has introduced Ariſtotle in company with Homer. *Orrery.*

hollow *. I ſoon diſcovered that both of them were perfect ſtrangers to the reſt of the company, and had never ſeen or heard of them before. And I had a whiſper from a ghoſt, who ſhall be nameleſs, that theſe commentators

* This deſcription of Ariſtotle is fine, and in a few words repreſents the true nature of his works. By not having the immortal ſpirit of Homer, he was unable to keep his body erect; and his ſtaff, which feebly ſupported him, like his commentators, made this defect more conſpicuous. He wanted not ſome uſeful qualities; but theſe *real ornaments*, like his hair, were thin and *ungraceful* †. His ſtyle was harſh, and, like his voice, had neither force nor harmony. He was without doubt a man of great genius and penetration; but he did infinitely more prejudice than ſervice to real literature. He ſtudied words more than facts; and delivered his philoſophy perplexed with ſuch intricate logical terms, as have laid a foundation for the endleſs ſcholaſtic diſputations which have corrupted and retarded the progreſs of learning. He waged war with all his predeceſſors. He never quotes an author but with a view to refute his opinion. Like the Ottoman Emperor, he could not reign in ſafety, till he had firſt deſtroyed his brethren. He was as ambitious in ſcience, as his pupil Alexander was in arms. He aimed to be a deſpotic original; and not only to be the prince, but the tyrant of philoſophy. What then can be expected from the commentators of his works, who were devoid of his ingenuity, and poſſeſſed all his intricate follies? Ramus with his covert ignorance, and Scotus and Aquinas with their ſubdiviſions and imaginary nothings, muſt make a contemptible figure in the Elyſian fields, which are the ſuppoſed manſions of chearfulneſs, truth, and candour, and conſequently muſt be a very improper ſituation for that tribe of philoſophers. *Orrery.*

In Gulliver's portrait of Homer we obſerve all the marks and delineations of quickneſs, genius, and fire, accompanied with an exquiſite power and felicity in the communication of his ideas, with clearneſs and force, unto the ſouls of his auditors. Swift's portrait of Ariſtotle is equally ſtrong and maſterly. He ſtooped much, ſaith he, and made uſe of a ſtaff; that is, he he thought, he conſidered, he ruminated, he pondered deeply, on the moſt intricate and abſtruſe points relating to the ſciences; and, by the force of reaſoning, which is meant by his ſtaff, he cleared his way through briers and thorns, until he ſtruck into the road which leads to ſcience and philoſophy.——— The remaining

† *In this the noble commentator ſeems to be miſtaken; for it cannot be believed that Ariſtotle's* real ornaments *however few were* ungraceful. *Hawkeſ.*

tators always kept in the moſt diſtant quarters from their principals in the lower world, through a conſciouſneſs of ſhame and guilt, becauſe they had ſo horribly miſrepreſented the meaning of thoſe authors to poſterity. I introduced Didymus and Euſtathius to Homer, and prevailed on him to treat them better than perhaps they deſerved; for he ſoon found they wanted a genius to enter into the ſpirit of a poet. But Ariſtotle was out of all patience with the account I gave him of Scotus and Ramus, as I preſented them to him, and he aſked them whether the reſt of the tribe were as great dunces as themſelves.

I then deſired the governor to call up Deſcartes and Gaſſendi, with whom I prevailed to explain their ſyſtems to Ariſtotle. This great philoſopher freely acknowledged his own miſtakes in natural philoſophy, becauſe he proceeded in many things upon conjecture, as all men muſt do; and he found, that Gaſſendi, who had made the doctrine of Epicurus as palatable as he could, and the *vortices* of Deſcartes, were equally to be

remaining part of Ariſtotle's portrait is only the repreſentation of an abſtracted ſcholar, worn away and decayed with years, hard ſtudy, nocturnal lucubrations, and the want of bodily exerciſe.

Some would make Swift treat Ariſtotle with very little reſpect. But, on the contrary, Swift admired Ariſtotle beyond all the philoſophers which had appeared in the world, from the days of Alexander the Great to the moment he was then writing; I had almoſt ſaid, even to the contempt of all others, not excepting Deſcartes, Gaſſendi, and the famous Sir Iſaac Newton.——From a little book of inſtructions which Dr. Swift was pleaſed to draw up for the uſe of a lady, I ſhall, in his own words, give his real opinion of Ariſtotle. "Ariſtotle, the diſciple of Plato, and "tutor to Alexander the Great. His followers were called *Peri-* "*patetics*, from a Greek word which ſignifies *to walk*, becauſe he "taught his diſciples *walking*. We have not all his works; and "ſome of thoſe which are imputed to him, are ſuppoſed not ge- "nuine. He writ upon *logic*, or the art of reaſoning; upon *moral* "and *natural philoſophy*; upon *oratory*, *poetry*, etc. and ſeems to "be a perſon of the *moſt comprehenſive genius that ever lived*." Swift.

be exploded*. He predicted the same fate to *attraction*, whereof the present learned are such zealous asserters. He said, that new systems of nature were but new fashions,

* I believe you will find, that Aristotle is still to be preferred to Epicurus. The former made some useful experiments and discoveries, and was engaged in a real pursuit of knowledge, altho' his manner is much perplexed. The latter was full of vanity and ambition. He was an impostor, and only aimed at deceiving. He seemed not to believe the principles which he has asserted. He committed the government of all things to chance. His natural philosophy is absurd. His moral philosophy wants its proper basis, the fear of God. Mr. Boyle, one of his warmest advocates, is of this last opinion, where he says, *On ne sçauroit pas dire assez de bien de l'honnêteté de ses mœurs, ni assez de mal de ses opinions sur la religion.* His general maxim, that happiness consisted in pleasure, was too much unguarded, and must lay a foundation of a most destructive practice: altho', from his temper and constitution, he made his actions sufficiently pleasureable to himself, and agreeable to the rules of true philosophy. His fortune exempted him from care and solicitude; his valetudinarian habit of body from intemperance. He passed the greatest part of his time in his garden, where he enjoyed all the elegant amusements of life. There he studied, there he taught his philosophy. This particular happy situation greatly contributed to that tranquillity of mind, and indolence of body, which he made his chief ends. He had not however resolution sufficient to meet the gradual approaches of death, and wanted that constancy which Sir William Temple ascribes to him: for, in his last moments, when he found that his condition was desperate, he took such large draughts of wine, that he was absolutely intoxicated, and deprived of his senses; so that he died more like a Bacchanal, than a philosopher; to which the epigram alludes,

Hinc Stygias ebrius hausit aquas.

I should not have ventured into this criticism and censure upon these antient philosophers, if my opinion was not in a great measure supported by Lord Bacon, who, as he was certainly the most accurate judge of this subject, might be perhaps, from that pre-eminence, too severe a critic. It must be owned, that Epicurus in particular has many followers and admirers among the antients, and

t a ſhort period of time, and
t was determined.
nverſing with many others of
w moſt of the firſt Roman em-
he governor to call up Eliogа-
a dinner, but they could not
ill for want of materials. A
a diſh of Spartan broth, but I
ſecond ſpoonful.
o conducted me to the iſland,
vate affairs to return in three
n ſeeing ſome of the modern
e greateſt figure for two or
our own and other countries
been always a great admirer
I deſired the governor would
f kings, with their anceſtors
generations. But my diſap-
d unexpected. For, inſtead
ladems, I ſaw in one family
urtiers, and an Italian prelate.
abbot, and two cardinals. I
for crowned heads to dwell
ject. But as to counts, mar-
he like, I was not ſo ſcru-
I was not without ſome plea-
f able to trace the particular
n families are diſtinguiſhed,
could plainly diſcover, from
s a long chin, why a ſecond
es for two generations, and

1592, and died in 1655. With
ever related to the perſon and to
the latter of which he has reduced

ro' the characters of ſuch ghoſts
ulliver. I may be wrong either
rvations: and I ſhall rejoice to be
of learning whatever."

Orrery.

which would vary in every age; and even thoſe who pretend to demonſtrate them from mathematical principles,

and among the moderns. Cicero commends him for cultivating his friendſhips in the moſt exquiſite manner. The book lies open before me, and I will tranſcribe the words. *De qua [amicitia] Epicurus quidem ita dicit, omnium rerum quas ad beate vivendum ſapientia comparaverit, nihil eſſe majus amicitia, nihil uberius, nihil jucundius; neque vero hoc oratione ſolum, ſed multo magis vita, et factis, et moribus comprobavit.* Diogenes Laertius praiſes his virtue and learning. In the Auguſtan age the greateſt names are inſerted among his followers. Cæſar, Atticus, Mecænas, Lucretius, Virgil, and Horace, embraced his philoſophy, and gave a luſtre to his ſect and doctrines. Sir William Temple ſays, "that he "wonders why ſuch ſharp invectives were ſo generally made a- "gainſt Epicurus, by the ages that followed him; eſpecially as "his admirable wit, felicity of expreſſion, excellence of nature, "ſweetneſs of converſation, temperance of life, and conſtancy of "death, made him ſo much beloved by his friends, admired by "his ſcholars, and honoured by the Athenians." Sir William Temple imputes this injuſtice "to the envy and malignity of the "Stoics, and to ſome groſs pretenders who aſſumed the denomi- "nation of that ſect; who miſtook his favourite principle [THAT "ALL HAPPINESS CONSISTED IN PLEASURE] by confining "it to ſenſual pleaſure only. To theſe ſucceeded the Chriſtians, "who eſteemed his principles of natural philoſophy more oppo- "ſite to thoſe of our religion, than either the Platoniſts, the "Peripatetics, or even the Stoics themſelves." This is the opinion, and theſe are almoſt the exact words of the great Sir William Temple.

Swift equally explodes Epicurus, and the more modern philoſophers Deſcartes and Gaſſendi.

Deſcartes was a knight-errant in philoſophy, perpetually miſtaking windmills for giants; yet, by the ſtrength of a warm imagination, he ſtarted ſome opinions, which probably put Sir Iſaac Newton and others on making many experiments that produced moſt uſeful diſcoveries.

Gaſſendi was eſteemed one of the greateſt ornaments of France. He was a doctor of divinity, and royal profeſſor of mathematics.

He

ciples, would flourish but a short period of time, and be out of vogue when that was determined.

I spent five days in conversing with many others of the antient learned. I saw most of the first Roman emperors. I prevailed on the governor to call up Eliogabalus's cooks to dress us a dinner, but they could not shew us much of their skill for want of materials. A *belot* of Agesilaus made us a dish of Spartan broth, but I was not able to get down a second spoonful.

THE two gentlemen who conducted me to the island, were pressed by their private affairs to return in three days, which I employed in seeing some of the modern dead, who had made the greatest figure for two or three hundred years past in our own and other countries of Europe; and having been always a great admirer of old illustrious families, I desired the governor would call up a dozen or two of kings, with their ancestors in order for eight or nine generations. But my disappointment was grievous and unexpected. For, instead of a long train of royal diadems, I saw in one family two fidlers, three spruce courtiers, and an Italian prelate. In another, a barber, an abbot, and two cardinals. I have too great a veneration for crowned heads to dwell any longer on so nice a subject. But as to counts, marquises, dukes, earls, and the like, I was not so scrupulous. And, I confess, it was not without some pleasure, that I found myself able to trace the particular features, by which certain families are distinguished, up to their originals. I could plainly discover, from whence one family derives a long chin, why a second hath abounded with knaves for two generations, and

He was born in Provence in 159[illegible] and died in 1655. With great industry he collected whatever related to the person and to the philosophy of Epicurus, the latter of which he has reduced into a complete system.

I have now [illegible] as are nominally specified [illegible] in my account [illegible] confuted by you in any point of [illegible]

[illegible]

fools for two more; why a third happened to be crack-brained, and a fourth to be ſharpers; whence it came what Polydore Virgil ſays of a certain great houſe, *Nec vir fortis, nec fœmina caſta*; how cruelty, falſhood, and cowardice grew to be characteriſtics, by which certain families are diſtinguiſhed as much as by their coats of arms; who firſt brought the pox into a noble houſe, which hath lineally deſcended in ſcrophulous tumours to their poſterity. Neither could I wonder at all this, when I ſaw ſuch an interruption of lineages by pages, lacqueys, valets, coachmen, gameſters, fidlers, players, captains, and pick-pockets.

I was chiefly diſguſted with modern hiſtory. For having ſtrictly examined all the perſons of greateſt name in the courts of princes for an hundred years paſt, I found how the world had been miſled by proſtitute writers to aſcribe the greateſt exploits in war to cowards, the wiſeſt counſel to fools, ſincerity to flatterers, Roman virtue to betrayers of their country, piety to atheiſts, chaſtity to ſodomites, truth to informers: how many innocent and excellent perſons had been condemned to death or baniſhment by the practiſing of great miniſters upon the corruption of judges, and the malice of factions: how many villains had been exalted to the higheſt places of truſt, power, dignity, and profit: how great a ſhare in the motions and events of courts, councils, and ſenates, might be challenged by bawds, whores, pimps, paraſites, and buffoons: how low an opinion I had of human wiſdom and integrity, when I was truly informed of the ſprings and motives of great enterprizes and revolutions in the world, and of the contemptible accidents to which they owed their ſucceſs.

Here I diſcovered the roguery and ignorance of thoſe who pretend to write *anecdotes*, or ſecret hiſtory; who ſend ſo many kings to their graves with a cup of poiſon; will repeat the diſcourſe between a prince and chief miniſter, where no witneſs was by; unlock the thoughts and cabinets of ambaſſadors and ſecretaries of ſtate; and have the perpetual misfortune to be miſtaken. Here I diſcovered the true cauſes of many great events that have

have surprised the world; how a whore can govern the back-stairs, the back-stairs a council, and the council a senate. A general confessed in my presence, that he got a victory purely by the force of cowardice and ill conduct: and an admiral, that for want of proper intelligence he beat the enemy, to whom he intended to betray the fleet. Three kings protested to me, that in their whole reigns they never did once prefer any person of merit, unless by mistake, or treachery of some minister in whom they confided; neither would they do it if they were to live again: and they shewed with great strength of reason, that the royal throne could not be supported without corruption; because that positive, confident, restive temper, which virtue infused into a man, was a perpetual clog to public business.

I had the curiosity to inquire, in a particular manner, by what method great numbers had procured to themselves high titles of honour and prodigious estates; and I confined my inquiry to a very modern period, however without grating upon present times, because I would be sure to give no offence even to foreigners; for I hope the reader need not to be told, that I do not in the least intend my own country in what I say upon this occasion. A great number of persons concerned were called up, and upon a very slight examination discovered such a scene of infamy, that I cannot reflect upon it without some seriousness. Perjury, oppression, subornation, fraud, pandarism, and the like *infirmities*, were amongst the most excusable arts they had to mention; and for these I gave, as it was reasonable, great allowance. But when some confessed they owed their greatness and wealth to sodomy, or incest; others to the prostituting of their own wives and daughters; others to the betraying their country or their prince; some to poisoning, more to the perverting of justice in order to destroy the innocent: I hope I may be pardoned, if these discoveries inclined me a little to abate of that profound veneration, which I am naturally apt to pay to persons of high rank, who ought to be treated with the utmost respect due to their sublime dignity by us their inferiors.

I had often read of ſome great ſervices done to princes and ſtates, and deſired to ſee the perſons, by whom thoſe ſervices were performed. Upon inquiry I was told, that their names were to be found on no record, except a few of them, whom hiſtory hath repreſented as the vileſt rogues and traitors. As to the reſt, I had never once heard of them. They all appeared with dejected looks, and in the meaneſt habit, moſt of them telling me they died in poverty and diſgrace, and the reſt on a ſcaffold or a gibbet.

AMONG others there was one perſon, whoſe caſe appeared a little ſingular. He had a youth about eighteen years old ſtanding by his ſide. He told me he had for many years been commander of a ſhip; and in the ſea-fight at Actium had the good fortune to break thro' the enemy's great line of battle, ſink three of their capital ſhips, and take a fourth, which was the ſole cauſe of Anthony's flight, and of the victory that enſued; that the youth ſtanding by him, his only ſon, was killed in the action. He added, that upon the confidence of ſome merit, the war being at an end, he went to Rome, and ſolicited at the court of Auguſtus to be preferred to a greater ſhip, whoſe commander had been killed; but without any regard to his pretenſions it was given to a boy, who had never ſeen the ſea, the ſon of Libertina, who waited on one of the Emperor's miſtreſſes. Returning back to his own veſſel, he was charged with neglect of duty, and the ſhip given to a favourite page of Publicola the vice-admiral; whereupon he retired to a poor farm at a great diſtance from Rome, and there ended his life. I was ſo curious to know the truth of this ſtory, that I deſired Agrippa might be called, who was admiral in that fight. He appeared, and confirmed the whole account, but with much more advantage to the captain, whoſe modeſty had extenuated or concealed a great part of his merit.

I was ſurpriſed to find corruption grown ſo high and ſo quick in that empire, by the force of luxury ſo lately introduced, which made me leſs wonder at many parallel caſes in other countries, where vices of all kinds have reigned ſo much longer, and where the whole praiſe, as well

well as pillage, hath been engroſſed by the chief commander, who perhaps had the leaſt title to either.

As every perſon called up made exactly the ſame appearance he had done in the world, it gave me melancholy reflections to obſerve, how much the race of human kind was degenerated among us within theſe hundred years paſt. How the pox under all its conſequences and denominations had altered every lineament of an Engliſh countenance, ſhortened the ſize of bodies, unbraced the nerves, relaxed the ſinews and muſcles, introduced a ſallow complexion, and rendered the fleſh looſe and *rancid*.

I deſcended ſo low as to deſire that ſome Engliſh yeomen of the old ſtamp might be ſummoned to appear; once ſo famous for the ſimplicity of their manners, diet, and dreſs; for juſtice in their dealings; for their true ſpirit of liberty; for their valour and love of their country. Neither could I be wholly unmoved, after comparing the living with the dead, when I conſidered how all theſe pure native virtues were proſtituted for a piece of money by their grand-children, who in ſelling their votes, and managing at elections, have acquired every vice and corruption that can poſſibly be learned in a court.

CHAP.

CHAP. IX.

The author returns to Maldonada. *Sails to the kingdom of* Luggnagg. *The author confined. He is ſent for to court. The manner of his admittance. The King's great lenity to his ſubjects.*

THE day of our departure being come, I took leave of his Highneſs the governor of Glubbdubdribb, and returned with my two companions to Maldonada, where after a fortnight's waiting, a ſhip was ready to ſail for Luggnagg. The two gentlemen, and ſome others, were ſo generous and kind as to furniſh me with proviſions, and ſee me on board. I was a month in this voyage. We had one violent ſtorm, and were under a neceſſity of ſteering weſtward to get into the trade-wind, which holds for above ſixty leagues. On the 21ſt of April, 1708, we ſailed into the river of Clumegnig, which is a ſea-port town at the ſouth-eaſt point of Luggnagg. We caſt anchor within a league of the town, and made a ſignal for a pilot. Two of them came on board in leſs than half an hour, by whom we were guided between certain ſhoals and rocks which are very dangerous in the paſſage, to a large baſin, where a fleet may ride in ſafety within a cable's length of the town-wall.

SOME of our ſailors, whether out of treachery or inadvertence, had informed the pilots that I was a ſtranger and a great traveller; whereof theſe gave notice to a cuſtom-houſe officer, by whom I was examined very ſtrictly upon my landing. This officer ſpoke to me in the language of Balnibarbi, which by the force of much commerce is generally underſtood in that town, eſpecially by ſeamen, and thoſe employed in the cuſtoms. I gave him a ſhort account of ſome particulars, and made my ſtory as plauſible and conſiſtent as I could; but I thought it neceſſary to diſguiſe my country, and call myſelf an Hollander, becauſe my intentions were for Japan, and I knew the Dutch were the only Europeans permitted

ted to enter into that kingdom. I therefore told the officer, that having been ſhipwrecked on the coaſt of Balnibarbi, and caſt on a rock, I was received up into Laputa, or the flying iſland (of which he had often heard) and was now endeavouring to get to Japan, from whence I might find a convenience of returning to my own country. The officer ſaid, I muſt be confined till he could receive orders from court, for which he would write immediately, and hoped to receive an anſwer in a fortnight. I was carried to a convenient lodging with a centry placed at the door; however I had the liberty of a large garden, and was treated with humanity enough, being maintained all the time at the King's charge. I was invited by ſeveral perſons, chiefly out of curioſity, becauſe it was reported that I came from countries very remote, of which they had never heard.

I hired a young man, who came in the ſame ſhip, to be an interpreter; he was a native of Luggnagg, but had lived ſome years at Maldonada, and was a perfect maſter of both languages. By his aſſiſtance I was able to hold a converſation with thoſe who came to viſit me; but this conſiſted only of their queſtions and my anſwers.

The diſpatch came from court about the time we expected. It contained a warrant for conducting me and my retinue to Traldragdubh or Trildrogdrib, for it is pronounced both ways, as near as I can remember, by a party of ten horſe. All my retinue was that poor lad for an interpreter, whom I perſuaded into my ſervice, and at my humble requeſt we had each of us a mule to ride on. A meſſenger was diſpatched half a day's journey before us to give the King notice of my approach, and to deſire that his Majeſty would pleaſe to appoint a day and hour, when it would be his gracious pleaſure, that I might have the honour to *lick the duſt before his footſtool*. This is the court ſtyle, and I found it to be more than matter of form. For, upon my admittance two days after my arrival, I was commanded to crawl upon my belly, and lick the floor as I advanced; but on account of my being a ſtranger care was taken to have it made ſo clean, that the duſt was not offenſive. However, this was a peculiar grace, not allowed to any but perſons of the higheſt rank,

rank, when they desire an admittance. Nay, sometimes the floor is strewed with dust on purpose, when the person to be admitted happens to have powerful enemies at court. And I have seen a great lord with his mouth so crammed, that, when he had crept to the proper distance from the throne, he was not able to speak a word. Neither is there any remedy; because it is capital for those who receive an audience, to spit or wipe their mouths in his Majesty's presence. There is indeed another custom which I cannot altogether approve of: when the King hath a mind to put any of his nobles to death in a gentle indulgent manner, he commands the floor to be strewed with a certain brown powder of a deadly composition, which being licked up infallibly kills him in twenty four hours. But in justice to this Prince's great clemency, and the care he hath of his subjects lives (wherein it were much to be wished, that the monarchs of Europe would imitate him) it must be mentioned for his honour, that strict orders are given to have the infected parts of the floor well washed after every such execution; which if his domestics neglect, they are in danger of incurring his royal displeasure. I myself heard him give directions that one of his pages should be whipt, whose turn it was to give notice about washing the floor after an execution, but maliciously had omitted it, by which neglect a young lord of great hopes coming to an audience was unfortunately poisoned, altho' the King at that time had no design against his life. But this good Prince was so gracious, as to forgive the poor page his whipping, upon promise, that he would do so no more without special orders.

To return from this digression; when I had crept within four yards of the throne, I raised myself gently upon my knees, and then, striking my forehead seven times against the ground, I pronounced the following words, as they had been taught me the night before, *Ickpling glofsthrobb squut serumm blhiop mlashnalt zwin tnodbalkuffh slhiophad gurdlubb asht.* This is the compliment established by the laws of the land for all persons admitted to the King's presence. It may be rendered into English thus: *May your celestial Majesty out-live the sun, eleven moons and a half.* To this the King returned some answer, which altho' I could not understand, yet I replied

plied as I had been directed: *flute drin yalerick dwuldom praſtrad mirpuſh*, which properly ſignifies, *my tongue is in the mouth of my friend*; and by this expreſſion was meant, that I deſired leave to bring my interpreter; whereupon the young man already mentioned was accordingly introduced, by whoſe intervention I anſwered as many queſtions, as his Majeſty could put in above an hour. I ſpoke in the Balnibarbian tongue, and my interpreter delivered my meaning in that of Luggnagg.

THE King was much delighted with my company, and ordered his Bliffmarklub, or High Chamberlain to appoint a lodging in the court for me and my interpreter; with a daily allowance for my table, and a large purſe of gold for my common expences.

I ſtaid three months in this country out of perfect obedience to his Majeſty, who was pleaſed highly to favour me, and made me very honourable offers. But I thought it more conſiſtent with prudence and juſtice to paſs the remainder of my days with my wife and family.

CHAP. X.

The Luggnuggians *commended. A particular deſcription of the* Struldbrugs, *with many converſations between the author and ſome eminent perſons upon that ſubject.*

THE Luggnuggians are a polite and generous people; and altho' they are not without ſome ſhare of that pride, which is peculiar to all *eaſtern* countries, yet they ſhew themſelves courteous to ſtrangers, eſpecially ſuch who are countenanced by the court. I had many acquaintance among perſons of the beſt faſhion, and being always attended by my interpreter, the converſation we had was not diſagreeable.

ONE day, in much good company, I was aſked by a perſon of quality, whether I had ſeen any of their Struldbrugs or Immortals. I ſaid, I had not; and deſired he would explain to me, what he meant by ſuch an appella-

tion

tion applied to a mortal creature. *He told me, that ſometimes, tho' very rarely, a child happened to be born in a family with a red circular ſpot in the forehead directly

* The deſcription of the Struldbrugs is an inſtructive piece of morality. For if we conſider it in a ſerious light, it tends to reconcile us to our final diſſolution. Death, when ſet in contraſt to the immortality of the Struldbrugs, is no longer the king of terrors: he loſes his ſting; he appears to us as a friend; and we chearfully obey his ſummons, becauſe it brings certain relief to the greateſt miſeries. It is in this deſcription, that Swift ſhines in a particular manner. He probably felt in himſelf the effects of approaching age, and tacitly dreaded that period of life in which he might become a repreſentative of thoſe *miſerable Immortals*. His apprehenſions were unfortunately fulfilled. He lived to be the moſt melancholy ſight that was ever beheld. Yet, even in that condition, he continued to inſtruct, by appearing a providential inſtance to mortify the vanity which is too apt to ariſe in the human breaſt. Our life cannot be pronounced happy, till the laſt ſcene is cloſed with eaſe and reſignation; the mind ſtill continuing to preſerve its uſual dignity, and falling into the arms of death, as a wearied traveller ſinks into reſt. This is that *Euthanaſia* which Auguſtus often deſired, which Antonius Pius enjoyed, and for which every wiſe man will pray. *Orrery.*

Gulliver's account of the Struldbrugs, is the fineſt lecture that ever was conceived by any mortal man, to reconcile poor tottering creatures unto a chearful reſignation of this wretched life; and perfectly agreeable to that ſentiment of the inſpired Prophet, *The days of our life are threeſcore years and ten: and tho' men be ſo ſtrong, that they live to fourſcore years; yet is their life then but labour and ſorrow.* Thoſe diſpenſations of the Almighty, which are frequently the concomitants of old age, Dr. Swift, throughout his whole life, conſtantly apprehended, from ſome peculiar infirmities attending his habit of body, would ſeize upon him at laſt. Theſe Lord Orrery, without any ſort of heſitation, roundly aſſerts to be the avenging judgments of God, as if he had been let into the ſecret by ſome particular revelation. But, inſtead of inſulting the aſhes of ſo bright a genius with the infirmities of his latter days, and comparing him to one of his own Struldbrugs, we ſhould endeavour to inflame our ſouls by catching fire, and ſpirit, and patriotiſm, from his inimitable writings; and ſilently confeſs the ways of God to be inſcrutable, and his judgments paſt finding out. *Swift.*

directly over the left eye-brow, which was an infallible mark, that it ſhould never die. The ſpot, as he deſcribed it, was about the compaſs of a ſilver three-pence, but in the courſe of time grew larger, and changed its colour; for at twelve years old it became green, ſo continued till five and twenty, then turned to a deep blue; at five and forty it grew coal black, and as large as an Engliſh ſhilling; but never admitted any farther alteration. He ſaid, theſe births were ſo rare, that he did not believe there could be above eleven hundred Struldbrugs of both ſexes in the whole kingdom, of which he computed about fifty in the metropolis, and among the reſt a young girl born about three years ago: that theſe productions were not peculiar to any family, but a meer effect of chance; and the children of the Struldbrugs themſelves were equally mortal with the reſt of the people.

I freely own myſelf to have been ſtruck with inexpreſſible delight upon hearing this account: and the perſon, who gave it me, happening to underſtand the Balnibarbian language, which I ſpoke very well, I could not forbear breaking out into expreſſions perhaps a little too extravagant. I cried out, as in a rapture: happy nation, where every child hath at leaſt a chance for being immortal! happy people, who enjoy ſo many living examples of ancient virtue, and have maſters ready to inſtruct them in the wiſdom of all former ages! but, happieſt beyond all compariſon are thoſe excellent Struldbrugs, who being born exempt from that univerſal calamity of human nature, have their minds free and diſengaged, without the weight and depreſſion of ſpirits cauſed by the continual apprehenſion of death. I diſcovered my admiration, that I had not obſerved any of theſe illuſtrious perſons at court; the black ſpot on the forehead being ſo remarkable a diſtinction, that I could not have eaſily overlooked it: and it was impoſſible that his Majeſty, a moſt judicious Prince, ſhould not provide himſelf with a good number of ſuch wiſe and able counſellors; yet perhaps the virtue of thoſe reverend ſages was too ſtrict for the corrupt and libertine manners of a court. And we

often find by experience, that young men are too opinionative and volatile to be guided by the ſober dictates of their ſeniors. However, ſince the King was pleaſed to allow me acceſs to his royal perſon, I was reſolved, upon the very firſt occaſion, to deliver my opinion to him on this matter freely and at large by the help of my interpreter; and whether he would pleaſe to take my advice or no, yet in one thing I was determined, that, his Majeſty having frequently offered me an eſtabliſhment in this country, I would with great thankfulneſs accept the favour, and paſs my life here in the converſation of thoſe ſuperior beings, the Struldbrugs, if they would pleaſe to admit me.

THE gentleman, to whom I addreſſed my diſcourſe, becauſe (as I have already obſerved) he ſpoke the language of Balnibarbi, ſaid to me with a ſort of a ſmile, which uſually ariſeth from pity to the ignorant, that he was glad of any occaſion to keep me among them, and deſired my permiſſion to explain to the company what I had ſpoke. He did ſo, and they talked together for ſome time in their own language, whereof I underſtood not a ſyllable, neither could I obſerve by their countenances, what impreſſion my diſcourſe had made on them. After a ſhort ſilence the ſame perſon told me, that his friends and mine (ſo he thought fit to expreſs himſelf) were very much pleaſed with the judicious remarks I had made on the great happineſs and advantages of immortal life, and they were deſirous to know in a particular manner, what ſcheme of living I ſhould have formed to myſelf, if it had fallen to my lot to have been born a Struldbrug.

I anſwered, it was eaſy to be eloquent on ſo copious and delightful a ſubject, eſpecially to me, who had been often apt to amuſe myſelf with viſions of what I ſhould do, if I were a king, a general, or a great lord: and, upon this very caſe, I had frequently run over the whole ſyſtem how I ſhould employ myſelf, and paſs the time, if I were ſure to live for ever.

THAT, if it had been my good fortune to come into the world a Struldbrug, as ſoon as I could diſcover my own happineſs by underſtanding the difference between life and death, I would firſt reſolve by all arts and methods

thods whatſoever to procure myſelf riches. In the purſuit of which by thrift and management, I might reaſonably expect in about two hundred years to be the wealthieſt man in the kingdom. In the ſecond place, I would from my earlieſt youth apply myſelf to the ſtudy of arts and ſciences, by which I ſhould arrive in time to excel all others in learning. Laſtly, I would carefully record every action and event of conſequence that happened in the public, impartially draw the characters of the ſeveral ſucceſſions of princes and great miniſters of ſtate, with my own obſervations on every point. I would exactly ſet down the ſeveral changes in cuſtoms, language, faſhions of dreſs, diet and diverſions. By all which acquirements I ſhould be a living treaſury of knowledge and wiſdom, and certainly become the oracle of the nation.

I would never marry after threeſcore, but live in an hoſpitable manner, yet ſtill on the ſaving ſide. I would entertain myſelf in forming and directing the minds of hopeful young men, by convincing them from my own remembrance, experience and obſervation, fortified by numerous examples, of the uſefulneſs of virtue in public and private life. But my choice and conſtant companions ſhould be a ſet of my own immortal brotherhood, among whom I would elect a dozen from the moſt ancient down to my own contemporaries. Where any of theſe wanted fortunes, I would provide them with convenient lodges round my own eſtate, and have ſome of them always at my table, only mingling a few of the moſt valuable among you mortals, whom length of time would harden me to loſe with little or no reluctance, and treat your poſterity after the ſame manner; juſt as a man diverts himſelf with the annual ſucceſſion of pinks and tulips in his garden, without regretting the loſs of thoſe, which withered the preceeding year.

These Struldbrugs and I would mutually communicate our obſervations and memorials through the courſe of time; remark the ſeveral gradations by which corruption ſteals into the world, and oppoſe it in every ſtep by giving perpetual warning and inſtruction to mankind; which, added to the ſtrong influence of our own example, would probably prevent that continual degeneracy of human nature ſo juſtly complained of in all ages.

ADD to all this the pleaſure of ſeeing the various revolutions of ſtates and empires; the changes in the lower and upper world; ancient cities in ruins, and obſcure villages become the ſeats of kings; famous rivers leſſening into ſhallow brooks; the ocean leaving one coaſt dry, and overwhelming another; the diſcovery of many countries yet unknown; barbarity over-running the politeſt nations, and the moſt barbarous become civilized. I ſhould then ſee the diſcovery of the *longitude*, the *perpetual motion*, the *univerſal medicine*, and many other great inventions brought to the utmoſt perfection.

WHAT wonderful diſcoveries ſhould we make in aſtronomy by out-living and confirming our own predictions, by obſerving the progreſs and returns of comets, with the changes of motion in the ſun, moon, and ſtars.

I enlarged upon many other topics, which the natural deſire of endleſs life and ſublunary happineſs could eaſily furniſh me with. When I had ended, and the ſum of my diſcourſe had been interpreted, as before, to the reſt of the company, there was a good deal of talk among them in the language of the country, not without ſome laughter at my expence. At laſt the ſame gentleman, who had been my interpreter, ſaid, he was deſired by the reſt to ſet me right in a few miſtakes, which I had fallen into through the common imbecillity of human nature, and upon that allowance was leſs anſwerable for them. That this breed of Struldbrugs was peculiar to their country, for there were no ſuch people either in Balnibarbi or Japan, where he had the honour to be ambaſſador from his Majeſty, and found the natives in both thoſe kingdoms very hard to believe, that the fact was poſſible; and it appeared from my aſtoniſhment, when he firſt mentioned the matter to me, that I received it as a thing wholly new, and ſcarcely to be credited. That in the two kingdoms above mentioned, where during his reſidence he had converſed very much, he obſerved long life to be the univerſal deſire and wiſh of mankind. That whoever had one foot in the grave, was ſure to hold back the other as ſtrongly as he could. That the oldeſt had ſtill hopes of living one day longer, and looked on death

death as the greateſt evil, from which nature always prompted him to retreat; only in this iſland of Luggnagg the appetite for living was not ſo eager, from the continual example of the Struldbrugs before their eyes.

THAT the ſyſtem of living contrived by me was unreaſonable and unjuſt; becauſe it ſuppoſed a perpetuity of youth, health, and vigour, which no man could be ſo fooliſh to hope, however extravagant he may be in his wiſhes*. That the queſtion therefore was not, whether a man would chuſe to be always in the prime of youth, attended with proſperity and health; but how he would paſs a perpetual life, under all the uſual diſadvantages which old age brings along with it. For altho' few men will avow their deſires of being immortal upon ſuch hard conditions, yet in the two kingdoms before mentioned, of Balnibarbi and Japan, he obſerved that every man deſired to put off death for ſome time longer, let it approach ever ſo late; and he rarely heard of any man who died willingly, except he were incited by the extremity of grief or torture. And he appealed to me, whether in thoſe countries I had travelled, as well as my own, I had not obſerved the ſame general diſpoſition†.

* To this it may poſſibly be objected, that the perpetuity of youth, health, and vigour, would be leſs a prodigy than the perpetuity of life in a body ſubject to gradual decay, and might therefore be hoped without greater extravagance of folly. But the ſentiment here expreſſed, is that of a being to whom immortality, tho' not perpetual youth, was familiar; and in whom the wiſh of perpetual youth only would have been extravagant, becauſe that only appeared from facts to be impoſſible.

Hawkeſ.

† If it be ſaid, that altho' the folly of deſiring life to be prolonged under the diſadvantages of old age, is here finely expoſed; yet the deſire of terreſtrial immortality upon terms, on which alone, in the nature of things, it is poſſible, an exemption from diſeaſe, accident, and decay, is tacitly allowed: it may be anſwered, that as we grow old by imperceptible degrees, ſo for the moſt part we grow old without repining, and every man is ready to profeſs himſelf willing to die, when he ſhall be overtaken by the decrepitude of age in ſome future period; yet when every

After this preface he gave me a particular account of the Struldbrugs among them. He ſaid, they commonly acted like mortals, till about thirty years old, after which by degrees they grew melancholy and dejected, encreaſing in both till they came to fourſcore. This he learned from their own confeſſion; for otherwiſe, there not being above two or three of that ſpecies born in an age, they were too few to form a general obſervation by. When they came to fourſcore years, which is reckoned the extremity of living in this country, they had not only all the follies and infirmities of other old men, but many more, which aroſe from the dreadful proſpect of never dying. They were not only opinionative, peeviſh, covetous, moroſe, vain, talkative; but incapable of friendſhip, and dead to all natural affection, which never deſcended below their grand-children. Envy and impotent deſires are their prevailing paſſions. But thoſe objects againſt which their envy ſeems principally directed, are the vices of the younger ſort, and the deaths of the old. By reflecting on the former they find themſelves cut off from all poſſibility of pleaſure; and whenever they ſee a funeral, they lament and repine that others are gone to an harbour of reſt, to which they themſelves never can hope to arrive. They have no remembrance of any thing, but what they learned and obſerved in their youth and middle age, and even that is very imperfect. And for the truth or particulars of any fact, it is ſafer to depend on common tradition, than upon their beſt recollections. The leaſt miſerable among them appear to be thoſe, who turn to dotage, and entirely loſe their memories; theſe meet with more pity and aſſiſtance, becauſe they want many bad qualities, which abound in others.

If a Struldbrug happened to marry one of his own kind, the marriage is diſſolved of courſe by the courteſy of the kingdom, as ſoon as the younger of the two comes to be fourſcore. For the law thinks it a reaſonable indulgence, that

every other eye ſees that this period is arrived, he is ſtill tenacious of life, and murmurs at the condition upon which he received his exiſtence. To reconcile old age therefore to the thoughts of a diſſolution, appears to be all that was neceſſary in a moral writer for practical purpoſes. Hawkeſ.

that thoſe, who are condemned without any fault of their own to a perpetual continuance in the world, ſhould not have their miſery doubled by the load of a wife.

As ſoon as they have compleated the term of eighty years, they are looked on as dead in law; their heirs immediately ſucceed to their eſtates, only a ſmall pittance is reſerved for their ſupport; and the poor ones are maintained at the public charge. After that period they are held incapable of any employment of truſt or profit; they cannot purchaſe lands, or take leaſes; neither are they allowed to be witneſſes in any cauſe, either civil or criminal, not even for the deciſion of meers and bounds.

At ninety they loſe their teeth and hair; they have at that age no diſtinction of taſte, but eat and drink whatever they can get without reliſh or appetite. The diſeaſes they were ſubject to ſtill continue, without encreaſing or diminiſhing. In talking they forget the common appellation of things, and the names of perſons, even of thoſe who are their neareſt friends and relations. For the ſame reaſon they never can amuſe themſelves with reading, becauſe their memory will not ſerve to carry them from the beginning of a ſentence to the end; and by this defect they are deprived of the only entertainment, whereof they might otherwiſe be capable.

The language of this country being always upon the flux, the Struldbrugs of one age do not underſtand thoſe of another; neither are they able after two hundred years to hold any converſation (farther than by a few general words) with their neighbours, the mortals; and thus they lie under the diſadvantage of living like foreigners in their own country.

This was the account given me of the Struldbrugs, as near as I can remember. I afterwards ſaw five or ſix of different ages, the youngeſt not above two hundred years old, who were brought to me at ſeveral times by ſome of my friends; but although they were told, that I was a great traveller, and had ſeen all the world, they had not the leaſt curioſity to aſk me a queſtion; only deſired I would give them *ſlumſkudoſk*, or a token of remembrance; which is a modeſt way of begging, to avoid the law, that ſtrictly forbids it, becauſe they are provided for

for by the public, although indeed with a very ſcanty allowance.

THEY are deſpiſed and hated by all ſorts of people; when one of them is born it is reckoned ominous, and their birth is recorded very particularly; ſo that you may know their age by conſulting the regiſter; which however hath not been kept above a thouſand years paſt, or at leaſt hath been deſtroyed by time or public diſturbances. But the uſual way of computing how old they are, is, by aſking them what kings or great perſons they can remember, and then conſulting hiſtory; for infallibly the laſt prince in their mind did not begin his reign after they were fourſcore years old.

THEY were the moſt mortifying ſight I ever beheld; and the women more horrible than men. Beſides the uſual deformities in extreme old age, they acquired an additional ghaſtlineſs in proportion to their number of years, which is not to be deſcribed; and among half a dozen I ſoon diſtinguiſhed which was the eldeſt, although there was not above a century or two between them.

THE reader will eaſily believe, that from what I had heard and ſeen, my keen appetite for perpetuity of life was much abated. I grew heartily aſhamed of the pleaſing viſions I had formed; and thought no tyrant could invent a death, into which I would not run with pleaſure from ſuch a life. The King heard of all that had paſſed between me and my friends upon this occaſion, and rallied me very pleaſantly; wiſhing I could ſend a couple of Struldbrugs to my own country to arm our people againſt the fear of death*; but this it ſeems is forbidden by the fundamental laws of the kingdom, or elſe I ſhould have been well content with the trouble and expence of tranſporting them.

I could not but agree, that the laws of this kingdom relating to the Struldbrugs were founded upon the ſtrongeſt

* Perhaps it may not be wholly uſeleſs to remark, that the ſight of a Struldbrug would no otherwiſe arm thoſe againſt the fear of death, who have no hope beyond it, than a man is armed againſt the fear of breaking his limbs, who jumps out of a window when his houſe is on fire. *Hawkeſ.*

eſt reaſons, and ſuch as any other country would be under the neceſſity of enacting in the like circumſtances. Otherwiſe, as avarice is the neceſſary conſequent of old age, thoſe immortals would in time become proprietors of the whole nation, and engroſs the civil power; which for want of abilities to manage, muſt end in the ruin of the public.

CHAP. XI.

The author leaves Luggnagg, *and ſails to* Japan. *From thence he returns in a* Dutch *ſhip to* Amſterdam, *and from* Amſterdam *to* England.

I Thought this account of the Struldbrugs might be ſome entertainment to the reader, becauſe it ſeems to be a little out of the common way; at leaſt I do not remember to have met the like in any book of travels, that hath come to my hands: and if I am deceived my excuſe muſt be, that it is neceſſary * for travellers, who deſcribe the ſame country, very often to agree in dwelling on the ſame particulars, without deſerving the cenſure of having borrowed or tranſcribed from thoſe who wrote before them.

THERE is indeed a perpetual commerce between this kingdom and the great empire of Japan; and it is very probable, that the Japaneſe authors may have given ſome account of the Struldbrugs; but my ſtay in Japan was ſo ſhort, and I was ſo entirely a ſtranger to the language, that I was not qualified to make any inquiries. But I hope the Dutch upon this notice will be curious and able enough to ſupply my defects.

HIS Majeſty having often preſſed me to accept ſome em-

* The word *neceſſary* is here uſed in the ſame manner, as when by the idiom of our language it means *convenient*, though it is to be underſtood in its proper and original ſignification. "Travellers who deſcribe the ſame country, very often *neceſſarily* agree "in dwelling on the ſame particulars, and therefore *do not deſerve* "the cenſure of having borrowed, *etc.*"
Hawkeſ.

employment in his court, and finding me abſolutely determined to return to my native country, was pleaſed to give me his licence to depart, and honoured me with a letter of recommendation under his own hand to the Emperor of Japan. He likewiſe preſented me with four hundred forty-four large pieces of gold (this nation delighting in even numbers) and a red diamond, which I ſold in England for eleven hundred pounds.

On the 6th day of May, 1709, I took a ſolemn leave of his Majeſty and all my friends. This Prince was ſo gracious, as to order a guard to conduct me to Glanguenſtald, which is a royal port to the *ſouth-weſt* part of the iſland. In ſix days I found a veſſel ready to carry me to Japan, and ſpent fifteen days in the voyage. We landed at a ſmall port-town called Xamoſchi, ſituated on the *ſouth-eaſt* part of Japan; the town lies on the *weſtern* point, where there is a narrow ſtreight leading *north-ward* into a long arm of the ſea, upon the *north-weſt* part of which Yedo the metropolis ſtands. At landing I ſhewed the cuſtom-houſe officers my letter from the King of Luggnagg to his Imperial Majeſty. They knew the ſeal perfectly well; it was as broad as the palm of my hand. The impreſſion was *A king lifting up a lame beggar from the earth.* The magiſtrates of the town, hearing of my letter, received me as a public miniſter; they provided me with carriages and ſervants, and bore my charges to Yedo, where I was admitted to an audience, and delivered my letter, which was opened with great ceremony, and explained to the Emperor by an interpreter, who then gave me notice by his Majeſty's order, that I ſhould ſignify my requeſt, and whatever it were, it ſhould be granted for the ſake of his royal brother of Luggnagg. This interpreter was a perſon employed to tranſact affairs with the Hollanders; he ſoon conjectured by my countenance, that I was an European, and therefore repeated his Majeſty's commands in low Dutch, which he ſpoke perfectly well. I anſwered (as I had before determined) that I was a Dutch merchant ſhipwrecked in a very remote country, from whence I had travelled by ſea and land to Luggnagg, and then took ſhipping for Japan, where I knew my countrymen often traded, and with ſome of theſe I hoped to get an opportunity of returning into

into Europe: I therefore moſt humbly entreated his royal favour to give order, that I ſhould be conducted in ſafety to Nangaſac: to this I added another petition, that for the ſake of my patron the King of Luggnagg, his Majeſty would condeſcend to excuſe my performing the ceremony impoſed on my countrymen, of *trampling upon the crucifix*; becauſe I had been thrown into his kingdom by my misfortunes, without any intention of trading. When this latter petition was interpreted to the Emperor, he ſeemed a little ſurprized; and ſaid, he believed I was the firſt of my countrymen, who ever made any ſcruple in this point; and that he began to doubt, whether I was a real Hollander, or no; but rather ſuſpected I muſt be a Chriſtian. However, for the reaſons I had offered, but chiefly to gratify the King of Luggnagg by an uncommon mark of his favour, he would comply with the *ſingularity* of my humour; but the affair muſt be managed with dexterity, and his officers ſhould be commanded to let me paſs as it were by forgetfulneſs. For he aſſured me, that if the ſecret ſhould be diſcovered by my countrymen the Dutch, they would cut my throat in the voyage. I returned my thanks by the interpreter for ſo unuſual a favour; and ſome troops being at that time on their march to Nangaſac, the commanding officer had orders to convey me ſafe thither, with particular inſtructions about the buſineſs of the *crucifix*.

On the 9th day of June, 1709, I arrived at Nangaſac after a very long and troubleſome journey. I ſoon fell into company of ſome Dutch ſailors belonging to the Amboyna of Amſterdam, a ſtout ſhip of 450 tuns. I had lived long in Holland, purſuing my ſtudies at Leyden, and I ſpoke Dutch well. The ſeamen ſoon knew from whence I came laſt; they were curious to inquire into my voyages, and courſe of life. I made up a ſtory as ſhort and probable as I could, but concealed the greateſt part. I knew many perſons in Holland; I was able to invent names for my parents, whom I pretended to be obſcure people in the province of Gelderland. I would have given the captain (one Theodorus Vangrult) what he pleaſed to aſk for my voyage to Holland; but underſtanding I was a ſurgeon, he was contented to take half

the

the uſual rate, on condition that I would ſerve him in the way of my calling. Before we took ſhipping, I was often aſked by ſome of the crew, whether I had performed the ceremony above mentioned? I evaded the queſtion by general anſwers, that I had ſatisfied the Emperor and court in all particulars. However a malicious rogue of a ſkipper went to an officer, and pointing to me told him, I had not yet *trampled on the crucifix:* but the other who had received inſtructions to let me paſs, gave the raſcal twenty ſtrokes on the ſhoulders with a bamboo; after which I was no more troubled with ſuch queſtions.

Nothing happened worth mentioning in this voyage. We ſailed with a fair wind to the Cape of Good Hope, where we ſtaid only to take in freſh water. On the 10th of April 1710 we arrived ſafe at Amſterdam, having loſt only three men by ſickneſs in the voyage, and a fourth who fell from the fore-maſt into the ſea not far from the coaſt of Guinea. From Amſterdam I ſoon after ſet ſail for England in a ſmall veſſel belonging to that city.

On the 16th of April we put in at the Downs. I landed next morning, and ſaw once more my native country after an abſence of five years and ſix months compleat. I went ſtrait to Redriff, where I arrived the ſame day at two in the afternoon, and found my wife and family in good health.

TRA-

A

VOYAGE

To the Country of the

HOUYHNHNMS*.

CHAP. I.

The author ſets out as captain of a ſhip. His men conſpire againſt him, confine him a long time to his cabbin. Set him on ſhore in an unknown land. He travels up into the country. The Yahoos, *a ſtrange ſort of animal, deſcribed. The author meets two* Houyhnhnms.

I Continued at home with my wife and children about five months in a very happy condition, if I could have learned the leſſon of knowing when I was well. I left my poor wife big with child, and accepted an advantageous

* In this laſt part of his imaginary travels, Swift has indulged a miſanthropy that is intolerable. The repreſentation which he has given us of human nature, muſt terrify, and even debaſe the mind of the reader who views it. His ſallies of wit and humour loſe all their force, nothing remaining but a melancholy and diſagreeable impreſſion: we are diſguſted, not entertained;

vantageous offer made me to be captain of the Adventure, a ſtout merchant-man of 350 tuns: for I underſtood navigation well, and being grown weary of a ſurgeon's

tertained; we are ſhocked, not inſtructed, by the fable. I ſhould therefore chuſe to take no notice of his YAHOOS, did I not think it neceſſary to aſſert the vindication of human nature, and thereby, in ſome meaſure, to pay my duty to the great author of our ſpecies, who has created us in a very fearful, and a very wonderful manner.

We are compoſed of a mind and of a body, intimately united, and mutually affecting each other. Their operations indeed are entirely different. Whether the immortal ſpirit, that enlivens this fine machine, is originally of a ſuperior nature in various bodies, (which, I own, ſeems moſt conſiſtent, and agreeable to the ſcale and order of beings;) or whether the difference depends on a ſymmetry, or peculiar ſtructure of the organs combined with it, is beyond my reach to determine. It is evidently certain, that the body is curiouſly formed with proper organs to delight, and ſuch as are adapted to all the neceſſary uſes of life. The ſpirit animates the whole; it guides the natural appetites, and confines them within juſt limits. But the natural force of the ſpirit is often immerſed in matter; and the mind becomes ſubſervient to paſſions, which it ought to govern and direct. Horace, altho' of the Epicurean doctrine, acknowledges this truth, where he ſays,

Atque affigit humo divinae particulam aurae.

It is no leſs evident, that this immortal ſpirit has an independent power of acting, and, when cultivated in a proper manner, ſeemingly quits the corporeal frame within which it is impriſoned, and ſoars into higher and more ſpacious regions; where, with an energy which I had almoſt ſaid was divine, it ranges among thoſe heavenly bodies, that, in this lower world, are ſcarce viſible to our eyes; and we can at once explain the diſtance, magnitude, and velocity of the planets, and can foretel, even to a degree of minuteneſs, the particular time when a comet will return, and when the ſun will be eclipſed in the next century. Theſe powers certainly evince the dignity of human nature, and the ſurpriſing effects of the immaterial ſpirit within us; which, in ſo confined a ſtate, can thus diſengage itſelf from the fetters of matter. It is from this pre-eminence of the ſoul over the body, that we are enabled to view the exact order

geon's employment at ſea, which however I could exerciſe upon occaſion, I took a ſkilful young man of that calling, one Robert Pureſoy, into my ſhip. We

order and curious variety of different beings; to conſider and cultivate the natural productions of the earth; and to admire and imitate the wiſe benevolence which reigns throughout the whole ſyſtem of the univerſe. It is from hence, that we form moral laws for our conduct. From hence we delight in copying that great original, who in his eſſence is utterly incomprehenſible, but in his influence is powerfully apparent to every degree of his creation. From hence too we perceive a real beauty in virtue, and a diſtinction between good and evil. Virtue acts with the utmoſt generoſity, and with no view to her own advantage; while vice, like a glutton, feeds herſelf enormouſly, and then is willing to diſgorge the naſeous offals of her feaſt. But I ſhall wander too far, eſpecially as I flatter myſelf, that your mind is ſo good, and ſo unprejudiced, that you will more eaſily feel than I can illuſtrate the truth of theſe aſſertions.

Swift deduces his obſervations from wrong principles: for, in his land of Houyhnhnms, he conſiders the ſoul and body in their moſt degenerate and uncultivated ſtate; the former as a ſlave to the appetites of the latter. He ſeems inſenſible of the ſurpriſing mechaniſm and beauty of every part of the human compoſition. He forgets the fine deſcription which Ovid gives of mankind:

Os homini ſublime dedit, cœlumque tueri
Juſſit, et erectos ad ſidera tollere vultus.

In painting YAHOOS he becomes one himſelf. Nor is the picture which he draws of the Houyhnhnms, inviting or amuſing. It wants both light and ſhade to adorn it. It is cold and inſipid. We there view the pure inſtincts of bruits, unaſſiſted by any knowledge of letters, acting within their own narrow ſphere, merely for their immediate preſervation. They are incapable of doing wrong, therefore they act right. It is ſurely a very low character given to creatures, in whom the author would inſinuate ſome degree of reaſon, that they act inoffenſively, when they have neither the motive nor the power to act otherwiſe. Their virtuous qualities are only negatives. Swift himſelf, amidſt all his irony, muſt have confeſſed, that to moderate our paſſions, to extend our munificence to others, to enlarge our underſtanding, and to raiſe our idea of the Almighty by contemplating

ſet ſail from Portſmouth upon the 7th day of September, 1710; on the 14th, we met with captain Pocock of Briſtol at Tenariff, who was going to the bay of Compechy

templating his works, is not only the buſineſs, but often the practice, and the ſtudy of the human mind. It is too certain, that no one individual has ever poſſeſſed every qualification and excellence. However, ſuch an aſſemblage of different virtues may ſtill be collected from different perſons, as are ſufficient to place the dignity of human nature in an amiable and exalted ſtation. We muſt lament indeed the many inſtances of thoſe who degenerate or go aſtray from the end and intention of their being. The true ſource of this depravity is often owing to the want of education, to the falſe indulgence of parents, or to ſome other bad cauſes, which are conſtantly prevalent in every nation. Many of theſe errors are finely ridiculed in the foregoing parts of this romance: but the voyage to the Houyhnhnms is a real inſult upon mankind.

I am heartily tired of this laſt part of Gulliver's travels; and am glad, that, having exhauſted all my obſervations on this diſagreeable ſubject, I may finiſh my letter; eſpecially as the concluſion of it naturally turns my thoughts from YAHOOS, to one of the deareſt pledges I have upon earth, yourſelf, *&c. Orrery.*

Some others, beſide Lord Orrery, have thought proper to cenſure Gulliver's voyage to the Houyhnhnms. But whether indeed their animadverſions proceeded from the infirmity of their judgment, or from ſome *Yahoo* depravity in their own nature, I ſhall not vouchſafe to inquire; as the daily occurrences of this wretched world prove, illuſtrate, and confirm all the ſarcaſms of the doctor. Shall we praiſe that excellent moraliſt, the humorous Hogarth, for expoſing midnight revels, debaucheries, and a thouſand other vices and follies of human kind, in a ſeries of hieroglyphics, ſuited to the improvement and the correction of the wild, the gay, the frolic, and the extravagant? And ſhall we condemn a preacher of righteouſneſs, for expoſing, under the character of a naſty unteachable *Yahoo*, the deformity, the blackneſs, the filthineſs and corruption of thoſe helliſh, abominable vices, which inflame the wrath of God againſt the children of diſobedience; and ſubject them without repentance, that is, without a thorough change of life and practice, to everlaſting perdition? Ought a preacher of righteouſneſs, ought a watchman

pechy to cut logwood. On the 16th, he was parted from us by a ſtorm; I heard ſince my return, that his ſhip foundered, and none eſcaped, but one cabbin-boy.

man of the Chriſtian faith, (who is accountable for his talents, and obliged to warn the innocent, as well as terrify the wicked and the profane;) to hold his peace, like a dumb dog that cannot bark, when avarice, fraud, cheating, violence, rapine, extortion, cruelty, oppreſſion, tyranny, rancour, envy, malice, detraction, hatred, revenge, murder, whoredom, adultery, laſciviouſneſs, bribery, corruption, pimping, lying, perjury, ſubornation, treachery, ingratitude, gaming, flattery, drunkenneſs, gluttony, luxury, vanity, effeminacy, cowardice, pride, impudence, hypocriſy, infidelity, blaſphemy, idolatry, ſodomy, and innumerable other vices, are as epidemical as the pox, and many of them the notorious characteriſtics of the bulk of human kind? I would aſk theſe mighty ſoftners, theſe kind pretenders to benevolence, theſe hollow charity-mongers, what is their real opinion of that *old ſerpent*, which, like a roaring lion, traverſeth the globe ſeeking whom he may devour? Was he not created by the Almighty pure, faultleſs, intelligent? But is there now, throughout the whole ſyſtem of created exiſtences, any *beaſt*, any *Yahoo*, any *tyrant* ſo vile, ſo baſe, ſo corrupted? And whence originally proceeded the change? Was it not from the abuſe of that freedom, without which no created *intelligence* can be reputed faithful, wiſe, brave or virtuous, in the eyes of his Creator? And ſurely, if this once great, once glorious ſpirit hath been reduced for many thouſands of ages, for aught we know to the contrary, below all the ſeveral gradations of created beings, whether intelligent, animal, or inſenſible; and expoſed to the fury of that avenging, though merciful God, who is the fountain of all wiſdom, goodneſs, and virtue; are we not to conclude, by an exact parity of reaſon, that every moral agent is equally accountable to God for that degree of intelligence and perfection, which determine the nature of his exiſtence? And upon this very principle, which cannot be denied without running into the laſt of abſurdities, and which in fact is the reaſoning of St Peter throughout his whole 2d chapter of his 2d epiſtle, that creature man, that glorious creature man, is deſervedly more contemptible than a brute beaſt, when he flies in the face of his Creator, by inliſting under

cabbin-boy. He was an honeſt man, and a good ſailor, but a little too poſitive in his own opinions, which was the cauſe of his deſtruction, as it hath been of ſeveral others. For if he had followed my advice, he might have been ſafe at home with his family at this time, as well as myſelf.

I had ſeveral men died in my ſhip of calentures, ſo that I was forced to get recruits out of Barbadoes and the Leeward Iſlands, where I touched by the direction of the merchants who employed me; which I had ſoon too much cauſe to repent; for I found afterwards, that moſt of them had been Bucaneers*. I had fifty hands on board, and my orders were, that I ſhould trade with the Indians in the South-ſea, and make what diſcoveries I could. Theſe rogues, whom I had picked up, debauched my other men, and they all formed a conſpiracy to ſeize the ſhip, and ſecure me; which they did one morning, ruſhing into my cabbin, and binding me hand and foot, threatening to throw me over-board, if I offered to ſtir. I told them, I was their priſoner, and would ſubmit. This they made me ſwear to do, and then they unbound me, only faſtening one of my legs with a chain near my bed, and placed a centry at my door with his piece charged, who was commanded to ſhoot me dead, if

der the banner of the enemy; and perverts that reaſon which was deſigned to have been the glory of his nature, even the directing ſpirit of his life and demeanour, to the vileſt, the moſt execrable, the moſt helliſh purpoſes. And this manifeſtly appears to be the ground-work of the whole ſatire contained in the voyage to the Houyhnhnms. [Then the author inſerts ſeveral paſſages from the holy ſcriptures, and the Apocrypha, which he ſays will fully juſtify all the ſarcaſms of the doctor. But theſe we omit, as improper in a political romance.]

And to conclude: if the brutality and filthineſs of the *Yahoos* be repreſented by the ſatiric genius of Dr Swift in colours the moſt ſhocking and deteſtable, as they certainly are, and as in fact they ought to have been, the picture is the more ſtriking as well as the more terrible; and upon that account more likely to inforce the obligation of religion and virtue upon the ſouls of men. *Swift.*

* Certain pyrates, that infeſted the Weſt Indies, were ſo called. *Hawkeſ.*

if I attempted my liberty. They ſent me down victuals and drink, and took the government of the ſhip to themſelves. Their deſign was to turn pyrates, and plunder the Spaniards, which they could not do, till they got more men. But firſt they reſolved to ſell the goods in the ſhip, and then go to Madagaſcar for recruits, ſeveral among them having died ſince my confinement. They ſailed many weeks, and traded with the Indians; but I knew not what courſe they took, being kept a cloſe priſoner in my cabbin, and expecting nothing leſs than to be murdered, as they often threatened me.

Upon the 9th day of May 1711, one James Welch came down to my cabbin, and ſaid he had orders from the captain to ſet me a-ſhore. I expoſtulated with him, but in vain; neither would he ſo much as tell me, who their new captain was. They forced me into the long-boat, letting me put on my beſt ſuit of cloaths, which were as good as new, and take a ſmall bundle of linnen, but no arms, except my hanger; and they were ſo civil as not to ſearch my pockets, into which I conveyed what money I had with ſome other little neceſſaries. They rowed about a league; and then ſet me down on a ſtrand. I deſired them to tell me, what country it was? They all ſwore, they knew no more than myſelf, but ſaid, that the captain (as they called him) was reſolved, after they had ſold the lading, to get rid of me in the firſt place where they could diſcover land. They puſhed off immediately, adviſing me to make haſte for fear of being overtaken by the tide, and ſo bade me farewel.

In this deſolate condition I advanced forward, and ſoon got upon firm ground, where I ſat down on a bank to reſt myſelf, and conſider what I had beſt do. When I was a little refreſhed, I went up into the country, reſolving to deliver myſelf to the firſt ſavages I ſhould meet, and purchaſe my life from them by ſome bracelets, glaſs-rings, and other toys, which ſailors uſually provide themſelves with in thoſe voyages, and whereof I had ſome about me. The land was divided by long rows of trees not regularly planted, but naturally growing; there was great plenty of graſs, and ſeveral fields of oats. I walked very circumſpectly for fear of being ſurpriſed, or ſuddenly ſhot with an arrow from behind, or on either ſide,

ſide. I fell into a beaten road, where I ſaw many tracks of human feet, and ſome of cows, but moſt of horſes. At laſt I beheld ſeveral animals in a field, and one or two of the ſame kind ſitting in trees. Their ſhape was very ſingular and deformed, which a little diſcompoſed me, ſo that I lay down behind a thicket to obſerve them better. Some of them coming forward near the place where I lay, gave me an opportunity of diſtinctly marking their form. Their heads and breaſts were covered with a thick hair, ſome frizled, and others lank; they had beards like goats, and a long ridge of hair down their backs, and the fore-parts of their legs and feet; but the reſt of their bodies were bare, ſo that I might ſee their ſkins, which were of a brown buff colour. They had no tails, nor any hair at all on their buttocks, except about the *anus*; which, I preſume, nature had placed there to defend them, as they ſat on the ground; for this poſture they uſed, as well as lying down, and often ſtood on their hind feet. They climbed high trees as nimbly as a ſquirrel, for they had ſtrong extended claws before and behind, terminating in ſharp points, and hooked. They would often ſpring, and bound, and leap with prodigious agility. The females were not ſo large as the males; they had long lank hair on their heads, but none on their faces, nor any thing more than a ſort of down on the reſt of their bodies, except about the *anus* and *pudenda*. Their dugs hung between their fore-feet, and often reached almoſt to the ground as they walked. The hair of both ſexes was of ſeveral colours, brown, red, black, and yellow. Upon the whole, I never beheld in all my travels ſo diſagreeable an animal, or one againſt which I naturally conceived ſo ſtrong an antipathy. So that thinking I had ſeen enough, full of contempt and averſion, I got up, and purſued the beaten road, hoping it might direct me to the cabbin of ſome Indian. I had not got far, when I met one of theſe creatures full in my way, and coming up directly to me. The ugly monſter, when he ſaw me, diſtorted ſeveral ways every feature of his viſage, and ſtarted as at an object he had never ſeen before; then approaching nearer lifted up his fore-paw, whether out of curioſity or miſchief, I could not tell: but I drew my hanger, and gave him a good blow with the flat ſide of

of it; for I durſt not ſtrike with the edge, fearing the inhabitants might be provoked againſt me, if they ſhould come to know, that I had killed or maimed any of their cattle. When the beaſt felt the ſmart, he drew back, and roared ſo loud, that a herd of at leaſt forty came flocking about me from the next field, howling, and making odious faces; but I ran to the body of a tree, and leaning my back againſt it kept them off by waving my hanger. Several of this curſed brood getting hold of the branches behind leapt up into the tree, from whence they began to diſcharge their excrements on my head: however, I eſcaped pretty well by ſticking cloſe to the ſtem of the tree, but was almoſt ſtifled with the filth, which fell about me on every ſide.

In the midſt of this diſtreſs, I obſerved them all to run away on a ſudden as faſt as they could, at which I ventured to leave the tree, and purſue the road, wondering what it was that could put them into this fright. But looking on my left hand I ſaw a horſe walking ſoftly in the field; which my perſecutors having ſooner diſcovered, was the cauſe of their flight. The horſe ſtarted a little, when he came near me, but ſoon recovering himſelf looked full in my face with manifeſt tokens of wonder: he viewed my hands and feet, walking round me ſeveral times. I would have purſued my journey, but he placed himſelf directly in the way, yet looking with a very mild aſpect, never offering the leaſt violence. We ſtood gazing at each other for ſome time; at laſt I took the boldneſs to reach my hand towards his neck with a deſign to ſtroak it, uſing the common ſtyle and whiſtle of jockies, when they are going to handle a ſtrange horſe. But this animal ſeemed to receive my civilities with diſdain, ſhook his head, and bent his brows, ſoftly raiſing up his right fore-foot to remove my hand. Then he neighed three or four times, but in ſo different a cadence, that I almoſt began to think he was ſpeaking to himſelf in ſome language of his own.

While he and I were thus employed, another horſe came up; who applying himſelf to the firſt in a very formal manner, they gently ſtruck each other's right hoof before, neighing ſeveral times by turns, and varying the ſound, which ſeemed to be almoſt articulate. They

went ſome paces off, as if it were to confer together, walking ſide by ſide, backward and forward, like perſons deliberating upon ſome affair of weight, but often turning their eyes towards me, as it were to watch that I might not eſcape. I was amazed to ſee ſuch actions and behaviour in brute beaſts; and concluded with myſelf, that if the inhabitants of this country were endued with a proportional degree of reaſon, they muſt needs be the wiſeſt people upon earth. This thought gave me ſo much comfort, that I reſolved to go forward, until I could diſcover ſome houſe or village, or meet with any of the natives, leaving the two horſes to diſcourſe together as they pleaſed. But the firſt, who was a dapple grey, obſerving me to ſteal off, neighed after me in ſo expreſſive a tone, that I fancied myſelf to underſtand what he meant; whereupon I turned back, and came near him to expect his farther commands, but concealing my fear as much as I could; for I began to be in ſome pain, how this adventure might terminate; and the reader will eaſily believe, I did not much like my preſent ſituation.

The two horſes came up cloſe to me, looking with great earneſtneſs upon my face and hands. The grey ſteed rubbed my hat all round with his right fore-hoof, and diſcompoſed it ſo much, that I was forced to adjuſt it better by taking it off, and ſettling it again; whereat both he and his companion (who was a brown bay) appeared to be much ſurpriſed; the latter felt the lappet of my coat, and finding it to hang looſe about me, they both looked with new ſigns of wonder. He ſtroaked my right hand, ſeeming to admire the ſoftneſs and colour; but he ſqueezed it ſo hard between his hoof and his paſtern, that I was forced to roar; after which they both touched me with all poſſible tenderneſs. They were under great perplexity about my ſhoes and ſtockings, which they felt very often, neighing to each other, and uſing various geſtures not unlike thoſe of a philoſopher, when he would attempt to ſolve ſome new and difficult phænomenon.

Upon the whole, the behaviour of theſe animals was ſo orderly and rational, ſo acute and judicious, that I at laſt concluded they muſt needs be magicians, who had thus

thus metamorphoſed themſelves upon ſome deſign, and ſeeing a ſtranger in the way reſolved to divert themſelves with him; or perhaps were really amazed at the ſight of a man ſo very different in habit, feature, and complexion, from thoſe who might probably live in ſo remote a climate. Upon the ſtrength of this reaſoning I ventured to addreſs them in the following manner: Gentlemen, if you be conjurers, as I have good cauſe to believe, you can underſtand any language; therefore I make bold to let your worſhips know that I am a poor diſtreſſed Engliſh-man driven by his misfortunes upon your coaſt, and I entreat one of you to let me ride upon his back, as if he were a real horſe, to ſome houſe or village, where I can be relieved. In return of which favour I will make you a preſent of this knife and bracelet (taking them out of my pocket). The two creatures ſtood ſilent while I ſpoke, ſeeming to liſten with great attention; and when I had ended, they neighed frequently towards each other, as if they were engaged in ſerious converſation. I plainly obſerved, that their language expreſſed the paſſions very well, and the words might with little pains be reſolved into an alphabet more eaſily than the Chineſe.

I could frequently diſtinguiſh the word *yahoo*, which was repeated by each of them ſeveral times; and although it was impoſſible for me to conjecture what it meant, yet while the two horſes were buſy in converſation, I endeavoured to practiſe this word upon my tongue; and as ſoon as they were ſilent, I boldly pronounced *yahoo* in a loud voice, imitating at the ſame time as near as I could the neighing of a horſe; at which they were both viſibly ſurpriſed, and the grey repeated the ſame word twice, as if he meant to teach me the right accent, wherein I ſpoke after him as well as I could, and found myſelf perceivably to improve every time, though very far from any degree of perfection. Then the bay tried me with a ſecond word much harder to be pronounced; but reducing it to the Engliſh orthography, may be ſpelt thus, Houyhnhnm. I did not ſucceed in this ſo well as the former; but after two or three farther trials I had better fortune; and they both appeared amazed at my capacity.

AFTER

After ſome farther diſcourſe, which I then conjectured might relate to me, the two friends took their leaves with the ſame compliment of ſtriking each other's hoof; and the grey made me ſigns that I ſhould walk before him; wherein I thought it prudent to comply, till I could find a better director. When I offered to ſlacken my pace, he would cry *hhuun, hhuun*; I gueſſed his meaning, and gave him to underſtand, as well as I could, that I was weary, and not able to walk faſter; upon which he would ſtand a while to let me reſt.

CHAP. II.

The author conducted by a Houyhnhnm *to his houſe. The houſe deſcribed. The author's reception. The food of the* Houyhnhnms. *The author in diſtreſs for want of meat, is at laſt relieved. His manner of feeding in this country.*

Having travelled about three miles, we came to a long kind of building made of timber ſtuck in the ground, and wattled a-croſs; the roof was low, and covered with ſtraw. I now began to be a little comforted; and took out ſome toys, which travellers uſually carry for preſents to the ſavage Indians of America and other parts, in hopes the people of the houſe would be thereby encouraged to receive me kindly. The horſe made me a ſign to go in firſt; it was a large room with a ſmooth clay floor, and a rack and manger, extending the whole length on one ſide. There were three nags, and two mares not eating, but ſome of them ſitting down upon their hams, which I very much wondered at; but wondered more to ſee the reſt employed in domeſtic buſineſs, theſe ſeemed but ordinary cattle; however this confirmed my firſt opinion, that a people, who could ſo far civilize brute animals, muſt needs excel in wiſdom all the nations of the world. The grey came in juſt after, and thereby prevented any ill treatment, which the others might have given me. He neighed to them ſeveral times in a ſtyle of authority, and received anſwers.

Beyond this room there were three others reaching the length of the houſe, to which you paſſed through three doors,

doors, oppoſite to each other, in the manner of a viſta; we went through the ſecond room towards the third; here the grey walked in firſt, beckoning me to attend: I waited in the ſecond room, and got ready my preſents for the maſter and miſtreſs of the houſe: they were two knives, three bracelets of falſe pearl, a ſmall looking-glaſs, and a bead necklace. The horſe neighed three or four times, and I waited to hear ſome anſwers in a human voice, but I heard no other returns than in the ſame dialect, only one or two a little ſhriller than his. I began to think, that this houſe muſt belong to ſome perſon of great note among them, becauſe there appeared ſo much ceremony before I could gain admittance. But, that a man of quality ſhould be ſerved all by horſes, was beyond my comprehenſion. I feared my brain was diſturbed by my ſufferings and miſfortunes: I rouſed myſelf, and looked about me in the room where I was left alone; this was furniſhed like the firſt, only after a more elegant manner. I rubbed my eyes often, but the ſame objects ſtill occurred. I pinched my arms and ſides to awake myſelf, hoping I might be in a dream. I then abſolutely concluded, that all theſe appearances could be nothing elſe but necromancy and magic. But I had no time to perſue theſe reflections: for the grey horſe came to the door, and made me a ſign to follow him into the third room, where I ſaw a very comely mare, together with a colt and fole, ſitting on their haunches, upon mats of ſtraw not unartfully made and perfect [illegible].

The mare ſoon after [illegible], and coming up [illegible] hands and face, gave me a [illegible] turning to the horſe. I heard [illegible] peated betwixt them; the [illegible] not then comprehend, [illegible] learned to pronounce [illegible] my everlaſting [illegible] me with his head, [illegible] as he did upon the [illegible] tend him, led me out [illegible] other building at ſome [illegible] we entered, and I ſaw [illegible] which I firſt met after my [illegible]

and the flesh of some animals, which I afterwards found to be that of asses and dogs, and now and then a cow dead by accident or disease. They were all tied by the neck with strong wyths fastened to a beam; they held their food between the claws of their fore-feet, and tore it with their teeth.

THE master horse ordered a sorrel nag, one of his servants, to untie the largest of these animals, and take him into the yard. The beast and I were brought close together; and our countenances diligently compared both by master and servant, who thereupon repeated several times the word *yahoo*. My horror and astonishment are not to be described, when I observed in this abominable animal a perfect human figure: the face of it indeed was flat and broad, the nose depressed, the lips large, and the mouth wide: but these differences are common to all savage nations, where the lineaments of the countenance are distorted by the natives suffering their infants to lie grovelling on the earth, or by carrying them on their backs nuzzling with their face against the mother's shoulders. The fore-feet of the *yahoo* differed from my hands in nothing else, but the length of the nails, the coarseness and brownness of the palms, and the hairiness on the backs. There was the same resemblance between our feet, with the same differences, which I knew very well, though the horses did not because of my shoes and stockings; the same in every part of our bodies, except as to hairiness and colour, which I have already described.

THE great difficulty that seemed to stick with the two horses, was, to see the rest of my body so very different from that of a *yahoo*, for which I was obliged to my cloaths, whereof they had no conception. The sorrel nag offered me a root, which he held (after their manner, as we shall describe in its proper place) between his hoof and pastern; I took it in my hand, and having smelt it returned it to him again as civilly as I could. He brought out of the *yahoo*'s kennel a piece of ass's flesh, but it smelt so offensively, that I turned from it with loathing; he then threw it to the *yahoo*, by whom it was greedily devoured*. He afterwards shewed me a whisp of

* Whoever is disgusted with this picture of a *Yahoo*, would do

of hay and a fetlock full of oats; but I ſhook my head to ſignify, that neither of theſe were food for me. And indeed I now apprehended, that I muſt abſolutely ſtarve, if I did not get to ſome of my own ſpecies; for as to thoſe filthy *yahoos*, although there were few greater lovers of mankind at that time, than myſelf; yet I confeſs, I never ſaw any ſenſitive being ſo deteſtable on all accounts; and the more I came near them, the more hateful they grew, while I ſtaid in that country. This the maſter horſe obſerved by my behaviour, and therefore ſent the *yahoo* back to his kennel. He then put his fore-hoof to his mouth, at which I was much ſurprized, although he did it with eaſe, and with a motion that appeared perfectly natural; and made other ſigns to know what I would eat; but I could not return him ſuch an anſwer as he was able to apprehend; and if he had underſtood me, I did not ſee how it was poſſible to contrive any way for finding myſelf nouriſhment. While we were thus engaged, I obſerved a cow paſſing by, whereupon I pointed to her, and expreſſed a deſire to go and milk her. This had its effect; for he led me back into the houſe, and ordered a mare-ſervant to open a room, where a good ſtore of milk lay in earthen and wooden veſſels after a very orderly and cleanly manner. She gave me a large bowl full, of which I drank very heartily, and found myſelf well refreſhed.

About noon I ſaw coming towards the houſe a kind of vehicle drawn like a ſledge by four *yahoos*. There was in it an old ſteed, who ſeemed to be of quality; he alighted with his hind-feet forward, having by accident got a hurt in his left fore-foot. He came to dine with our horſe, who received him with great civility. They dined in the beſt room, and had oats boiled in milk for the ſecond courſe, which the old horſe eat warm, but the reſt cold. Their mangers were placed circular in the middle of the room, and divided into ſeveral partitions,

do well to reflect, that it becomes his own in exact proportion as he deviates from virtue, for virtue is the perfection of reaſon. The appetites of thoſe abandoned to vice, are not leſs brutal and ſordid than that of a *yahoo* for aſſes fleſh; nor is their life a ſtate of leſs abject ſervility. *Hawkeſ.*

ons, round which they ſat on their haunches upon boſſes of ſtraw. In the middle was a large rack, with angles anſwering to every partition of the manger. So that each horſe and mare eat their own hay, and their own maſh of oats and milk, with much decency and regularity. The behaviour of the young colt and fole appeared very modeſt; and that of the maſter and miſtreſs extremely chearful and complaiſant to their gueſt. The grey ordered me to ſtand by him; and much diſcourſe paſſed between him and his friend concerning me, as I found by the ſtranger's often looking on me, and the frequent repetition of the word *yahoo*.

I happened to wear my gloves, which the maſter-grey obſerving, ſeemed perplexed, diſcovering ſigns of wonder what I had done to my fore-feet; he put his hoof three or four times to them, as if he would ſignify, that I ſhould reduce them to their former ſhape, which I preſently did, pulling off both my gloves, and putting them into my pocket. This occaſioned farther talk, and I ſaw the company was pleaſed with my behaviour, whereof I ſoon found the good effects. I was ordered to ſpeak the few words I underſtood; and while they were at dinner, the maſter taught me the names for oats, milk, fire, water, and ſome others; which I could readily pronounce after him, having from my youth a great facility in learning languages.

When dinner was done, the maſter horſe took me aſide, and by ſigns and words made me underſtand the concern he was in, that I had nothing to eat. Oats in their tongue are called *hlunnh*. This word I pronounced two or three times; for although I had refuſed them at firſt, yet upon ſecond thoughts I conſidered, that I could contrive to make of them a kind of bread, which might be ſufficient with milk to keep me alive, till I could make my eſcape to ſome other country, and to creatures of my own ſpecies. The horſe immediately ordered a white mare-ſervant of his family to bring me a good quantity of oats in a ſort of wooden tray. Theſe I heated before the fire, as well as I could, and rubbed them till the huſks came off, which I made a ſhift to winnow from the grain; I ground and beat them between two ſtones, then took water, and made them into

a

a paſte or cake, which I toaſted at the fire, and eat warm with milk. It was at firſt a very inſipid diet, though common enough in many parts of Europe, but grew tolerable by time; and having been often reduced to hard fare in my life, this was not the firſt experiment I had made, how eaſily nature is ſatisfied. And I cannot but obſerve, that I never had one hour's ſickneſs, while I ſtaid in this iſland. It is true, I ſometimes made a ſhift to catch a rabbit, or bird, by ſpringes made of *yahoos* hairs; and I often gathered wholeſome herbs, which I boiled, or eat as ſalads with my bread; and now and then for a rarity I made a little butter, and drank the whey. I was at firſt at a great loſs for ſalt; but cuſtom ſoon reconciled me to the want of it; and I am confident, that the frequent uſe of ſalt among us is an effect of luxury, and was firſt introduced only as a provocative to drink; except where it is neceſſary for preſerving of fleſh in long voyages, or in places remote from great markets. For we obſerve no animal to be fond of it but man: and as to myſelf, when I left this country, it was a great while before I could endure the taſte of it in any thing that I eat.

THIS is enough to ſay upon the ſubject of my diet, wherewith other travellers fill their books, as if the readers were perſonally concerned, whether we fare well or ill. However it was neceſſary to mention this matter; leſt the world ſhould think it impoſſible, that I could find ſuſtenance for three years in ſuch a country, and among ſuch inhabitants.

WHEN it grew towards evening, the maſter horſe ordered a place for me to lodge in; it was but ſix yards from the houſe, and ſeparated from the ſtable of the *yahoos*. Here I got ſome ſtraw, and covering myſelf with my own cloaths ſlept very ſound. But I was in a ſhort time better accommodated, as the reader ſhall know hereafter, when I come to treat more particularly about my way of living.

CHAP. III.

The author ſtudious to learn the language; the Houyhnhnm, *his maſter, aſſiſts in teaching him. The language deſcribed. Several* Houyhnhnms *of quality came out of curioſity to ſee the author. He gives his maſter a ſhort account of his voyage.*

MY principal endeavour was to learn the language, which my maſter (for ſo I ſhall henceforth call him) and his children, and every ſervant of his houſe were deſirous to teach me. For they looked upon it as a prodigy, that a brute animal ſhould diſcover ſuch marks of a rational creature. I pointed to every thing, and inquired the name of it, which I wrote down in my *journal-book* when I was alone, and corrected my bad accent by deſiring thoſe of the family to pronounce it often. In this employment a ſorrel nag, one of the under ſervants, was very ready to aſſiſt me.

IN ſpeaking they pronounce through the noſe and throat, and their language approaches neareſt to the High-Dutch, or German, of any I know in Europe; but is much more graceful and ſignificant. The Emperor Charles V. made almoſt the ſame obſervation, when he ſaid, That if he were to ſpeak to his horſe, it ſhould be in High-Dutch.

THE curioſity and impatience of my maſter were ſo great, that he ſpent many hours of his leiſure to inſtruct me. He was convinced (as he afterwards told me) that I muſt be a *yahoo*; but my teachableneſs, civility, and cleanlineſs, aſtoniſhed him; which were qualities altogether oppoſite to thoſe animals. He was moſt perplexed about my cloaths, reaſoning ſometimes with himſelf, whether they were a part of my body; for I never pulled them off till the family were aſleep, and got them on before they waked in the morning. My maſter was eager to learn from whence I came; how I acquired thoſe appearances of reaſon, which I diſcovered in all my actions; and to know my ſtory from my own mouth, which he hoped he ſhould ſoon do by the great proficiency I made

made in learning and pronouncing their words and sentences. To help my memory I formed all I learned into the English alphabet, and writ the words down with the translations. This last after some time I ventured to do in my master's presence. It cost me much trouble to explain to him what I was doing: for the inhabitants have not the least idea of books or literature.

In about ten weeks time I was able to understand most of his questions; and in three months could give him some tolerable answers. He was extremely curious to know from what part of the country I came, and how I was taught to imitate a rational creature; because the *yahoos* (whom he saw I exactly resembled in my head, hands, and face, that were only visible) with some appearance of cunning, and the strongest disposition to mischief, were observed to be the most unteachable of all brutes. I answered, that I came over the sea from a far place with many others of my own kind, in a great hollow vessel made of the bodies of trees; that my companions forced me to land on this coast, and then left me to shift for myself. It was with some difficulty, and by the help of many signs, that I brought him to understand me. He replied, that I must needs be mistaken, or that I *said the thing which was not* (for they have no word in their language to express lying or falsehood.) He knew it was impossible, that there could be a country beyond the sea, or that a parcel of brutes could move a wooden vessel whither they pleased upon water. He was sure no Houyhnhnm alive could make such a vessel, nor would trust *yahoos* to manage it.

The word Houyhnhnm in their tongue signifies a *horse*, and in its etymology, *the perfection of nature*. I told my master that I was at a loss for expression, but would improve as fast as I could; and hoped in a short time I should be able to tell him wonders: he was pleased to direct his own mare, his colt and foal, and the servants of the family, to take all opportunities of instructing me; and every day for two or three hours he was at the same pains himself: several horses and mares of quality in the neighbourhood came often to our house, upon the report spread of a wonderful *yahoo* that could speak like a Houyhnhnm, and seemed in his words and actions to discover

cover ſome glimmerings of reaſon. Theſe delighted to converſe with me; they put many queſtions, and received ſuch anſwers as I was able to return. By all theſe advantages I made ſo great a progreſs, that in five months from my arrival I underſtood whatever was ſpoken, and could expreſs myſelf tolerably well.

The Houyhnhnms who came to viſit my maſter out of a deſign of ſeeing and talking with me, could hardly believe me to be a right *yahoo*, becauſe my body had a different covering from others of my kind. They were aſtoniſhed to obſerve me without the uſual hair or ſkin, except on my head, face, and hands; but I diſcovered that ſecret to my maſter upon an accident, which happened about a fortnight before.

I have already told the reader, that every night, when the family were gone to bed, it was my cuſtom to ſtrip, and cover myſelf with my cloaths: it happened one morning early, that my maſter ſent for me by the ſorrel nag, who was his valet; when he came, I was faſt aſleep, my cloaths fallen off on one ſide, and my ſhirt above my waiſt. I awaked at the noiſe he made, and obſerved him to deliver his meſſage in ſome diſorder; after which he went to my maſter, and in a great fright gave him a very confuſed account of what he had ſeen: this I preſently diſcovered; for going as ſoon as I was dreſſed to pay my attendance upon his honour, he aſked me the meaning of what his ſervant had reported; that I was not the ſame thing when I ſlept, as I appeared to be at other times: that his valet aſſured him, ſome part of me was white, ſome yellow, at leaſt not ſo white, and ſome brown.

I had hitherto concealed the ſecret of my dreſs in order to diſtinguiſh myſelf, as much as poſſible, from that curſed race of *yahoos*; but now I found it in vain to do ſo any longer. Beſides I conſidered, that my cloaths and ſhoes would ſoon wear out, which already were in a declining condition, and muſt be ſupplied by ſome contrivance from the hides of *yahoos*, or other brutes; whereby the whole ſecret would be known: I therefore told my maſter, that in the country from whence I came thoſe of my kind always covered their bodies with the hairs of certain animals prepared by art, as well for decency, as

to

to avoid the inclemencies of air both hot and cold; of which, as to my own perſon, I would give him immediate conviction, if he pleaſed to command me; only deſiring his excuſe, if I did not expoſe thoſe parts that nature taught us to conceal. He ſaid my diſcourſe was all very ſtrange, but eſpecially the laſt part; for he could not underſtand, why nature ſhould teach us to conceal what nature had given: that neither himſelf nor family were aſhamed of any parts of their bodies; but however I might do as I pleaſed. Whereupon I firſt unbuttoned my coat, and pulled it off. I did the ſame with my waiſt-coat; I drew off my ſhoes, ſtockings, and breeches. I let my ſhirt down to my waiſt, and drew up the bottom, faſtening it like a girdle about my middle to hide my nakedneſs.

My maſter obſerved the whole performance with great ſigns of curioſity and admiration. He took up all my cloaths in his paſtern, one piece after another, and examined them diligently; he then ſtroaked my body very gently, and looked round me ſeveral times, after which he ſaid, it was plain I muſt be a perfect *yahoo*; but that I differed very much from the reſt of my ſpecies in the ſoftneſs, whiteneſs, and ſmoothneſs of my ſkin, my want of hair in ſeveral parts of my body, the ſhape and ſhortneſs of my claws behind and before, and my affectation of walking continually on my two hinder feet. He deſired to ſee no more; and gave me leave to put on my cloaths again, for I was ſhuddering with cold.

I expreſſed my uneaſineſs at his giving me ſo often the appellation of *yahoo*, an odious animal, for which I had ſo utter an hatred and contempt; I begged he would forbear applying that word to me, and take the ſame order in his family, and among his friends, whom he ſuffered to ſee me. I requeſted likewiſe, that the ſecret of my having a falſe covering to my body might be known to none but himſelf, at leaſt as long as my preſent cloathing ſhould laſt; for as to what the ſorrel nag his valet had obſerved, his honour might command him to conceal it.

All this my maſter very graciouſly conſented to, and thus the ſecret was kept till my cloaths began to wear out, which I was forced to ſupply by ſeveral contrivances, that ſhall hereafter be mentioned. In the mean time he deſired

deſired I would go on with my utmoſt diligence to learn their language, becauſe he was more aſtoniſhed at my capacity for ſpeech and reaſon, than at the figure of my body, whether it were covered or no; adding, that he waited with ſome impatience to hear the wonders, which I promiſed to tell him.

From thenceforward he doubled the pains he had been at to inſtruct me; he brought me into all company, and made them treat me with civility, becauſe, as he told them privately, this would put me into good humour, and make me more diverting.

Every day, when I waited on him, beſide the trouble he was at in teaching, he would aſk me ſeveral queſtions concerning myſelf, which I anſwered as well as I could; and by theſe means he had already received ſome general ideas, though very imperfect. It would be tedious to relate the ſeveral ſteps, by which I advanced to a more regular converſation: but the firſt account I gave of myſelf in any order and length, was to this purpoſe:

That I came from a very far country, as I already had attempted to tell him, with about fifty more of my own ſpecies; that we travelled upon the ſeas in a great hollow veſſel made of wood, and larger than his honour's houſe. I deſcribed the ſhip to him in the beſt terms I could, and explained by the help of my handkerchief diſplayed, how it was driven forward by the wind. That upon a quarrel among us I was ſet on ſhore on this coaſt, where I walked forward, without knowing whither, till he delivered me from the perſecution of thoſe execrable *yahoos*. He aſked me, who made the ſhip, and how it was poſſible that the Houyhnhnms of my country would leave it to the management of brutes? My anſwer was, that I durſt proceed no farther in my relation, unleſs he would give me his word and honour that he would not be offended, and then I would tell him the wonders I had ſo often promiſed. He agreed; and I went on by aſſuring him, that the ſhip was made by creatures like myſelf, who in all the countries I had travelled, as well as in my own, were the only governing, rational animals; and that upon my arrival hither I was as much aſtoniſhed to ſee the Houyhnhnms act like rational beings, as he or his friends could be in finding ſome marks

of

of reaſon in a creature he was pleaſed to call a *yahoo*; to which I owned my reſemblance in every part, but could not account for their degenerate and brutal nature. I ſaid farther, that if good fortune ever reſtored me to my native country to relate my travels hither, as I reſolved to do, every body would believe, that I *ſaid the thing which was not*; that I invented the ſtory out of my own head; and (with all poſſible reſpect to himſelf, his family, and friends, and under his promiſe of not being offended) our countrymen would hardly think it probable, that a Houyhnhnm ſhould be the preſiding creature of a nation, and a *yahoo* the brute.

CHAP. IV.

The Houyhnhnms *notion of truth and falſhood. The author's diſcourſe diſapproved by his maſter. The author gives a more particular account of himſelf, and the accidents of his voyage.*

MY maſter heard me with great appearances of uneaſineſs in his countenance; becauſe *doubting*, or *not believing*, are ſo little known in this country, that the inhabitants cannot tell how to behave themſelves under ſuch circumſtances. And I remember, in frequent diſcourſes with my maſter concerning the nature of manhood in other parts of the world, having occaſion to talk of *lying* and *falſe repreſentation*, it was with much difficulty that he comprehended what I meant; although he had otherwiſe a moſt acute judgment. For he argued thus: that the uſe of ſpeech was to make us underſtand one another, and to receive information of facts; now, if any one *ſaid the thing which was not*, theſe ends were defeated; becauſe I cannot properly be ſaid to underſtand him; and I am ſo far from receiving information, that he leaves me worſe than in ignorance; for I am led to believe a thing *black* when it is *white*, and *ſhort* when it is *long*. And theſe were all the notions he had concerning that faculty of *lying*, ſo perfectly well underſtood, and ſo univerſally practiſed, among human creatures.

To return from this digreſſion; when I aſſerted that the

the *yahoos* were the only governing animals in my country, which my maſter ſaid was altogether paſt his conception, he deſired to know, whether we had Houyhnhnms among us, and what was their employment? I told him, we had great numbers; that in ſummer they grazed in the fields, and in winter were kept in houſes with hay and oats, where *yahoo*-ſervants were employed to rub their ſkins ſmooth, comb their manes, pick their feet, ſerve them with food, and make their beds. I underſtand you well, ſaid my maſter; it is now very plain from all you have ſpoken, that, whatever ſhare of reaſon the *yahoos* pretend to, the Houyhnhnms are your maſters; I heartily wiſh our *yahoos* would be ſo tractable. I begged his honour would pleaſe to excuſe me from proceeding any farther, becauſe I was very certain that the account he expected from me would be highly diſpleaſing. But he inſiſted in commanding me to let him know the beſt and the worſt: I told him he ſhould be obeyed. I owned, that the Houyhnhnms among us, whom we called *horſes*, were the moſt generous and comely animal we had; that they excelled in ſtrength and ſwiftneſs; and when they belonged to perſons of quality, were employed in travelling, racing, or drawing chariots; they were treated with much kindneſs and care, till they fell into diſeaſes, or became foundered in the feet; but then they were ſold, and uſed to all kind of drudgery, till they died; after which their ſkins were ſtripped, and ſold for what they were worth, and their bodies left to be devoured by dogs and birds of prey. But the common race of horſes had not ſo good fortune, being kept by farmers and carriers and other mean people, who put them to greater labour, and fed them worſe. I deſcribed, as well as I could, our way of riding; the ſhape and uſe of a bridle, a ſaddle, a ſpur, and a whip; of hardneſs and wheels. I added, that we faſtened plates of a certain hard ſubſtance, called *iron*, at the bottom of their feet, to preſerve their hoofs from being broken by the ſtony ways, on which we often travelled.

My maſter, after ſome expreſſions of great indignation, wondered how we dared to venture upon a Houyhnhnm's back; for he was ſure, that the weakeſt ſervant in his houſe would be able to ſhake off the ſtrongeſt

eſt *yahoo*; or by lying down, and rolling on his back, ſqueeſe the brute to death. I anſwered, that our horſes were trained up from three or four years old to the ſeveral uſes we intended them for; that, if any of them proved intolerably vicious, they were employed for carriages; that they were ſeverely beaten, while they were young, for any miſchievous tricks: that the males, deſigned for the common uſe of riding or draught, were generally *caſtrated* about two years after their birth to take down their ſpirits and make them more tame and gentle; that they were indeed ſenſible of rewards and puniſhments; but his honour would pleaſe to conſider, that they had not the leaſt tincture of reaſon, any more than the *yahoos* in this country.

IT put me to the pains of many circumlocutions to give my maſter a right idea of what I ſpoke; for their language doth not abound in variety of words, becauſe their wants and paſſions are fewer than among us. But it is impoſſible to expreſs his noble reſentment at our ſavage treatment of the Houyhnhnm race; particularly after I had explained the manner and uſe of *caſtroting* horſes among us to hinder them from propagating their kind, and to render them more ſervile. He ſaid, if it were poſſible there could be any country, where *yahoos* alone were endued with reaſon, they certainly muſt be the governing animal, becauſe reaſon will in time always prevail againſt brutal ſtrength. But, conſidering the frame of our bodies, and eſpecially of mine, he thought no creature of equal bulk was ſo ill contrived for employing that reaſon in the common offices of life; whereupon he deſired to know, whether thoſe, among whom I lived, reſembled me or the *yahoos* of his country. I aſſured him, that I was as well ſhaped as moſt of my age: but the younger, and the females, were much more ſoft and tender, and the ſkins of the latter generally as white as milk. He ſaid, I differed indeed from other *yahoos*, being much more cleanly, and not altogether ſo deformed; but in point of real advantage he thought I differed for the worſe. That my nails were of no uſe either to my fore or hinder feet; as to my fore-feet, he could not properly call them by that name, for he never obſerved me to walk upon them; that they were too ſoft to bear the ground; that I generally

went with them uncovered, neither was the covering I ſometimes wore on them of the ſame ſhape, or ſo ſtrong as that on my feet behind. That I could not walk with any ſecurity, for if either of my hinder-feet ſlipped, I muſt inevitably fall. He then began to find fault with other parts of my body; the flatneſs of my face, the prominence of my noſe, mine eyes placed directly in front, ſo that I could not look on either ſide without turning my head: that I was not able to feed myſelf without lifting one of my fore-feet to my mouth: and therefore nature had placed thoſe joints to anſwer that neceſſity. He knew not what could be the uſe of thoſe ſeveral clefts and diviſions in my feet behind; that theſe were too ſoft to bear the hardneſs and ſharpneſs of ſtones without a covering made from the ſkin of ſome other brute; that my whole body wanted a fence againſt heat and cold, which I was forced to put on and off every day with tediouſneſs and trouble. And laſtly, that he obſerved every animal in this country naturally to abhor the *yahoos*, whom the weaker avoided, and the ſtronger drove from them. So that, ſuppoſing us to have the gift of reaſon, he could not ſee how it were poſſible to cure that natural antipathy, which every creature diſcovered againſt us; nor conſequently, how we could tame and render them ſerviceable. However, he would (as he ſaid) debate the matter no farther, becauſe he was more deſirous to know my own ſtory, the country where I was born, and the ſeveral actions and events of my life before I came hither.

I aſſured him, how extremely deſirous I was, that he ſhould be ſatisfied in every point: but I doubted much, whether it would be poſſible for me to explain myſelf on ſeveral ſubjects, whereof his honour could have no conception; becauſe I ſaw nothing in his country, to which I could reſemble them. That however I would do my beſt, and ſtrive to expreſs myſelf by ſimilitudes, humbly deſiring his aſſiſtance, when I wanted proper words; which he was pleaſed to promiſe me.

I ſaid, my birth was of honeſt parents in an iſland called England, which was remote from this country as many days journey, as the ſtrongeſt of his honour's ſervants could travel in the annual courſe of the ſun. That I

was

was bred a ſurgeon, whoſe trade it is to cure wounds and hurts in the body gotten by accident or violence; that my country was governed by a female man, whom we called Queen. That I left it to get riches, whereby I might maintain myſelf and family when I ſhould return. That in my laſt voyage I was commander of the ſhip, and had about fifty *yahoos* under me, many of which died at ſea, and I was forced to ſupply them by others picked out from ſeveral nations. That our ſhip was twice in danger of being ſunk; the firſt time by a great ſtorm, and the ſecond by ſtriking againſt a rock. Here my maſter interpoſed by aſking me, how I could perſuade ſtrangers out of different countries to venture with me, after the loſſes I had ſuſtained, and the hazards I had run. I ſaid, they were fellows of deſperate fortunes, forced to fly from the places of their birth on account of their poverty or their crimes. Some were undone by law-ſuits; others ſpent all they had in drinking, whoring, and gaming; others fled for treaſon; many for murder, theft, poiſoning, robbery, perjury, forgery, coining falſe money, for committing rapes or ſodomy, for flying from their colours, or deſerting to the enemy, and moſt of them had broken priſon; none of theſe durſt return to their native countries for fear of being hanged, or of ſtarving in a jail; and therefore they were under a neceſſity of ſeeking a livelihood in other places.

DURING this diſcourſe, my maſter was pleaſed to interrupt me ſeveral times; I had made uſe of many circumlocutions in deſcribing to him the nature of the ſeveral crimes, for which moſt of our crew had been forced to fly their country. This labour took up ſeveral days converſation, before he was able to comprehend me. He was wholly at a loſs to know, what could be the uſe or neceſſity of practiſing thoſe vices. To clear up which, I endeavoured to give him ſome ideas of the deſire of power and riches; of the terrible effects of luſt, intemperance, malice, and envy. All this I was forced to define and deſcribe by putting caſes, and making ſuppoſitions. After which, like one whoſe imagination was ſtruck with ſomething never ſeen or heard of before, he would lift up his eyes *with amazement* and indignation. Power, *government, war, law,* puniſhment, and a thouſand other

went with them uncovered, neither was the covering I ſometimes wore on them of the ſame ſhape, or ſo ſtrong as that on my feet behind. That I could not walk with any ſecurity, for if either of my hinder-feet ſlipped, I muſt inevitably fall. He then began to find fault with other parts of my body; the flatneſs of my face, the prominence of my noſe, mine eyes placed directly in front, ſo that I could not look on either ſide without turning my head: that I was not able to feed myſelf without lifting one of my fore-feet to my mouth: and therefore nature had placed thoſe joints to anſwer that neceſſity. He knew not what could be the uſe of thoſe ſeveral clefts and diviſions in my feet behind; that theſe were too ſoft to bear the hardneſs and ſharpneſs of ſtones without a covering made from the ſkin of ſome other brute; that my whole body wanted a fence againſt heat and cold, which I was forced to put on and off every day with tedioufneſs and trouble. And laſtly, that he obſerved every animal in this country naturally to abhor the *yahoos*, whom the weaker avoided, and the ſtronger drove from them. So that, ſuppoſing us to have the gift of reaſon, he could not ſee how it were poſſible to cure that natural antipathy, which every creature diſcovered againſt us; nor conſequently, how we could tame and render them ſerviceable. However, he would (as he ſaid) debate the matter no farther, becauſe he was more deſirous to know my own ſtory, the country where I was born, and the ſeveral actions and events of my life before I came hither.

I aſſured him, how extremely deſirous I was, that he ſhould be ſatisfied in every point: but I doubted much, whether it would be poſſible for me to explain myſelf on ſeveral ſubjects, whereof his honour could have no conception; becauſe I ſaw nothing in his country, to which I could reſemble them. That however I would do my beſt, and ſtrive to expreſs myſelf by ſimilitudes, humbly deſiring his aſſiſtance, when I wanted proper words; which he was pleaſed to promiſe me.

I ſaid, my birth was of honeſt parents in an iſland called England, which was remote from this country as many days journey, as the ſtrongeſt of his honour's ſervants could travel in the annual courſe of the ſun. That I

was

was bred a ſurgeon, whoſe trade it is to cure wounds and hurts in the body gotten by accident or violence; that my country was governed by a female man, whom we called Queen. That I left it to get riches, whereby I might maintain myſelf and family when I ſhould return. That in my laſt voyage I was commander of the ſhip, and had about fifty *yahoos* under me, many of which died at ſea, and I was forced to ſupply them by others picked out from ſeveral nations. That our ſhip was twice in danger of being ſunk; the firſt time by a great ſtorm, and the ſecond by ſtriking againſt a rock. Here my maſter interpoſed by aſking me, how I could perſuade ſtrangers out of different countries to venture with me, after the loſſes I had ſuſtained, and the hazards I had run. I ſaid, they were fellows of deſperate fortunes, forced to fly from the places of their birth on account of their poverty or their crimes. Some were undone by law-ſuits; others ſpent all they had in drinking, whoring, and gaming; others fled for treaſon; many for murder, theft, poiſoning, robbery, perjury, forgery, coining falſe money, for committing rapes or ſodomy, for flying from their colours, or deſerting to the enemy, and moſt of them had broken priſon; none of theſe durſt return to their native countries for fear of being hanged, or of ſtarving in a jail; and therefore they were under a neceſſity of ſeeking a livelihood in other places.

DURING this diſcourſe, my maſter was pleaſed to interrupt me ſeveral times; I had made uſe of many circumlocutions in deſcribing to him the nature of the ſeveral crimes, for which moſt of our crew had been forced to fly their country. This labour took up ſeveral days converſation, before he was able to comprehend me. He was wholly at a loſs to know, what could be the uſe or neceſſity of practiſing thoſe vices. To clear up which, I endeavoured to give him ſome ideas of the deſire of power and riches; of the terrible effects of luſt, intemperance, malice, and envy. All this I was forced to define and deſcribe by putting caſes, and making ſuppoſitions. After which, like one whoſe imagination was ſtruck with ſomething never ſeen or heard of before, he would lift up his eyes with amazement and indignation. Power, government, war, law, puniſhment, and a thouſand other

things had no terms, wherein that language could expreſs them; which made the difficulty almoſt inſuperable to give my maſter any conception of what I meant. But being of an excellent underſtanding, much improved by contemplation and converſe, he at laſt arrived at a competent knowledge of what human nature in our parts of the world is capable to perform, and deſired I would give him ſome particular account of that land, which we call Europe, but eſpecially of my own country.

CHAP. V.

The author, at his maſter's commands, informs him of the ſtate of England. The cauſes of war among the princes of Europe. The author begins to explain the Engliſh conſtitution.

THE reader may pleaſe to obſerve, that the following extract of many converſations I had with my maſter, contains a ſummary of the moſt material points, which were diſcourſed at ſeveral times for above two years; his honour often deſiring fuller ſatisfaction, as I farther improved in the Houyhnhnm tongue. I laid before him, as well as I could, the whole ſtate of Europe; I diſcourſed of trade and manufactures, of arts and ſciences; and the anſwers I gave to all the queſtions he made as they aroſe upon ſeveral ſubjects, were a fund of converſation not to be exhauſted. But I ſhall here only ſet down the ſubſtance of what paſſed between us concerning my own country, reducing it into order as well as I can, without any regard to time or other circumſtances, while I ſtrictly adhere to truth. My only concern is, that I ſhall hardly be able to do juſtice to my maſter's arguments and expreſſions, which muſt needs ſuffer by my want of capacity, as well as by a tranſlation into our barbarous Engliſh.

IN obedience therefore to his honour's commands, I related to him the *revolution* under the Prince of Orange; the long war with France entered into by the ſaid Prince, and renewed by his ſucceſſor the preſent Queen, wherein the greateſt powers of Chriſtendom were engaged, and which

which ſtill continued: I computed, at his requeſt, that about a million of *yahoos* might have been killed in the whole progreſs of it; and perhaps a hundred or more cities taken, and five times as many ſhips burnt or ſunk.

He aſked me, what were the uſual cauſes or motives that made one country go to war with another. I anſwered they were innumerable; but I ſhould only mention a few of the chief. Sometimes the ambition of Princes, who never think they have land or people enough to govern. Sometimes the corruption of miniſters, who engage their maſter in a war in order to ſtifle or divert the clamour of the ſubjects againſt their evil adminiſtration. Difference in opinions hath coſt many millions of lives: for inſtance, whether *fleſh* be *bread*, or *bread* be *fleſh*; whether the juice of a certain *berry* be *blood* or *wine**; whether *whiſtling* be a vice or a virtue †; whether it be better to *kiſs a poſt*, or throw it into the fire ‡; what is the beſt colour for a *coat*, whether *black*, *white*, *red*, or *grey*; and whether it ſhould be *long* or *ſhort*, *narrow* or *wide*, *dirty* or *clean*, with many more **. Neither are any wars ſo furious and bloody, or of ſo long continuance, as thoſe occaſioned by difference in opinion, eſpecially if it be in things indifferent.

Sometimes the quarrel between two Princes is to decide, which of them ſhall diſpoſſeſs a third of his dominions, where neither of them pretend to any right. Sometimes one Prince quarrelleth with another, for fear the other ſhould quarrel with him. Sometimes a war is entered upon becauſe the enemy is too *ſtrong*; and ſometimes becauſe he is too *weak*. Sometimes our neighbours *want* the *things* which we *have*, or *have* the things which we *want*; and we both fight, till they take ours, or give us theirs. It is a very juſtifiable cauſe of a war, to invade a country after the people have been waſted by famine, deſtroyed by peſtilence, or embroiled by factions among themſelves. It is juſtifiable to enter into a war againſt our neareſt ally, when one of his towns lie convenient for us, or a territory of land, that would render our

* Tranſubſtantiation. † Church-muſic. ‡ Kiſſing a croſs.
** The colour and make of conſecrated veſtments, and different orders of Popiſh eccleſiaſtics. *Hawkeſ.*

dominions round and compact. If a Prince ſends forces into a nation, where the people are poor and ignorant, he may lawfully put half of them to death, and make ſlaves of the reſt, in order to civilize and reduce them from their barbarous way of living. It is a very kingly, honourable, and frequent practice, when one Prince deſires the aſſiſtance of another to ſecure him againſt an invaſion, that the aſſiſtant, when he hath driven out the invader, ſhould ſeize on the dominions himſelf, and kill, impriſon, or baniſh the Prince he came to relieve. Alliance by blood, or marriage, is a frequent cauſe of war between Princes; and the nearer the kindred is, the greater is their diſpoſition to quarrel: *poor* nations are *hungry*, and *rich* nations are *proud*; and pride and hunger will ever be at variance. For theſe reaſons, the trade of a *ſoldier* is held the moſt honourable of all others; becauſe a *ſoldier* is a *yahoo* hired to kill in cold blood as many of his own ſpecies, who have never offended him, as poſſibly he can.

THERE is likewiſe a kind of beggarly Princes in Europe, not able to make war by themſelves, who hire out their troops to richer nations, for ſo much a day to each man; of which they keep three-fourths to themſelves, and it is the beſt part of their maintenance; ſuch are thoſe in many *northern* parts of Europe.

WHAT you have told me (ſaid my maſter) upon the ſubject of war, does indeed diſcover moſt admirably the effects of that reaſon you pretend to: however it is happy that the *ſhame* is greater than the *danger*; and that nature hath left you utterly incapable of doing much miſchief. For, your mouths lying flat with your faces, you can hardly bite each other to any purpoſe, unleſs by conſent. Then as to the claws upon your feet before and behind, they are ſo ſhort and tender, that one of our *yahoos* would drive a dozen of yours before him. And therefore in recounting the numbers of thoſe who have been killed in battle, I cannot but think you have *ſaid the thing which is not*.

I could not forbear ſhaking my head, and ſmiling a little at his ignorance. And being no ſtranger to the art of war, I gave him a deſcription of cannons, culverins, muſquets, carabines, piſtols, bullets, powder, ſwords, bayonets,

bayonets, battles, ſieges, retreats, attacks, undermines, countermines, bombardments, ſea-fights, ſhips ſunk with a thouſand men, twenty thouſand killed on each ſide, dying groans, limbs flying in the air, ſmoke, noiſe, confuſion, trampling to death under horſes feet; flight, purſuit, victory; fields ſtrewed with carcaſes, left for food to dogs and wolves, and birds of prey; plundering, ſtripping, raviſhing, burning and deſtroying. And to ſet forth the valour of my own dear countrymen, I aſſured him, that I had ſeen them blow up a hundred enemies at once in a ſiege, and as many in a ſhip; and beheld the dead bodies drop down in pieces from the clouds, to the great diverſion of the ſpectators*.

I was going on to more particulars, when my maſter commanded me ſilence. He ſaid, whoever underſtood the nature of *yahoos*, might eaſily believe it poſſible for ſo vile an animal to be capable of every action I had named, if their ſtrength and cunning equalled their malice. But as my diſcourſe had increaſed his abhorrence of the whole ſpecies, ſo he found it gave him a diſturbance in his mind, to

* It would perhaps be impoſſible, by the moſt laboured argument or forcible eloquence, to ſhew the abſurd injuſtice and horrid cruelty of war ſo effectually, as by this ſimple exhibition of them in a new light. With war, including every ſpecies of iniquity and every art of deſtruction, we become familiar by degrees, under ſpecious terms, which are ſeldom examined, becauſe they are learned at an age, in which the mind implicitly receives and retains whatever is impreſt. Thus it happens, that when one man murders another to gratify his luſt, we ſhudder; but when one man murders a million to gratify his vanity, we approve and we admire, we envy and we applaud. If, when this and the preceeding pages are read, we diſcover with aſtoniſhment, that when the ſame events have occurred in hiſtory, we felt no emotion, and acquieſced in wars which we could not but know to have been commenced for ſuch cauſes, and carried on by ſuch means; let not him be cenſured for too much debaſing his ſpecies, who has contributed to their felicity and preſervation, by ſtripping off the veil of cuſtom and prejudice, and holding up, in their native deformity, the vices by which they become wretched, and the arts by which they are deſtroyed. *Hawkeſ.*

to which he was wholly a ſtranger before. He thought his ears, being uſed to ſuch abominable words, might by degrees admit them with leſs deteſtation. That altho' he hated the *yahoos* of this country, yet he no more blamed them for their odious qualities, than he did a *gnnayh* (a bird of prey) for its cruelty, or a ſharp ſtone for cutting his hoof. But when a creature, pretending to reaſon, could be capable of ſuch enormities, he dreaded, leſt the corruption of that faculty might be worſe than brutality itſelf. He ſeemed therefore confident, that inſtead of reaſon we were only poſſeſſed of ſome quality fitted to encreaſe our natural vices; as the reflection from a troubled ſtream returns the image of an ill-ſhapen body not only *larger* but more *diſtorted*.

He added, that he had heard too much upon the ſubject of war, both in this and ſome former diſcourſes. There was another point, which a little perplexed him at preſent. I had informed him, that ſome of our crew left their country on account of being ruined by *law*; that I had already explained the meaning of the word; but he was at a loſs how it ſhould come to paſs, that the *law*, which was intended for every man's preſervation, ſhould be any man's ruin. Therefore he deſired to be farther ſatisfied what I meant by *law*, and the *diſpenſers* thereof, according to the preſent practice in my own country: becauſe he thought *nature* and *reaſon* were ſufficient guides for a reaſonable animal, as we pretended to be, in ſhewing us what we ought to do, and what to avoid.

I aſſured his honour, that *law* was a ſcience, in which I had not much converſed, further than by employing advocates in vain upon ſome injuſtices that had been done me; however I would give him all the ſatisfaction I was able.

I ſaid, there was a ſociety of men among us bred up from their youth in the art of proving by words multiplied for the purpoſe, that *white* is *black*, and *black* is *white*, according as they are paid*. To this ſociety all the reſt of the people are ſlaves. For example, if my neighbour

* As in every cauſe counſil are fee'd on both ſides, it cannot be pretended, that this account is much exaggerated. *Hawkeſ.*

bour hath a mind to my *cow*, he hires a *lawyer* to prove that he ought to have my *cow* from me. I muſt then hire another to defend my right, it being againſt all rules of *law*, that any man ſhould be allowed to ſpeak for himſelf. Now in this caſe I, who am the right owner, lie under two great diſadvantages; *firſt*, my *lawyer*, being practiſed almoſt from his cradle in defending falſhood, is quite out of his element when he would be an advocate for juſtice, which is an unnatural office he always attempts with great awkwardneſs, if not with ill will. The *ſecond* diſadvantage is, that my *lawyer* muſt proceed with great caution, or elſe he will be reprimanded by the *judges*, and abhorred by his brethren as one that would leſſen the practice of the *law*. And therefore I have but two methods to preſerve my *cow*. The firſt is, to gain over my adverſary's *lawyer* with a double fee; who will then betray his client by inſinuating, that he hath *juſtice* on his ſide. The ſecond way is, for my *lawyer* to make my cauſe appear as *unjuſt* as he can by ſhowing the *cow* to belong to my adverſary; and this, if it be ſkilfully done, will certainly beſpeak the favour of the bench. Now your honour is to know, that theſe *judges* are perſons appointed to decide all controverſies of property, as well as for the trial of criminals, and picked out from the moſt dextrous lawyers who are grown old or lazy; and having been biaſſed all their lives againſt truth and equity, lie under ſuch a fatal neceſſity of favouring fraud, perjury, and oppreſſion, that I have known ſome of them refuſe a large bribe from the ſide where juſtice lay, rather than injure the faculty by doing any thing unbecoming their nature or their office.

IT is a maxim among theſe lawyers, that whatever hath been done before, may legally be done again: and therefore they take ſpecial care to record all the deciſions formerly made againſt common juſtice, and the general reaſon of mankind. Theſe, under the name of *precedents*, they produce as authorities to juſtify the moſt iniquitous opinions, and the judges never fail of directing accordingly.

IN pleading they ſtudiouſly avoid entering into the *merits* of the cauſe; but are loud, violent, and tedious, in dwelling upon all *circumſtances* which are not to the pur-

poſe,

poſe. For inſtance, in the caſe already mentioned: they never deſire to know what claim or title my adverſary hath to my *cow*; but whether the ſaid *cow* were red or black; her horns long or ſhort; whether the field I graze her in be round or ſquare; whether ſhe was milked at home or abroad; what diſeaſes ſhe is ſubject to, and the like; after which they conſult *precedents*, adjourn the cauſe from time to time, and in ten, twenty, or thirty years come to an iſſue.

It is likewiſe to be obſerved, that this ſociety hath a peculiar cant and jargon of their own, that no other mortal can underſtand, and wherein all their laws are written, which they take ſpecial care to multiply; whereby they have wholly confounded the very eſſence of truth and falſhood, of right and wrong; ſo that it will take thirty years to decide, whether the field left me by my anceſtors for ſix generations belongs to me or to a ſtranger three hundred miles off.

In the trial of perſons accuſed for crimes againſt the ſtate, the method is much more ſhort and commendable: the judge firſt ſends to ſound the diſpoſition of thoſe in power, after which he can eaſily hang or ſave a criminal, ſtrictly preſerving all due forms of *law*.

Here my maſter interpoſing, ſaid, it was a pity, that creatures endued with ſuch prodigious abilities of mind, as theſe *lawyers* by the deſcription I gave of them muſt certainly be, were not rather encouraged to be inſtructors of others in wiſdom and knowledge. In anſwer to which I aſſured his honour, that in all points out of their own trade they were uſually the moſt ignorant and ſtupid generation among us, the moſt deſpicable in common converſation, avowed enemies to all knowledge and learning, and equally diſpoſed to pervert the general reaſon of mankind in every other ſubject of diſcourſe as in that of their own profeſſion.

CHAP. VI.

CHAP. VI.

A continuation of the ſtate of England under Queen Anne. The character of a firſt miniſter of ſtate in European courts.

MY maſter was yet wholly at a loſs to underſtand what motives could incite this race of *lawyers* to perplex, diſquiet, and weary themſelves, and engage in a confederacy of injuſtice, merely for the ſake of injuring their fellow-animals; neither could he comprehend what I meant in ſaying they did it for *hire*. Whereupon I was at much pains to deſcribe to him the uſe of *money*, the materials it was made of, and the value of the metals; that when a *yahoo* had got a great ſtore of this precious ſubſtance, he was able to purchaſe whatever he had a mind to, the fineſt clothing, the nobleſt houſes, great tracts of land, the moſt coſtly meats and drinks; and have his choice of the moſt beautiful females. Therefore, ſince *money* alone was able to perform all theſe feats, our *yahoos* thought they could never have enough of it to ſpend, or to ſave, as they found themſelves inclined from their natural bent either to profuſion or avarice. That the rich man enjoyed the fruit of the poor man's labour, and the latter were a thouſand to one in proportion to the former. That the bulk of our people were forced to live miſerably, by labouring every day for ſmall wages, to make a few live plentifully. I enlarged myſelf much on theſe and many other particulars to the ſame purpoſe: but his honour was ſtill to ſeek; for he went upon a ſuppoſition, that all animals had a title to their ſhare in the productions of the earth, and eſpecially thoſe who preſided over the reſt. Therefore he deſired I would let him know what theſe coſtly meats were, and how any of us happened to want them. Whereupon I enumerated as many ſorts as came into my head, with the various methods of dreſſing them, which could not be done without ſending veſſels by ſea to every part of the world, as well for liquors to drink, as for ſauces, and innumerable other conveniencies. I aſſured him that this

this whole globe of earth muſt be at leaſt three times gone round, before one of our better female *yahoos* could get her breakfaſt or a cup to put it in. He ſaid, that muſt needs be a miſerable country, which cannot furniſh food for its own inhabitants. But what he chiefly wondered at was, how ſuch vaſt tracts of ground, as I deſcribed, ſhould be wholly without *freſh water*, and the people put to the neceſſity of ſending over the ſea for drink. I replied, that England (the dear place of my nativity) was computed to produce three times the quantity of food, more than its inhabitants are able to conſume, as well as liquors extracted from grain, or preſſed out of the fruit of certain trees, which made excellent drink; and the ſame proportion in every other convenience of life. But in order to feed the luxury and intemperance of the males, and the vanity of the females, we ſent away the greateſt part of our neceſſary things to other countries, from whence we in return brought the materials of diſeaſes, folly, and vice, to ſpend among ourſelves. Hence it follows of neceſſity, that vaſt numbers of our people are compelled to ſeek their livelihood by begging, robbing, ſtealing, cheating, pimping, flattering, ſuborning, forſwearing, forging, gaming, lying, fawning, hectoring, voting, ſcribling, ſtar-gazing, poiſoning, whoring, canting, libelling, free-thinking, and the like occupations: every one of which terms I was at much pains to make him underſtand.

THAT *wine* was not imported among us from foreign countries to ſupply the want of water, or other drinks, but becauſe it was a ſort of liquid, which made us merry by putting us out of our ſenſes, diverted all melancholy thoughts, begat wild extravagant imaginations in the brain, raiſed our hopes, and baniſhed our fears; ſuſpended every office of reaſon for a time, and deprived us of the uſe of our limbs, till we fell into a profound ſleep; altho', it muſt be confeſſed, that we always awaked ſick and diſpirited; and that the uſe of this liquor filled us with diſeaſes, which made our lives uncomfortable and ſhort*.

* This account excites ideas of drunkenneſs, very different from thoſe which are conceived under the terms by which it is *generally* expreſſed. *Hawkeſ.*

But beſide all this, the bulk of our people ſupported themſelves by furniſhing the neceſſities or conveniencies of life to the rich, and to each other. For inſtance, when I am at home, and dreſſed as I ought to be, I carry on my body the workmanſhip of an hundred tradeſmen; the building and furniture of my houſe employ as many more, and five times the number to adorn my wife.

I was going on to tell him of another ſort of people, who get their livelihood by attending the ſick, having upon ſome occaſions informed his honour, that many of my crew had died of diſeaſes. But here it was with the utmoſt difficulty, that I brought him to apprehend what I meant. He could eaſily conceive, that a Houyhnhnm grew weak and heavy a few days before his death, or by ſome accident might hurt a limb: but that nature, who works all things to perfection, ſhould ſuffer any pains to breed in our bodies, he thought impoſſible, and deſired to know the reaſon of ſo unaccountable an evil. I told him, we fed on a thouſand things, which operated contrary to each other; that we eat when we are not hungry, and drank without the provocation of thirſt; that we ſat whole nights drinking ſtrong liquors without eating a bit, which diſpoſed us to ſloth, enflamed our bodies, and precipitated or prevented digeſtion. That proſtitute female *yahoos* acquired a certain malady, which bred rottenneſs in the bones of thoſe who fell into their embraces; that this and many other diſeaſes were propagated from father to ſon; ſo that great numbers come into the world with complicated maladies upon them: that it would be endleſs to give him a catalogue of all diſeaſes incident to human bodies; for they could not be fewer than five or ſix hundred ſpread over every limb and joint; in ſhort, every part, external and inteſtine, having diſeaſes appropriated to itſelf. To remedy which there was a ſort of people bred up among us in the profeſſion, or pretence, of curing the ſick. And becauſe I had ſome ſkill in the faculty, I would in gratitude to his honour let him know the whole myſtery and method, by which they proceed.

Their fundamental is, that all diſeaſes ariſe from *repletion*; from whence they conclude, that a great *evacuation* of the body is neceſſary either thro' the natural paſ-

ſage, or upwards at the mouth. Their next buſineſs is from herbs, minerals, gums, oils, ſhells, ſalts, juices, ſea-weed, excrements, barks of trees, ſerpents, toads, frogs, ſpiders, dead mens fleſh and bones, birds, beaſts, and fiſhes, to form a compoſition for ſmell and taſte the moſt abominable, nauſeous, and deteſtable, they can poſſibly contrive, which the ſtomach immediately rejects with lothing; and this they call a *vomit*: or elſe from the ſame ſtore-houſe, with ſome other poiſonous additions, they command us to take in at the orifice *above* or *below* (juſt as the phyſician then happens to be diſpoſed) a medicine equally annoying and diſguſtful to the bowels; which relaxing the belly, drives down all before it; and this they call a *purge* or a *clyſter*. For nature (as the phyſicians alledge) having intended the ſuperior anterior orifice only for the *intromiſſion* of ſolids and liquids, and the inferior poſterior for ejection; theſe artiſts ingeniouſly conſidering that in all diſeaſes nature is forced out of her ſeat, therefore to replace her in it, the body muſt be treated in a manner directly contrary, by interchanging the uſe of each orifice; forcing ſolids and liquids in at the *anus*, and making evacuations at the mouth.

But beſides real diſeaſes, we are ſubject to many that are only imaginary, for which the phyſicians have invented imaginary cures; theſe have their ſeveral names, and ſo have the drugs that are proper for them; and with theſe our female *yahoos* are always infeſted.

One great excellency in this tribe is their ſkill at *prognoſtics*, wherein they ſeldom fail; their predictions in real diſeaſes, when they riſe to any degree of malignity, generally portending *death*, which is always in their power, when recovery is not: and therefore upon any unexpected ſigns of amendment after they have pronounced their ſentence, rather than be accuſed as falſe prophets, they know how to approve their ſagacity to the world by a ſeaſonable doſe.

They are likewiſe of ſpecial uſe to huſbands and wives, who are grown weary of their mates; to eldeſt ſons, to great miniſters of ſtate, and often to princes.

I had formerly upon occaſion diſcourſed with my maſter upon the nature of *government* in general, and particularly of our own *excellent conſtitution*, deſervedly the wonder

wonder and envy of the whole world. But having here accidentally mentioned a *miniſter of ſtate*, he commanded me ſome time after to inform him, what ſpecies of *yahoo* I particularly meant by that appellation.

I told him, that a firſt or chief miniſter of ſtate, who was the perſon I intended to deſcribe, was a creature wholly exempt from joy and grief, love and hatred, pity and anger; at leaſt, makes uſe of no other paſſions but a violent deſire of wealth, power and titles; that he applies his words to all uſes, except to the indication of his mind; that he never tells a *truth* but with an intent that you ſhould take it for a *lie*; nor a *lie*, but with a deſign that you ſhould take it for a *truth*; that thoſe he ſpeaks worſt of behind their backs are in the ſureſt way of preferment: and whenever he begins to praiſe you to others, or to yourſelf, you are from that day forlorn. The worſt mark you can receive is a *promiſe*, eſpecially when it is confirmed with an oath; after which every wiſe man retires, and gives over all hopes.

There are three methods, by which a man may riſe to be chief miniſter. The firſt is by knowing how with prudence to diſpoſe of a wife, a daughter, or a ſiſter: the ſecond, by betraying or undermining his predeceſſor: and the third is by a *furious zeal* in public aſſemblies againſt the corruptions of the court. But a wiſe prince would rather chooſe to employ thoſe, who practiſe the laſt of theſe methods; becauſe ſuch zealots prove always the moſt obſequious and ſubſervient to the will and paſſions of their maſter. That theſe *miniſters*, having all employments at their diſpoſal, preſerve themſelves in power by bribing the majority of a ſenate or great council; and at laſt by an expedient, called an *act of indemnity* (whereof I deſcribed the nature to him) they ſecure themſelves from after reckonings, and retire from the public laden with the ſpoils of the nation.

The palace of a *chief miniſter* is a ſeminary to breed up others in his own trade: the pages, lacquies, and porter by imitating their maſter, become *miniſters of ſtate* in their ſeveral diſtricts, and learn to excel in the three principal *ingredients*, of *inſolence*, *lying*, and *bribery*. Accordingly they have a *ſubaltern* court paid to them by perſons of the beſt rank; and ſometimes, by the

force of dexterity and impudence, arrive thro' ſeveral gradations to be ſucceſſors to their lord.

He is uſually governed by a decayed wench, or favourite footman, who are the tunnels thro' which all graces are conveyed, and may properly be called, *in the laſt reſort*, the governors of the kingdom. One day in diſcourſe my maſter, having heard me mention the *nobility* of my country, was pleaſed to make me a compliment, which I could not pretend to deſerve: that he was ſure, I muſt have been born of ſome noble family, becauſe I far exceeded in ſhape, colour, and cleanlineſs all the *yahoos* of his nation, altho' I ſeemed to fail in ſtrength and agility, which muſt be imputed to my different way of living from thoſe other brutes; and beſides, I was not only endued with the faculty of ſpeech, but likewiſe with ſome rudiments of reaſon, to a degree, that with all his acquaintance I paſſed for a prodigy.

He made me obſerve, that among the Houyhnhnms, the *white*, the *ſorrel*, and the *iron-grey*, were not ſo exactly ſhaped as the *bay*, the *dapple-grey*, and the *black*; nor born with equal talents of mind, or a capacity to improve them; and therefore continued always in the condition of ſervants, without ever aſpiring to match out of their own race, which in that country would be reckoned monſtrous and unnatural.

I made his honour my moſt humble acknowledgments for the good opinion he was pleaſed to conceive of me; but aſſured him at the ſame time, that my birth was of the lower ſort, having been born of plain honeſt parents, who were juſt able to give me a tolerable education: that *nobility* among us was altogether a different thing from the idea he had of it; that our young noblemen are bred from their childhood in idleneſs and luxury; that as ſoon as years will permit, they conſume their vigour, and contract odious diſeaſes among lewd females; and when their fortunes are almoſt ruined, they marry ſome woman of mean birth, diſagreeable perſon, and unſound conſtitution, merely for the ſake of money, whom they hate and deſpiſe. That the productions of ſuch marriages are generally ſcrophulous, ricketty, or deformed children; by which means the family ſeldom continues above three generations, unleſs the wife takes care to provide a healthy

thy father among her neighbours or domeſtics in order to improve and continue the breed. That a weak diſeaſed body, a meagre countenance, and ſallow complexion, are the true marks of *noble blood*; and a healthy robuſt appearance is ſo diſgraceful in a man of quality, that the world concludes his real father to have been a *groom*, or a *coachman*. The imperfections of his mind run parallel with thoſe of his body, being a compoſition of ſpleen, dulneſs, ignorance, caprice, ſenſuality, and pride.

WITHOUT the conſent of this illuſtrious body no law can be enacted, repealed, or altered; and theſe *nobles* have likewiſe the deciſions of all our poſſeſſions, without appeal.

CHAP. VII.

The author's great love of his native country. His maſter's obſervations upon the conſtitution and adminiſtration of England, as deſcribed by the author, with parallel caſes and compariſons. His maſter's obſervations upon human nature.

THE reader may be diſpoſed to wonder, how I could prevail on myſelf to give ſo free a repreſentation of my own ſpecies among a race of mortals, who are already too apt to conceive the vileſt opinion of human kind from that entire congruity betwixt me and their *yahoos*. But I muſt freely confeſs, that the many virtues of thoſe excellent *quadrupeds*, placed in oppoſite view to human corruptions, had ſo far opened my eyes, and enlarged my underſtanding, that I began to view the actions and paſſions of man in a very different light; and to think the honour of my own kind not worth managing; which beſides it was impoſſible for me to do before a perſon of ſo acute a judgment as my maſter, who daily convinced me of a thouſand faults in myſelf, whereof I had not the leaſt perception before, and which with us would never be numbered even among human infirmities. I had likewiſe learned from his example an utter deteſtation of all falſhood or diſguiſe; and *truth* appeared ſo amiable to me, that I determined upon ſacrificing every thing to it.

LET me deal ſo candidly with the reader as to confeſs, that there was yet a much ſtronger motive for the freedom I took in my repreſentation of things. I had not been a year in this country, before I contracted ſuch a love and veneration for the inhabitants, that I entered on a firm reſolution never to return to human kind, but to paſs the reſt of my life among theſe admirable Houyhnhnms in the contemplation and practice of every virtue; where I could have no example or incitement to vice. But it was decreed by fortune, my perpetual enemy, that ſo great a felicity ſhould not fall to my ſhare. However it is now ſome comfort to reflect, that in what I ſaid of my countrymen, I *extenuated* their faults as much as I durſt before ſo ſtrict an examiner; and upon every article gave as *favourable* a turn, as the matter would bear. For indeed who is there alive, that will not be ſwayed by his biaſs and partiality to the place of his birth?

I have related the ſubſtance of ſeveral converſations I had with my maſter, during the greateſt part of the time I had the honour to be in his ſervice; but have indeed for brevity ſake omitted much more than is here ſet down.

WHEN I had anſwered all his queſtions, and his curioſity ſeemed to be fully ſatisfied; he ſent for me one morning early, and commanding me to ſit down at ſome diſtance (an honour which he had never before conferred upon me) he ſaid, he had been very ſeriouſly conſidering my whole ſtory as far as it related both to myſelf and my country: that he looked upon us as a ſort of animals, to whoſe ſhare, by what accident he could not conjecture, ſome ſmall pittance of *reaſon* had fallen, whereof we made no other uſe, than by its aſſiſtance to aggravate our *natural* corruptions, and to acquire new ones, which nature had not given us: that we diſarmed ourſelves of the few abilities ſhe had beſtowed; had been very ſucceſsful in multiplying our original wants, and ſeemed to ſpend our whole lives in vain endeavours to ſupply them by our own inventions. That as to myſelf it was manifeſt, I had neither the ſtrength or agility of a common *yahoo*; that I walked infirmly on my hinder feet; had found out a contrivance to make my claws of no uſe or defence, and to remove the hair from my chin, which

was

was intended as a ſhelter from the ſun and the weather. Laſtly, That I could neither run with ſpeed, nor climb trees like my *brethren* (as he called them) the *yahoos* in this country.

THAT our inſtitutions of *government* and *law* were plainly owing to our groſs defects in *reaſon*, and by conſequence in *virtue*: becauſe *reaſon* alone is ſufficient to govern a *rational* creature; which was therefore a character we had no pretence to challenge, even from the account I had given of my own people: altho' he manifeſtly perceived, that in order to favour them I had concealed many particulars, and often *ſaid the thing which was not*.

HE was the more confirmed in this opinion, becauſe he obſerved, that as I agreed in every feature of my body with other *yahoos*, except where it was to my real diſadvantage, in point of ſtrength, ſpeed, and activity, the ſhortneſs of my claws, and ſome other particulars where nature had no part; ſo from the repreſentation I had given him of our lives, our manners and our actions, he found as near a reſemblance in the diſpoſition of our minds. He ſaid the *yahoos* were known to hate one another, more than they did any different ſpecies of animals; and the reaſon uſually aſſigned was, the odiouſneſs of their own ſhapes, which all could ſee in the reſt but not in themſelves. He had therefore begun to think it not unwiſe in us to *cover* our bodies, and by that invention conceal many of our deformities from each other, which would elſe be hardly ſupportable. But he now found he had been miſtaken, and that the diſſenſions of thoſe brutes in his country were owing to the ſame cauſe with ours, as I had deſcribed them. For if (ſaid he) you throw among five *yahoos* as much food as would be ſufficient for fifty, they will inſtead of eating peaceably, fall together by the ears, each ſingle one impatient to *have all to itſelf*; and therefore a ſervant was uſually employed to ſtand by, while they were feeding abroad, and thoſe kept at home were tied at a diſtance from each other: that if a cow died of age or accident, before a Houyhnhnm could ſecure it for his own *yahoos*, thoſe in the neighbourhood would come in herds to ſeize it, and then would enſue ſuch a battle as I had deſcribed, with

with terrible wounds made by their claws on both ſides, altho' they ſeldom were able to kill one another for want of ſuch convenient inſtruments of death, as we had invented. At other times the like battles have been fought between the *yahoos* of ſeveral neighbourhoods, without any viſible cauſe: thoſe of one diſtrict watching all opportunities to ſurpriſe the next, before they are prepared. But, if they find their project hath miſcarried, they return home, and, for want of enemies, engage in what I call a civil war among themſelves.

THAT in ſome fields of his country there are certain *ſhining ſtones* of ſeveral colours, whereof the *yahoos* are violently fond; and when part of theſe *ſtones* is fixed in the earth, as it ſometimes happeneth, they will dig with their claws for whole days to get them out; then carry them away, and hide them by heaps in their kennels; but ſtill looking round with great caution for fear their comrades ſhould find out their treaſure. My maſter ſaid, he could never diſcover the reaſon of this unnatural appetite, or how theſe *ſtones* could be of any uſe to a *yahoo*; but now he believed it might proceed from the ſame principle of *avarice*, which I had aſcribed to mankind: that he had once, by way of experiment, privately removed a heap of theſe *ſtones* from the place where one of his *yahoos* had buried it: whereupon the ſordid animal, miſſing his treaſure, by his loud lamenting brought the whole herd to the place, there miſerably howled, then fell to biting and tearing the reſt; began to pine away, would neither eat, nor ſleep, nor work, till he ordered a ſervant privately to convey the *ſtones* into the ſame hole, and hide them as before; which when his *yahoo* had found, he preſently recovered his ſpirits and good humour, but took care to remove them to a better hiding-place, and hath ever ſince been a very ſerviceable brute*.

MY maſter farther aſſured me, which I alſo obſerved myſelf, that in the fields where the *ſhining ſtones* abound, the fierceſt and moſt frequent battles are fought, occaſioned by perpetual inroads of the neighbouring *yahoos*.

He

* Nothing can be ſaid to make avarice a greater reproach to mankind, except that it is a vice which this deſcription will not cure. *Hawkeſ.*

He ſaid, it was common, when two *yahoos* diſcovered ſuch a *ſtone* in a field, and were contending which of them ſhould be the proprietor, a third would take the advantage, and carry it away from them both; which my maſter would needs contend to have ſome kind of reſemblance with our *ſuits at law*; wherein I thought it for our credit not to undeceive him; ſince the deciſion he mentioned was much more equitable than many decrees among us: becauſe the plaintiff and defendant there loſt nothing beſide the *ſtone* they contended for, whereas our *courts of equity* would never have diſmiſſed the cauſe, while either of them had any thing left.

My maſter continuing his diſcourſe ſaid, there was nothing that rendered the *yahoos* more odious, than their undiſtinguiſhing appetite to devour every thing that came in their way, whether herbs, roots, berries, the corrupted fleſh of animals, or all mingled together: and it was peculiar in their temper, that they were fonder of what they could get by rapine or ſtealth at a greater diſtance, than much better food provided for them at home. If their prey held out, they would eat till they were ready to burſt, after which nature had pointed out to them a certain *root* that gave them a general evacuation.

There was alſo another kind of *root* very *juicy* but ſomewhat rare and difficult to be found, which the *yahoos* ſought for with much eagerneſs, and would ſuck it with great delight; it produced in them the ſame effects, that wine hath upon us. It would make them ſometimes hug, and ſometimes tear one another; they would howl, and grin, and chatter, and reel, and tumble, and then fall aſleep in the mud.

I did indeed obſerve, that the *yahoos* were the only animals in this country ſubject to any diſeaſes; which however were much fewer than horſes have among us, and contracted not by any ill treatment they met with, but by the naſtineſs and greedineſs of that ſordid brute. Neither has their language any more than a general appellation for thoſe maladies, which is borrowed from the name of the beaſt, and called *hnea-yahoo* or the *yahoo's evil*, and the cure preſcribed is a mixture of *their own dung* and *urine*, forcibly put down the *yahoo*'s throat.

This

This I have ſince often known to have been taken with ſucceſs, and do here freely recommend it to my countrymen for the public good, as an admirable ſpecific againſt all diſeaſes produced by repletion.

As to learning, government, arts, manufactures, and the like, my maſter confeſſed, he could find little or no reſemblance between the *yahoos* of that country and thoſe in ours. For he only meant to obſerve, what parity there was in our natures. He had heard indeed ſome curious Houyhnhnms obſerve, that in moſt herds there was a ſort of ruling *yahoo* (as among us there is generally ſome leading or principal ſtag in a park) who was always more *deformed* in body, and *miſchievous in diſpoſition*, than any of the reſt. That this *leader* had uſually a favourite as *like himſelf* as he could get, whoſe employment was to *lick his maſter's feet and poſteriors, and drive the female* yahoos *to his kennel* *; for which he was now and then rewarded with a piece of aſs's fleſh. This *favourite* is hated by the whole herd, and therefore to protect himſelf keeps always *near the perſon of his leader*. He uſually continues in office till a worſe can be found; but the very moment he is diſcarded, his ſucceſſor at the head of all the *yahoos* in that diſtrict, young and old, male and female, come in a body, and diſcharge their excrements upon him from head to foot. But how far this might be applicable to our *courts* and *favourites*, and *miniſters of ſtate*, my maſter ſaid I could beſt determine.

I durſt make no return to this malicious inſinuation, which debaſed human underſtanding below the ſagacity of a common *hound*, who hath judgment enough to diſtinguiſh and follow the cry of the *ableſt dog in the pack*, without being ever miſtaken.

My maſter told me there was ſome qualities remarkable in the *yahoos*, which he had not obſerved me to mention, or at leaſt very ſlightly, in the accounts I had given him of human kind; he ſaid, thoſe animals like other brutes had their females in common; but in this they differed, that the ſhe *yahoo* would admit the male, while ſhe was pregnant; and that the hees would quarrel and fight

* Flattery and pimping. Hawkeſ.

fight with the females, as fiercely as with each other. Both which practices were ſuch degrees of infamous brutality, as no other ſenſitive creature ever arrived at.

ANOTHER thing he wondered at in the *yahoos*, was their ſtrange diſpoſition to naſtineſs and dirt; whereas there appears to be a natural love of cleanlineſs in all other animals. As to the two former accuſations, I was glad to let them paſs without any reply; becauſe I had not a word to offer upon them in defence of my ſpecies, which otherwiſe I certainly had done from my own inclinations. But I could have eaſily vindicated human kind from the imputation of ſingularity upon the laſt article, if there had been any *ſwine* in that country (as unluckily for me there were not) which, altho' it may be a *ſweeter quadruped* than a *yahoo*, cannot, I humbly conceive, in juſtice pretend to more cleanlineſs; and ſo his honour himſelf muſt have owned, if he had ſeen their filthy way of feeding, and their cuſtom of wallowing and ſleeping in the mud.

MY maſter likewiſe mentioned another quality, which his ſervants had diſcovered in ſeveral *yahoos*, and to him was wholly unaccountable. He ſaid, a fancy would ſometimes take a *yahoo* to retire into a corner, to lie down, and howl, and groan, and ſpurn away all that came near him, altho' he were young and fat, wanted neither food nor water; nor did the ſervants imagine what could poſſibly ail him. And the only remedy they found was, to ſet him to hard work, after which he would infallibly come to himſelf. To this I was ſilent out of partiality to my own kind; yet here I could plainly diſcover the true ſeeds of *ſpleen*, which only ſeizeth on the *lazy*, the *luxurious*, and the *rich*; who, if they were forced to undergo the *ſame regimen*, I would undertake for the cure.

HIS honour had farther obſerved, that a female *yahoo* would often ſtand behind a bank or a buſh to gaze on the young males paſſing by, and then appear, and hide, uſing many antic geſtures and grimaces, at which time it was obſerved that ſhe had a moſt *offenſive ſmell*; and, when any of the males advanced, would ſlowly retire, looking often back, and with a counterfeit ſhew of fear

run

run off into ſome convenient place, where ſhe knew the male would follow her.

At other times, if a female ſtranger came among them, three or four of her own ſex would get about her, and ſtare, and chatter, and grin, and ſmell her all over; and then turn off with geſtures, that ſeemed to expreſs contempt and diſdain.

Perhaps my maſter might refine a little in theſe ſpeculations, which he had drawn from what he obſerved himſelf, or had been told him by others: however I could not reflect without ſome amazement and much ſorrow, that the rudiments of *lewdneſs*, *coquetry*, *cenſure*, and *ſcandal*, ſhould have place by inſtinct in womankind.

I expected every moment, that my maſter would accuſe the *yahoos* of thoſe unnatural appetites in both ſexes, ſo common among us. But nature, it ſeems, hath not been ſo expert a ſchool-miſtreſs; and theſe politer pleaſures are entirely the productions of art and reaſon on our ſide of the globe.

CHAP. VIII.

The author relates ſeveral particulars of the yahoos. *The great virtues of the* Houyhnhnms. *The education and exerciſe of their youth. Their general aſſembly.*

As I ought to have underſtood human nature much better, than I ſuppoſed it poſſible for my maſter to do, ſo it was eaſy to apply the character he gave of the *yahoos* to myſelf, and my countrymen; and I believed, I could yet make farther diſcoveries from my own obſervation. I therefore often begged his honour to let me go among the herds of *yahoos* in the neighbourhood, to which he always very graciouſly conſented, being perfectly convinced, that the hatred I bore thoſe brutes would never ſuffer me to be corrupted by them; and his honour ordered one of his ſervants, a ſtrong ſorrel nag, very honeſt and good-natured, to be my guard, without whoſe protection I durſt not undertake ſuch adventures. For I have already told the reader, how much I was peſtered by

by thoſe odious animals upon my firſt arrival. And I afterwards failed very narrowly three or four times of falling into their clutches, when I happened to ſtray at any diſtance without my hanger. And I have reaſon to believe they had ſome imagination that I was of their own ſpecies, which I often aſſiſted myſelf by ſtripping up my ſleeves, and ſhewing my naked arms and breaſt in their ſight, when my protector was with me. At which times they would approach as near as they durſt, and imitate my actions after the manner of monkies, but ever with great ſigns of hatred; as a tame *jack-daw* with cap and ſtockings is always perſecuted by the wild ones, when he happens to be got among them.

THEY are prodigiouſly nimble from their infancy; however I once caught a young male of three years old, and endeavoured by all marks of tenderneſs to make it quiet; but the little imp fell a ſqualling, and ſcratching, and biting, with ſuch violence, that I was forced to let it go; and it was high time, for a whole troop of old ones came about us at the noiſe, but finding the cub was ſafe (for away it ran) and my ſorrel nag being by, they durſt not venture near us. I obſerved the young animal's fleſh to ſmell very rank, and the ſtink was ſomewhat between a *weaſel* and a *fox*, but much more diſagreeable. I forgot another circumſtance (and perhaps I might have the reader's pardon, if it were wholly omitted) that while I held the odious vermin in my hands, it voided its filthy excrements of a yellow liquid ſubſtance all over my cloaths; but by good fortune there was a ſmall brook hard by, where I waſhed myſelf as clean as I could; altho' I durſt not come into my maſter's preſence, until I were ſufficiently aired.

BY what I could diſcover, the *yahoos* appear to be the moſt unteachable of all animals; their capacities never reaching higher than to draw or carry burthens. Yet I am of opinion, this defect ariſeth chiefly from a perverſe, reſtive diſpoſition. For they are cunning, malicious, treacherous, and revengeful. They are ſtrong and hardy, but of a cowardly ſpirit, and by conſequence inſolent, abject, and cruel. It is obſerved, that the *red haired* of both ſexes are more libidinous and miſchievous

than the reſt, whom yet they much exceed in ſtrength and activity.

THE Houyhnhnms keep the *yahoos* for preſent uſe in huts not far from the houſe; but the reſt are ſent abroad to certain fields, where they dig up roots, eat ſeveral kinds of herbs, and ſearch about for carrion, or ſometimes catch *weaſels* and *lubimubs* (a ſort of *wild rat*) which they greedily devour. Nature hath taught them to dig deep holes with their nails on the ſide of a riſing ground, wherein they lie by themſelves: only the kennels of the females are larger, ſufficient to hold two or three cubs.

THEY ſwim from their infancy like frogs, and are able to continue long under water, where they often take fiſh, which the females carry home to their young. And upon this occaſion I hope the reader will pardon my relating an odd adventure.

BEING one day abroad with my protector the ſorrel nag, and the weather exceeding hot, I entreated him to let me bathe in a river that was near. He conſented, and I immediately ſtripped myſelf ſtark naked, and went down ſoftly into the ſtream. It happened that a young female *yahoo*, ſtanding behind a bank, ſaw the whole proceeding, and inflamed by deſire, as the nag and I conjectured, came running with all ſpeed, and leaped into the water within five yards of the place where I bathed. I was never in my life ſo terribly frighted; the nag was grazing at ſome diſtance, not ſuſpecting any harm. She embraced me after a moſt fulſome manner; I roared as loud as I could, and the nag came galloping towards me, whereupon ſhe quitted her graſp with the utmoſt reluctancy, and leaped upon the oppoſite bank, where ſhe ſtood gazing and howling all the time I was putting on my cloaths.

THIS was a matter of diverſion to my maſter and his family, as well as of mortification to myſelf. For now I could no longer deny, that I was a real *yahoo* in every limb and feature, ſince the females had a natural propenſity to me, as one of their own ſpecies: neither was the hair of this brute of a red colour (which might have been ſome excuſe for an appetite a little irregular) but black as a ſloe, and her countenance did not make an appearance

pearance altogether ſo hideous as the reſt of her kind: for, I think, ſhe could not be above eleven years old.

HAVING lived three years in this country, the reader I ſuppoſe will expect that I ſhould, like other travellers, give him ſome account of the manners and cuſtoms of its inhabitants, which it was indeed my principal ſtudy to learn.

As theſe noble Houyhnhnms are endowed by nature with a general diſpoſition to all virtues, and have no conceptions or ideas of what is evil in a rational creature; ſo their grand maxim is, to cultivate *reaſon*, and to be wholly governed by it. Neither is *reaſon* among them a point problematical, as with us, where men can argue with plauſibility on both ſides of a queſtion; but ſtrikes you with immediate conviction; as it muſt needs do, where it is not mingled, obſcured, or diſcoloured, by paſſion and intereſt. I remember it was with extreme difficulty, that I could bring my maſter to underſtand the meaning of the word *opinion*, or, how a point could be diſputable; becauſe *reaſon* taught us to affirm or deny only where we are certain; and beyond our knowledge we cannot do either. So that controverſies, wranglings, diſputes, and poſitiveneſs, in falſe or dubious propoſitions, are evils unknown among the Houyhnhnms. In the like manner, when I uſed to explain to him our ſeveral ſyſtems of *natural philoſophy*, he would laugh, that a creature pretending to *reaſon* ſhould value itſelf upon the knowledge of other people's conjectures, and in things where that knowledge, if it were certain, could be of no uſe. Wherein he agreed entirely with the ſentiments of Socrates, as Plato delivers them; which I mention as the higheſt honour I can do that prince of philoſophers. I have often ſince reflected, what deſtruction ſuch a doctrine would make in the libraries of Europe; and how many paths to fame would be then ſhut up in the learned world.

Friendſhip and *benevolence* are the two principal virtues among the Houyhnhnms*; and theſe not confined to particular objects, but univerſal to the whole race. For a ſtranger from the remoteſt part is equally treated with the neareſt neighbour; and wherever he goes,

* Their virtuous qualities are only negative. Orrery.

looks upon himſelf as at home. They preſerve *decency* and *civility* in the higheſt degrees, but are altogether ignorant of *ceremony*. They have no fondneſs for their colts or foles, but the care they take in educating them proceedeth entirely from the dictates of *reaſon**. And I obſerved my maſter to ſhew the ſame affection to his neighbour's iſſue that he had for his own. They will have it that *nature* teaches them to love the whole ſpecies, and it is *reaſon* only that maketh a diſtinction of perſons, where there is a ſuperior degree of virtue†.

When the matron Houyhnhnms have produced one of each ſex, they no longer accompany with their conſorts, except they loſe one of their iſſue by ſome caſualty, which very ſeldom happens: but in ſuch a caſe they meet again; or when the like accident befals a perſon whoſe wife is paſt bearing, ſome other couple beſtow him one of their own colts, and then go together again until the mother is pregnant. This caution is neceſſary to prevent the country from being over-burthened with numbers. But the race of inferior Houyhnhnms, bred up to be ſervants, is not ſo ſtrictly limited upon this article; theſe are allowed to produce three of each ſex to be domeſtics in the noble families.

In their marriages they are exactly careful to chooſe ſuch colours, as will not make any diſagreeable mixture in the breed. *Strength* is chiefly valued in the male, and

* We here view the pure inſtincts of brutes, acting in their narrow ſphere, merely for their immediate preſervation. *Orrery.* ——See above, p. 219, 221.

† It may perhaps be thought ſomewhat ſtrange, that the ſenſe of the noble commentator ſhould appear to be directly oppoſite to that of the author, in the paſſages which theſe notes were intended to illuſtrate. But this apparent oppoſition may ariſe merely from their uſing the ſame word in an oppoſite ſenſe; as by the word *candour*, his Lordſhip always means a quality which inclines a man to put the worſt conſtruction upon the words and actions of another; and by *candour*, the Dean always means juſt the contrary.

Compare the note from Orrery, in Gulliver's travels, vol. ii. p. 50. with Swift's apology for the Tale of a Tub, in vol. i. p. a.

and *comlineſs* in the female; not upon the account of *love*, but to preſerve the race from degenerating; for where a female happens to excel in *ſtrength*, a conſort is choſen with regard to *comlineſs*.

COURTSHIP, love, preſents, jointures, ſettlements, have no place in their thoughts; or terms whereby to expreſs them in their language. The young couple meet and are joined, merely becauſe it is the determination of their parents and friends: it is what they ſee done every day, and they look upon it as one of the neceſſary actions of a reaſonable being. But the violation of marriage, or any other unchaſtity, was never heard of: and the married pair paſs their lives with the ſame friendſhip, and mutual benevolence, that they bear to all others of the ſame ſpecies, who come in their way; without jealouſy, fondneſs, quarrelling, or diſcontent.

IN educating the youth of both ſexes their method is admirable, and highly deſerveth our imitation. Theſe are not ſuffered to taſte a grain of *oats*, except upon certain days, till eighteen years old; nor *milk*, but very rarely; and in ſummer they graze two hours in the morning, and as many in the evening, which their parents likewiſe obſerve; but the ſervants are not allowed above half that time, and a great part of their graſs is brought home, which they eat at the moſt convenient hours, when they can be beſt ſpared from work.

Temperance, *induſtry*, *exerciſe*, and *cleanlineſs*, are the leſſons equally enjoined to the young ones of both ſexes: and my maſter thought it monſtrous in us to give the females a different kind of education from the males, except in ſome articles of domeſtic management; whereby, as he truly obſerved, one half of our natives were good for nothing but bringing children into the world: and to truſt the care of our children to ſuch uſeleſs animals, he ſaid, was yet a greater inſtance of brutality.

BUT the Houyhnhnms train up their youth to ſtrength, ſpeed and hardineſs, by exerciſing them in running races up and down ſteep hills, and over hard ſtony grounds; and when they are all in a ſweat, they are ordered to leap over head and ears into a pond or river. Four times a year the youth of a certain diſtrict meet to ſhew their proficiency in running and leaping, and other feats of

ſtrength and agility; where the victor is rewarded, with a ſong in his or her praiſe. On this feſtival, the ſervants drive a herd of *yahoos* into the field laden with hay, and oats, and milk, for a repaſt to the Houyhnhnms; after which theſe brutes are immediately driven back again, for fear of being noiſome to the aſſembly.

EVERY fourth year, at the *vernal equinox*, there is a repreſentative council of the whole nation, which meets in a plain about twenty miles from our houſe, and continueth about five or ſix days. Here they inquire into the ſtate and condition of the ſeveral diſtricts; whether they abound, or be deficient in hay or oats, or cows or *yahoos*? and wherever there is any want (which is but ſeldom) it is immediately ſupplied by unanimous conſent and contribution. Here likewiſe the regulation of children is ſettled: as for inſtance, if a Houyhnhnm hath two males, he changeth one of them with another that hath two females: and when a child hath been loſt by any caſualty, where the mother is paſt breeding, it is determined what family in the diſtrict ſhall breed another to ſupply the loſs.

CHAP. IX.

A grand debate at the general aſſembly of the Houyhnhnms, *and how it was determined. The learning of the* Houyhnhnms. *Their buildings. Their manner of burials. The defectiveneſs of their language.*

ONE of theſe grand aſſemblies was held in my time, about three months before my departure, whither my maſter went as the repreſentative of our diſtrict. In this council was reſumed their old debate, and indeed the only debate that ever happened in their country; whereof my maſter after his return gave me a very particular account.

THE queſtion to be debated was, whether the *yahoos* ſhould be exterminated from the face of the earth. One of the *members* for the affirmative offered ſeveral arguments of great ſtrength and weight; alledging, that as the *yahoos* were the moſt filthy, noiſome, and deformed animal which nature ever produced, ſo they were the moſt

moſt reſtive and indocible, miſchievous and malicious: they would privately ſuck the teats of the Houyhnhnms cows; kill and devour their cats, trample down their oats and graſs, if they were not continually watched, and commit a thouſand other extravagancies. He took notice of a general tradition, that *yahoos* had not been always in their country: but that many ages ago two of theſe brutes appeared together upon a mountain; whether produced by the heat of the ſun upon corrupted mud and ſlime, or from the ooze and froth of the ſea, was never known: that theſe *yahoos* engendered, and their brood in a ſhort time grew ſo numerous as to over-run and infeſt the whole nation: that the Houyhnhnms to get rid of this evil made a general hunting, and at laſt incloſed the whole herd; and deſtroying the elder, every Houyhnhnm kept two young ones in a kennel, and brought them to ſuch a degree of tameneſs, as an animal ſo ſavage by nature can be capable of acquiring; uſing them for draught and carriage: that there ſeemed to be much truth in this tradition, and that thoſe creatures could not be Ylnhniamſhy (or *Aborigines* of the land) becauſe of the violent hatred the Houyhnhnms, as well as all other animals, bore them; which altho' their evil diſpoſition ſufficiently deſerved, could never have arrived at ſo high a degree, if they had been Aborigines; or elſe they would have long ſince been rooted out: that the inhabitants, taking a fancy to uſe the ſervice of the *yahoos*, had very imprudently neglected to cultivate the breed of *aſſes*, which are a comely animal, eaſily kept, more tame and orderly, without any offenſive ſmell, ſtrong enough for labour, altho' they yield to the other in agility of body; and, if their braying be no agreeable ſound, it is far preferable to the horrible howlings of the *yahoos*.

Several others declared their ſentiments to the ſame purpoſe, when my maſter propoſed an expedient to the aſſembly, whereof he had indeed borrowed the hint from me. He approved of the tradition mentioned by the *honourable member*, who ſpoke before; and affirmed, that the two *yahoos*, ſaid to be firſt ſeen among them, had been driven thither over the ſea; that coming to land, and being forſaken by their companions, they retired to the mountains, and degenerating by degrees, became

came in proceſs of time much more ſavage, than thoſe of their own ſpecies in the country from whence theſe two originals came. The reaſon of this aſſertion was, that he had now in his poſſeſſion a certain wonderful *yahoo* (meaning myſelf) which moſt of them had heard of, and many of them had ſeen. He then related to them, how he firſt found me; that my body was all covered with an artificial compoſure of the ſkins and hairs of other animals: that I ſpoke in a language of my own, and had thoroughly learned theirs: that I had related to him the accidents which brought me thither: that, when he ſaw me without my covering, I was an exact *yahoo* in every part, only of a whiter colour, leſs hairy, and with ſhorter claws. He added, how I had endeavoured to perſuade him, that in my own and other countries the *yahoos* acted as the governing, rational animal, and held the Houyhnhnms in ſervitude: that he obſerved in me all the qualities of a *yahoo*, only a little more civilized by ſome tincture of reaſon; which however was in a degree as far inferior to the Houyhnhnm race, as the *yahoos* of their country were to me: that, among other things, I mentioned a cuſtom we had of *caſtrating* Houyhnhnms when they were young, in order to render them tame; that the operation was eaſy and ſafe; that it was no ſhame to learn wiſdom from brutes, as induſtry is taught by the ant, and building by the ſwallow (for ſo I tranſlate the word *lyhannh*, altho' it be a much larger fowl): that this invention might be practiſed upon the younger *yahoos* here, which beſides rendering them tractable and fitter for uſe, would in an age put an end to the whole ſpecies without deſtroying life: that in the mean time the Houyhnhnms ſhould be *exhorted* to cultivate the breed of aſſes, which as they are in all reſpects more valuable brutes, ſo they have this advantage, to be fit for ſervice at five years old, which the others are not till twelve.

THIS was all my maſter thought fit to tell me at that time, of what paſſed in the grand council. But he was pleaſed to conceal one particular, which related perſonally to myſelf, whereof I ſoon felt the unhappy effect, as the reader will know in its proper place, and from whence I date all the ſucceeding misfortunes of my life.

THE

THE Houyhnhnms have no letters, and consequently their knowledge is all traditional. But there happening few events of any moment among a people so well united, naturally disposed to every virtue, wholly governed by reason, and cut off from all commerce with other nations; the historical part is easily preserved without burthening their memories. I have already observed that they are subject to no diseases, and therefore can have no need of physicians. However, they have excellent medicines composed of herbs to cure accidental bruises and cuts in the pastern or frog of the foot by sharp stones, as well as other maims and hurts in the several parts of the body.

THEY calculate the year by the revolution of the sun and the moon, but use no subdivisions into weeks. They are well enough acquainted with the motions of those two luminaries, and understand the nature of *eclipses*; and this is the utmost progress of their *astronomy*.

IN *poetry* they must be allowed to excel all other mortals; wherein the justness of their similies, and the minuteness as well as exactness of their descriptions, are indeed inimitable. Their verses abound very much in both of these; and usually contain either some exalted notions of friendship and benevolence, or the praises of those, who were victors in races and other bodily exercises. Their buildings, altho' very rude and simple, are not inconvenient, but well contrived to defend them from all injuries of cold and heat. They have a kind of tree, which at forty years old loosens in the root, and falls with the first storm; it grows very strait, and being pointed like stakes, with a sharp stone (for the Houyhnhnms know not the use of iron) they stick them erect in the ground about ten inches asunder, and then weave in oats, straw, or sometimes wattles, betwixt them. The roof is made after the same manner, and so are the doors.

THE Houyhnhnms use the hollow part, between the pastern and the hoof, of their fore-feet, as we do our hands, and this with greater dexterity, than I could at first imagine. I have seen a white mare of our family thread a needle (which I lent her on purpose) with that joint. They milk their cows, reap their oats, and do all the work which requires hands, in the same manner. They have a kind of hard flints, which by grinding a-

gainst

gainſt other ſtones they form into inſtruments, that ſerve inſtead of wedges, axes, and hammers. With tools made of theſe flints they likewiſe cut their hay, and reap their oats, which there grow naturally in ſeveral fields; the *yahoos* draw home the ſheaves in carriages, and the ſervants tread them in certain covered huts to get out the grain, which is kept in ſtores. They make a rude kind of earthen and wooden veſſels, and bake the former in the ſun.

If they can avoid caſualties, they die only of old age, and are buried in the obſcureſt places that can be found, their friends and relations expreſſing neither joy nor grief at their departure; nor does the dying perſon diſcover the leaſt regret that he is leaving the world, any more than if he were upon returning home from a viſit to one of his neighbours. I remember my maſter having once made an appointment with a friend and his family to come to his houſe upon ſome affair of importance, on the day fixed the miſtreſs and her two children came very late; ſhe made two excuſes, firſt for her huſband, who, as ſhe ſaid, happened that very morning to *Ihnuwnh*. The word is ſtrongly expreſſive in their language, but not eaſily rendered into Engliſh; it ſignifies *to retire to his firſt mother*. Her excuſe for not coming ſooner was, that her huſband dying late in the morning, ſhe was a good while conſulting her ſervants about a convenient place where his body ſhould be laid; and I obſerved, ſhe behaved herſelf at our houſe as chearfully as the reſt: ſhe died about three months after.

They live generally to ſeventy, or ſeventy five years; very ſeldom to fourſcore: ſome weeks before their death they feel a gradual decay; but without pain. During this time they are much viſited by their friends, becauſe they cannot go abroad with their uſual eaſe and ſatisfaction. However, about ten days before their death, which they ſeldom fail in computing, they return the viſits that have been made them by thoſe who are neareſt in the neighbourhood, being carried in a convenient ſledge drawn by *yahoos*; which vehicle they uſe, not only upon this occaſion, but when they grow old, upon long journies, or when they are lamed by any accident. And therefore when the dying Houyhnhnms return thoſe viſits,

viſits, they take a ſolemn leave of their friends, as if they were going to ſome remote part of the country, where they deſigned to paſs the reſt of their lives.

I know not whether it may be worth obſerving, that the Houyhnhnms have no word in their language to expreſs any thing that is *evil*, except what they borrow from the deformities, or ill qualities of the *yahoos*. Thus they denote the folly of a ſervant, an omiſſion of a child, a ſtone that cuts their feet, a continuance of foul or unſeaſonable weather, and the like, by adding to each the epithet of *yahoo*. For inſtance, *hhnm yahoo*, *whnaholm yahoo*, *ynlhmndwihlma yahoo*, and an ill contrived houſe, *yahol'mhnmrohlnw yahoo*.

I could with great pleaſure enlarge farther upon the manners and virtues of this excellent people; but intending in a ſhort time to publiſh a volume by itſelf expreſsly upon that ſubject, I refer the reader thither. And in the mean time, proceed to relate my own ſad cataſtrophe.

CHAP. X.

The author's oeconomy, and happy life, among the Houyhnhnms. His great improvement in virtue by converſing with them. Their converſations. The author hath notice given him by his maſter, that he muſt depart from the country. He falls into a ſwoon for grief; but ſubmits. He contrives and finiſhes a canoo by the help of a fellow ſervant, and puts to ſea at a venture.

I HAD ſettled my little oeconomy to my own heart's content. My maſter had ordered a room to be made for me after their manner about ſix yards from the houſe: the ſides and floors of which I plaiſtered with clay, and covered with ruſh-mats of my own contriving; I had beaten hemp, which there grows wild, and made of it a ſort of ticking: this I filled with the feathers of ſeveral birds I had taken with ſpringes made of *yahoos* hairs, and were excellent food. I had worked two chairs with my knife, the ſorrel nag helping me in the groſſer

groſſer and more laborious part. When my clothes were worn to rags, I made myſelf others with the ſkins of rabbets, and of a certain beautiful animal about the ſame ſize, called *nnuhnoh*, the ſkin of which is covered with a fine down. Of theſe I alſo made very tolerable ſtockings. I ſoaled my ſhoes with wood, which I cut from a tree, and fitted to the upper leather; and when this was worn out I ſupplied it with the ſkins of *yahoos* dried in the ſun. I often got honey out of hollow trees, which I mingled with water, or eat with my bread. No man could more verify the truth of theſe two maxims, *That nature is very eaſily ſatisfied*; and, *That neceſſity is the mother of invention.* I enjoyed perfect health of body, and tranquillity of mind; I did not feel the treachery or inconſtancy of a friend, nor the injuries of a ſecret or open enemy. I had no occaſion of bribing, flattering, or pimping, to procure the favour of any great man, or of his minion. I wanted no fence againſt fraud or oppreſſion; here was neither phyſician to deſtroy my body, nor lawyer to ruin my fortune; no informer to watch my words and actions, or forge accuſations againſt me for hire; here were no gibers, cenſurers, backbiters, pick-pockets, highwaymen, houſe-breakers, attornies, bawds, buffoons, gameſters, politicians, wits, ſplenetics, tedious talkers, controvertiſts, raviſhers, murderers, robbers, virtuoſoes; no leaders or followers of party and faction; no encouragers to vice by ſeducement or examples; no dungeon, axes, gibbets, whipping-poſts, or pillories; no cheating ſhopkeepers or mechanics; no pride, vanity, or affectation; no fops, bullies, drunkards, ſtrolling whores, or poxes; no ranting, lewd, expenſive wives; no ſtupid, proud pedants; no importunate, over-bearing, quarrelſome, noiſy, roaring, empty, conceited, ſwearing companions; no ſcoundrels raiſed from the duſt upon the merit of their vices, or nobility thrown into it on account of their virtues; no lords, fidlers, judges, or dancing-maſters.

I had the favour of being admitted to ſeveral Houyhnhnms, who came to viſit or dine with my maſter; where his honour graciouſly ſuffered me to wait in the room, and liſten to their diſcourſe. Both he and his company would often deſcend to aſk me queſtions, and receive

receive my answers. I had also sometimes the honour of attending my master in his visits to others. I never presumed to speak, except in answer to a question; and then I did it with inward regret, because it was a loss of so much time for improving myself: but I was infinitely delighted with the station of an humble auditor in such conversations, where nothing passed but what was useful, expressed in the fewest and most significant words: where (as I have already said) the greatest *decency* was observed without the least degree of ceremony; where no person spoke without being pleased himself, and pleasing his companions; where there was no interruption, tediousness, heat, or difference of sentiments. They have a notion, that, when people are met together, a short silence doth much improve conversation: this I found to be true; for during those little intermissions of talk, new ideas would arise in their minds, which very much enlivened the discourse. Their subjects are generally on friendship and benevolence, on order and oeconomy; sometimes upon the visible operations of nature, or ancient traditions: upon the bounds and limits of virtue; upon the unerring rules of reason, or upon some determinations to be taken at the next great assembly; and often upon the various excellencies of *poetry*. I may add without vanity, that my presence often gave them sufficient matter of discourse, because it afforded my master an occasion for letting his friends into the history of me and my country, upon which they were all pleased to descant in a manner not very advantageous to human kind; and for that reason I shall not repeat what they said: only I may be allowed to observe, that his honour to my great admiration appeared to understand the nature of *yahoos*, much better than myself. He went thro' all our vices and follies, and discovered many, which I had never mentioned to him, by only supposing what qualities a *yahoo* of their country with a small proportion of reason might be capable of exerting; and concluded, with too much probability, how vile as well as miserable such a creature must be.

I freely confess, that all the little knowledge I have of any value, was acquired by the lectures I received from my master, and from hearing the discourses of him and his

his friends; to which I ſhould be prouder to liſten, than to dictate to the greateſt and wiſeſt aſſembly in Europe. I admired the ſtrength, comelineſs, and ſpeed of the inhabitants; and ſuch a conſtellation of virtues, in ſuch amiable perſons, produced in me the higheſt veneration. At firſt indeed I did not feel that natural awe, which the *yahoos* and all other animals bear towards them: but it grew upon me by degrees, much ſooner than I imagined, and was mingled with a reſpectful love and gratitude, that they would condeſcend to diſtinguiſh me from the reſt of my ſpecies.

When I thought of my family, my friends, my countrymen, or human race in general, I conſidered them, as they really were, *yahoos* in ſhape and diſpoſition, perhaps a little more civilized, and qualified with the gift of ſpeech; but making no other uſe of reaſon, than to improve and multiply thoſe vices, whereof their brethren in this country had only the ſhare that nature allotted them. When I happened to behold the reflection of my own form in a lake or a fountain, I turned away my face in horror and deteſtation of myſelf; and could better endure the ſight of a common *yahoo*, than of my own perſon. By converſing with the Houyhnhnms, and looking upon them with delight, I fell to imitate their gate and geſture, which is now grown into an habit; and my friends often tell me in a blunt way, that *I trot like a horſe*; which however I take for a great compliment: neither ſhall I diſown, that in ſpeaking I am apt to fall into the voice and manner of the Houyhnhnms, and hear myſelf ridiculed on that account without the leaſt mortification.

In the midſt of all this happineſs, and when I looked upon myſelf to be fully ſettled for life, my maſter ſent for me one morning a little earlier than his uſual hour. I obſerved by his countenance, that he was in ſome perplexity, and at a loſs how to begin what he had to ſpeak. After a ſhort ſilence, he told me, he did not know how I would take what he was going to ſay; that in the laſt general aſſembly, when the affair of the *yahoos* was entered upon, the repreſentatives had taken offence at his keeping a *yahoo* (meaning myſelf) in his family, more like a Houyhnhnm, than a brute animal. That he was known

known frequently to converse with me, as if he could receive some advantage or pleasure in my company: that such a practice was not agreeable to reason or nature, or a thing ever heard of before among them. The assembly did therefore *exhort* him either to employ me like the rest of my species, or command me to swim back to the place from whence I came. That the first of these expedients was utterly rejected by all the Houyhnhnms, who had ever seen me at his house or their own: for they alledged, that because I had some rudiments of reason, added to the natural pravity of those animals, it was to be feared, I might be able to seduce them into the woody and mountainous parts of the country, and bring them in troops by night to destroy the Houyhnhnms cattle, as being naturally of the ravenous kind, and averse from labour.

My master added, that he was daily pressed by the Houyhnhnms of the neighbourhood to have the assembly's *exhortation* executed, which he could not put off much longer. He doubted it would be impossible for me to swim to another country; and therefore wished I would contrive some sort of vehicle resembling those I had described to him, that might carry me on the sea; in which work I should have the assistance of his own servants, as well as those of his neighbours. He concluded, that for his own part he could have been content to keep me in his service as long as I lived; because he found I had cured myself of some bad habits and dispositions by endeavouring, as far as my inferior nature was capable, to imitate the Houyhnhnms.

I should here observe to the reader, that a decree of the general assembly in this country is expressed by the word *hnhloayn*, which signifies an *exhortation*, as near as I can render it; for they have no conception how a rational creature can be *compelled*, but only advised, or *exhorted*; because no person can disobey reason without giving up his claim to be a rational creature.

I was struck with the utmost grief and despair at my master's discourse; and being unable to support the agonies I was under, I fell into a swoon at his feet: when I came to myself, he told me, that he concluded I had been dead (for these people are subject to no such infirmities

cilities of nature) I answered in a faint voice, that death would have been too great an happiness; that although I could not blame the assembly's *exhortation*, or the urgency of his friends; yet in my weak and corrupt judgment, I thought it might consist with reason to have been less rigorous: that I could not swim a league, and probably the nearest land to theirs might be distant above an hundred: that many materials, necessary for making a small vessel to carry me off, were wholly wanting in this country, which however I would attempt in obedience and gratitude to his honour, altho' I concluded the thing to be impossible, and therefore looked on myself as already devoted to destruction: that the certain prospect of an unnatural death was the least of my evils: for supposing I should escape with life by some strange adventure, how could I think with temper of passing my days among *yahoos*, and relapsing into my old corruptions for want of examples to lead and keep me within the paths of virtue: that I knew too well upon what solid reasons all the determinations of the wise Houyhnhnms were founded, not to be shaken by arguments of mine, a miserable *yahoo*: and therefore, after presenting him with my humble thanks for the offer of his servant's assistance in making a vessel, and desiring a reasonable time for so difficult a work, I told him I would endeavour to preserve a wretched being; and if ever I returned to England, was not without hopes of being useful to my own species by celebrating the praises of the renowned Houyhnhnms, and proposing their virtues to the imitation of mankind.

My master in a few words made me a very gracious reply, allowed me the space of two *months* to finish my boat; and ordered the sorrel nag, my fellow-servant (for so at this distance I may presume to call him) to follow my instructions; because I told my master, that his help would be sufficient, and I knew he had a tenderness for me.

In his company, my first business was to go to that part of the coast, where my rebellious crew had ordered me to be set on shore. I got upon a height, and looking on every side into the sea, fancied I saw a small island towards the *north-east*: I took out my pocket-glass, and could

could then clearly diſtinguiſh it about five leagues off, as I computed; but it appeared to the ſorrel nag to be only a blue cloud: for as he had no conception of any country beſide his own, ſo he could not be as expert in diſtinguiſhing remote objects at ſea, as we who ſo much converſe in that element.

After I had diſcovered this iſland, I conſidered no farther; but reſolved it ſhould, if poſſible, be the firſt place of my baniſhment, leaving the conſequence to fortune.

I returned home, and conſulting with the ſorrel nag, we went into a copſe at ſome diſtance, where I with my knife, and he with a ſharp flint faſtened very artificially after their manner to a wooden handle, cut down ſeveral oak wattles, about the thickneſs of a walking-ſtaff, and ſome larger pieces. But I ſhall not trouble the reader with a particular deſcription of my own mechanics; let it ſuffice to ſay, that in ſix weeks time with the help of the ſorrel nag, who performed the parts that required moſt labour, I finiſhed a ſort of Indian canoo, but much larger, covering it with the ſkins of *yahoos* well ſtitched together with hempen threads of my own making. My ſail was likewiſe compoſed of the ſkins of the ſame animal; but I made uſe of the youngeſt I could get, the older being too tough and thick; and I likewiſe provided myſelf with four paddles. I laid in a ſtock of boiled fleſh, of rabbets and fowls; and took with me two veſſels, one filled with milk, and the other with water.

I tried my canoo in a large pond near my maſter's houſe, and then corrected in it what was amiſs; ſtopping all the chinks with *yahoos* tallow, till I found it ſtanch, and able to bear me and my freight. And, when it was as complete as I could poſſibly make it, I had it drawn on a carriage very gently by *yahoos* to the ſea-ſide, under the conduct of the ſorrel nag, and another ſervant.

When all was ready, and the day came for my departure, I took leave of my maſter and lady and the whole family, mine eyes flowing with tears, and my heart quite ſunk with grief. But his honour out of curioſity, and perhaps (if I may ſpeak it without vanity) partly out of kindneſs, was determined to ſee me in my canoo; and got ſeveral of his neighbouring friends to

accompany him. I was forced to wait above an hour for the tide, and then obſerving the wind very fortunately bearing towards the iſland, to which I intended to ſteer my courſe, I took a ſecond leave of my maſter: but, as I was going to proſtrate myſelf to kiſs his hoof, he did me the honour to raiſe it gently to my mouth. I am not ignorant how much I have been cenſured for mentioning this laſt particular. Detractors are pleaſed to think it improbable, that ſo illuſtrious a perſon ſhould deſcend to give ſo great a mark of diſtinction to a creature ſo inferior as I. Neither have I forgotten how apt ſome travellers are to boaſt of extraordinary favours they have received. But, if theſe cenſurers were better acquainted with the noble and courteous diſpoſition of the Houyhnhnms, they would ſoon change their opinion.

I paid my reſpects to the reſt of the Houyhnhnms in his honour's company; then getting into my canoe I puſhed off from ſhore.

CHAP. XI.

*The author's dangerous voyage. He arrives at New-Holland, hoping to ſettle there. Is wounded with an arrow by one of the natives. Is ſeized and carried by force into a Portugueze ſhip. The great civilities of the captain. The author arrives at England.**

I BEGAN this deſperate voyage on February 15. 1714-15, at nine o'clock in the morning. The wind was very favourable; however I made uſe at firſt only of my paddles; but conſidering I ſhould ſoon be weary, and that the wind might chop about, I ventured to ſet up my little ſail; and thus with the help of the tide I went at the rate of a league and a half an hour, as near as I could gueſs. My maſter and his friends continued on the ſhore, till I was almoſt out of ſight; and I often heard the ſorrel nag (who always loved me) crying out, *hnuy illa nyha majah yahoo*, Take care of thyſelf gentle *yahoo*.

My

* This chapter, properly ſpeaking, is the laſt chapter of Gulliver's travels; the 12th being only a ſort of a critic, and a very bad one too, upon the whole work in general. *Swift.*

My design was, if possible, to discover some small island uninhabited, yet sufficient by my labour to furnish me with the necessaries of life, which I would have thought a greater happiness, than to be first minister in the politest court of Europe; so horrible was the idea I conceived of returning to live in the society, and under the government of *yahoos*. For, in such a solitude as I desired, I could at least enjoy my own thoughts, and reflect with delight on the virtues of those inimitable Houyhnhnms, without any opportunity of degenerating into the vices and corruptions of my own species.

The reader may remember what I related, when my crew conspired against me, and confined me to my cabbin. How I continued there several weeks without knowing what course we took; and when I was put a-shore in the long-boat, how the sailors told me with oaths, whether true or false, that they knew not in what part of the world we were. However, I did then believe us to be about ten degrees Southward of the Cape of Good-Hope, or about 45 degrees Southern latitude, as I gathered from some general words I overheard among them, being I supposed to the South-East in their intended voyage to Madagascar. And although this were but little better than conjecture, yet I resolved to steer my course Eastward, hoping to reach the South-west coast of New-Holland, and perhaps some such island as I desired lying Westward of it. The wind was full West, and by six in the evening I computed I had gone Eastward at least eighteen leagues; when I spied a very small island about half a league off, which I soon reached. It was nothing but a rock with one creek naturally arched by the force of tempests. Here I put in my canoo, and climbing a part of the rock I could plainly discover land to the East, extending from South to North. I lay all night in my canoo; and repeating my voyage early in the morning, I arrived in seven hours to the South-East point of New-Holland. This confirmed me in the opinion I have long entertained, that the *maps* and *charts* place this country at least three degrees more to the East, than it really is; which thought I communicated many years ago to my worthy friend, Mr. Herman Moll, and *gave him my reasons* for it, altho' he hath rather chosen *to follow other authors*.

I saw no inhabitants in the place where I landed, and being unarmed I was afraid of venturing far into the country. I found some shell-fish on the shore, and eat them raw, not daring to kindle a fire for fear of being discovered by the natives. I continued three days feeding on oysters and limpits to save my own provisions; and I fortunately found a brook of excellent water, which gave me great relief.

On the fourth day venturing out early a little too far, I saw twenty or thirty natives upon a height not above five hundred yards from me. They were stark naked, men, women, and children, round a fire, as I could discover by the smoke. One of them spied me, and gave notice to the rest; five of them advanced towards me, leaving the women and children at the fire. I made what haste I could to the shore, and getting into my canoo shoved off: the savages observing me retreat, ran after me: and, before I could get far enough into the sea, discharged an arrow which wounded me deeply on the inside of my left knee (I shall carry the mark to my grave) I apprehended the arrow might be poisoned, and paddling out of the reach of their darts (being a calm day) I made a shift to suck the wound, and dress it as well as I could.

I was at a loss what to do, for I durst not return to the same landing-place, but stood to the North, and was forced to paddle; for the wind, though very gentle, was against me, blowing North-west. As I was looking about for a secure landing-place, I saw a sail to the North North-east, which appearing every minute more visible, I was in some doubt whether I should wait for them or no; but at last my detestation of the *yahoo* race prevailed; and turning my canoo I sailed and paddled together to the South, and got into the same creek from whence I set out in the morning, chusing rather to trust myself among these Barbarians, than live with European *yahoos*. I drew up my canoo as close as I could to the shore, and hid myself behind a stone by the little brook, which, as I have already said, was excellent water.

The ship came within half a league of this creek, and sent out her long-boat with vessels to take in fresh water, (for the place, it seems, was very well known) but I did not observe it, till the boat was almost on shore; and it

was

was too late to ſeek another hiding-place. The ſeamen at their landing obſerved my canoo, and rummaging it all over, eaſily conjectured that the owner could not be far off. Four of them, well armed, ſearched every cranny and lurking-hole, till at laſt they found me flat on my face behind the ſtone. They gazed a while in admiration at my ſtrange uncouth dreſs; my coat made of ſkins, my wooden ſoaled ſhoes, and my furred ſtockings; from whence however they concluded, I was not a native of the place, who all go naked. One of the ſeamen, in Portugueze, bid me riſe, and aſked who I was. I underſtood that language very well, and getting upon my feet ſaid, I was a poor *yahoo* baniſhed from the Houyhnhnms, and deſired they would pleaſe to let me depart. They admired to hear me anſwer them in their own tongue, and ſaw by my complexion I muſt be an European; but were at a loſs to know what I meant by *yahoo*, and Houyhnhnms, and at the ſame time fell a laughing at my ſtrange tone in ſpeaking, which reſembled the neighing of a horſe. I trembled all the while betwixt fear and hatred: I again deſired leave to depart, and was gently moving to my canoo; but they laid hold on me, deſiring to know what country I was of? whence I came? with many other queſtions. I told them I was born in England, from whence I came about five years ago, and then their country and ours were at peace. I therefore hoped they would not treat me as an enemy, ſince I meant them no harm, but was a poor *yahoo*, ſeeking ſome deſolate place where to paſs the remainder of his unfortunate life.

When they began to talk, I thought I never heard or ſaw any thing ſo unnatural; for it appeared to me as monſtrous, as if a dog or a cow ſhould ſpeak in England, or a *yahoo* in Houyhnhnm-land. The honeſt Portugueze were equally amazed at my ſtrange dreſs, and the odd manner of delivering my words, which however they underſtood very well. They ſpoke to me with great humanity, and ſaid they were ſure the Captain would carry me *gratis* to Liſbon, from whence I might return to my own country; that two of the ſeamen would go back to the ſhip, inform the Captain of what they had ſeen, and receive his orders; in the mean time, unleſs

leſs I would give my ſolemn oath not to fly, they would ſecure me by force. I thought it beſt to comply with their propoſal. They were very curious to know my ſtory, but I gave them very little ſatisfaction; and they all conjectured, that my misfortunes had impaired my reaſon. In two hours the boat, which went loaden with veſſels of water, returned with the Captain's command to fetch me on board. I fell on my knees to preſerve my liberty, but all was in vain; and the men having tied me with cords, heaved me into the boat, from whence I was taken into the ſhip, and from thence into the Captain's cabbin.

His name was Pedro de Mendez; he was a very courteous and generous perſon; he entreated me to give ſome account of myſelf, and deſired to know what I would eat or drink; ſaid, I ſhould be uſed as well as himſelf, and ſpoke ſo many obliging things, that I wondered to find ſuch civilities from a *yahoo*. However, I remained ſilent and ſullen; I was ready to faint at the very ſmell of him and his men. At laſt I deſired ſomething to eat out of my own canoo; but he ordered me a chicken, and ſome excellent wine, and then directed that I ſhould be put to bed in a very clean cabbin. I would not undreſs myſelf, but lay on the bed-cloaths, and in half an hour ſtole out, when I thought the crew was at dinner, and getting to the ſide of the ſhip was going to leap into the ſea, and ſwim for my life, rather than continue among *yahoos*. But one of the ſeamen prevented me, and having informed the Captain, I was chained to my cabbin.

After dinner Don Pedro came to me, and deſired to know my reaſon for ſo deſperate an attempt; aſſured me, he only meant to do me all the ſervice he was able, and ſpoke ſo very movingly, that at laſt I deſcended to treat him like an animal, which had ſome little portion of reaſon. I gave him a very ſhort relation of my voyage; of the conſpiracy againſt me by my own men; of the country where they ſet me on ſhore, and of my five years reſidence there. All which he looked upon, as if it were a dream or a viſion; whereat I took great offence; for I had quite forgot the faculty of lying ſo peculiar to *yahoos* in all countries where they preſide, and conſequently the diſpoſition of ſuſpecting truth in others of their own ſpecies.

ſpecies. I aſked him whether it were the cuſtom in his country to *ſay the thing which was not?* I aſſured him, I had almoſt forgot what he meant by falſehood, and, if I had lived a thouſand years in Houyhnhnm-land, I ſhould never have heard a lie from the meaneſt ſervant; that I was altogether indifferent whether he believed me or no; but however, in return for his favours, I would give ſo much allowance to the corruption of his nature as to anſwer any objection he would pleaſe to make, and then he might eaſily diſcover the truth.

THE Captain, a wiſe man, after many endeavours to catch me tripping in ſome part of my ſtory, at laſt began to have a better opinion of my veracity. But he added, that, ſince I profeſſed ſo inviolable an attachment to truth, I muſt give him my word and honour to bear him company in this voyage without attempting any thing againſt my life, or elſe he would continue me a priſoner till we arrived at Liſbon. I gave him the promiſe he required; but at the ſame time proteſted, that I would ſuffer the greateſt hardſhips, rather than return to live among *yahoos*.

OUR voyage paſſed without any conſiderable accident. In gratitude to the Captain I ſometimes ſat with him at his earneſt requeſt, and ſtrove to conceal my antipathy againſt human kind, altho' it often broke out; which he ſuffered to paſs without obſervation. But the greateſt part of the day I confined myſelf to my cabbin to avoid ſeeing any of the crew. The Captain had often entreated me to ſtrip myſelf of my ſavage dreſs, and offered to lend me the beſt ſuit of cloaths he had. This I would not be prevailed on to accept, abhorring to cover myſelf with any thing that had been on the back of a *yahoo*. I only deſired he would lend me two clean ſhirts, which, having been waſhed ſince he wore them, I believed would not ſo much defile me. Theſe I changed every ſecond day, and waſhed them myſelf.

WE arrived at Liſbon, Nov. 5, 1715. At our landing the Captain forced me to cover myſelf with his cloak to prevent the rabble from crouding about me. I was conveyed to his own houſe; and at my earneſt requeſt he led me up to the higheſt room backwards. I conjured him *to conceal from* all perſons what I had told him of the

the Houyhnhnms; becauſe the leaſt hint of ſuch a ſtory would not only draw numbers of people to ſee me, but probably put me in danger of being impriſoned or burnt by the *inquiſition*. The Captain perſuaded me to accept a ſuit of cloaths newly made; but I would not ſuffer the taylor to take my meaſure; however, Don Pedro being almoſt of my ſize, they fitted me well enough. He accoutred me with other neceſſaries, all new, which I aired for twenty four hours, before I would uſe them.

THE Captain had no wife, nor above three ſervants, none of which were ſuffered to attend at meals; and his whole deportment was ſo obliging, added to very good *human* underſtanding, that I really began to tolerate his company. He gained ſo far upon me, that I ventured to look out of the back window. By degrees I was brought into another room, from whence I peeped into the ſtreet, but drew my head back in a fright. In a week's time he ſeduced me down to the door. I found my terror gradually leſſened, but my hatred and contempt ſeemed to encreaſe. I was at laſt bold enough to walk the ſtreet in his company, but keeped my noſe well ſtopped with rue, or ſometimes with tobacco.

IN ten days Don Pedro, to whom I had given ſome account of my domeſtic affairs, put it upon me as a matter of honour and conſcience, that I ought to return to my native country, and live at home with my wife and children. He told me, there was an Engliſh ſhip in the port juſt ready to ſail, and he would furniſh me with all things neceſſary. It would be tedious to repeat his arguments, and my contradictions. He ſaid it was altogether impoſſible to find ſuch a ſolitary iſland as I had deſired to live in; but I might command in my own houſe, and paſs my time in a manner as recluſe as I pleaſed.

I complied at laſt, finding I could not do better. I left Liſbon the 24th day of November in an Engliſh merchantman, but, who was the maſter, I never inquired. Don Pedro accompanied me to the ſhip, and lent me twenty pounds. He took kind leave of me, and embraced me at parting, which I bore as well as I could. During this laſt voyage I had no commerce with the maſter, or any of his men; but pretending I was ſick, kept cloſe in my cabbin. On the 5th of December 1715, we caſt anchor

chor in the Downs about nine in the morning, and at three in the afternoon I got ſafe to my houſe at Rotherhith.

My wife and family received me with great ſurprize and joy, becauſe they concluded me certainly dead; but I muſt freely confeſs the ſight of them filled me only with hatred, diſguſt, and contempt; and the more by reflecting on the near alliance I had to them. For altho' ſince my unfortunate exile from the Houyhnhnm country, I had compelled myſelf to tolerate the ſight of *yahoos*, and to converſe with Don Pedro de Mendez; yet my memory and imagination were perpetually filled with the virtues and ideas of thoſe exalted Houyhnhnms. And when I began to conſider, that by copulating with one of the *yahoo*-ſpecies I had become a parent of more, it ſtruck me with the utmoſt ſhame, confuſion, and horror.

As ſoon as I entered the houſe, my wife took me in her arms, and kiſſed me; at which, having not been uſed to the touch of that odious animal for ſo many years, I fell into a ſwoon for almoſt an hour. At the time I am writing, it is five years * ſince my laſt return into England: during the firſt year I could not endure my wife or children in my preſence; the very ſmell of them was intolerable; much leſs could I ſuffer them to eat in the ſame room. To this hour they dare not preſume to touch my bread, or drink out of the ſame cup; neither was I ever able to let one of them take me by the hand. The firſt money I laid out was to buy two young ſtone-horſes, which I keep in a good ſtable, and next to them the groom is my greateſt favourite; for I feel my ſpirits revived by the ſmell he contracts in the ſtable. My horſes underſtand me tolerably well; I converſe with them at leaſt four hours every day. They are ſtrangers to bridle or ſaddle; they live in great amity with me, and friendſhip to each other.

* This was intended as a mark, whereby the exact point of time, when Dr. Swift finiſhed this noble and grand performance, which, in the prophetic ſtyle of his friend Pope, will in future ages be the admiration of all men [vol. iv. p. 60.] ſhould be known to poſterity. *Swift.*

CHAP. XII.

The author's veracity. His deſign in publiſhing this work. His cenſure of thoſe travellers who ſwerve from the truth. The author clears himſelf from any ſiniſter ends in writing. An objection anſwered. The method of planting colonies. His native country commended. The right of the crown to thoſe countries deſcribed by the author, is juſtified. The difficulty of conquering them. The author takes his laſt leave of the reader; propoſeth his manner of living for the future; gives good advice, and concludeth.*

THUS gentle reader, I have given thee a faithful hiſtory of my travels for ſixteen years and above ſeven months; wherein I have not been ſo ſtudious of ornament as of truth. I could perhaps like others, have aſtoniſhed thee with ſtrange improbable tales; but I rather choſe to relate plain matter of fact in the ſimpleſt manner and ſtyle; becauſe my principal deſign was to inform, and not to amuſe thee.

IT is eaſy for us who travel into remote countries, which are ſeldom viſited by Engliſhmen or other Europeans, to form deſcriptions of wonderful animals both at ſea and land. Whereas a traveller's chief aim ſhould be to make men wiſer and better, and to improve their minds by the bad, as well as good example, of what they deliver concerning foreign places.

I could heartily wiſh a law was enacted, that every traveller, before he were permitted to publiſh his voyages, ſhould

* I muſt confeſs, in the ſpirit of candour and ſincerity, that I heartily wiſh this 12th chapter, which is, without exception, the dulleſt piece (at leaſt that I can remember) in his whole writings, were either burnt or annihilated. This indeed, like the reſt of his critics, I could eaſily have paſſed over uncenſured; perhaps they never obſerved it. And yet all that I mean by this gentle ſeverity (for I deſpiſe [the reputation of a little cenſuring critic) is, to ſhew the world, that I would ſcorn to approve thro' thick and thin the words of the moſt improved, conſummate genius, in deſpite to that little knowledge which I have endeavoured to acquire, as a direction to my own taſte and judgment. *Swift.*

ſhould be obliged to make oath before the Lord High Chancellor, that all he intended to print was abſolutely true to the beſt of his knowledge; for then the world would no longer be deceived, as it uſually is; while ſome writers, to make their works paſs the better upon the public, impoſe the groſſeſt falſities on the unwary reader. I have peruſed ſeveral books of travels with great delight in my younger days; but having ſince gone over moſt parts of the globe, and been able to contradict many fabulous accounts from my own obſervation, it hath given me a great diſguſt againſt this part of reading, and ſome indignation to ſee the credulity of mankind ſo impudently abuſed. Therefore, ſince my acquaintance were pleaſed to think my poor endeavours might not be unacceptable to my country, I impoſed on myſelf as a maxim never to be ſwerved from, that I would *ſtrictly adhere to truth*; neither indeed can I be ever under the leaſt temptation to vary from it, while I retain in my mind the lectures and example of my noble maſter, and the other illuſtrious Houyhnhnms, of whom I had ſo long the honour to be an humble hearer.

——Nec ſi miſerum Fortuna Sinonem
Finxit, vanum etiam, mendacemque improba finget.

I know very well, how little reputation is to be got by writings, which require neither genius nor learning, nor indeed any other talent, except a good memory, or an exact *journal*. I know likewiſe, that writers of travels, like *dictionary*-makers, are ſunk into oblivion by the weight and bulk of thoſe, who come laſt, and therefore lie uppermoſt. And it is highly probable, that ſuch travellers, who ſhall hereafter viſit the countries deſcribed in this work of mine, may by detecting my errors (if there be any) and adding many new diſcoveries of their own, juſtle me out of vogue and ſtand in my place, making the world forget that ever I was an author. This indeed would be too great a mortification, if I write for fame: but as my ſole intention was the *public good*, I cannot be altogether diſappointed. For who can read of the virtues I have mentioned in the glorious Houyhnhnms without being aſhamed of his own vices, when he conſi-

But this deſcription, I confeſs, doth by no means affect the Britiſh nation, who may be an example to the whole world for their wiſdom, care, and juſtice in planting colonies; their liberal endowments for the advancement of religion and learning; their choice of devout and able paſtors to propagate *chriſtianity*; their caution in ſtocking their provinces with people of ſober lives and converſations from this the mother kingdom; their ſtrict regard to the diſtribution of juſtice, in ſupplying the civil adminiſtration thro' all their colonies with officers of the greateſt abilities, utter ſtrangers to corruption; and to crown all, by ſending the moſt vigilant and virtuous governors, who have no other views than the happineſs of the people over whom they preſide, and the honour of the King their maſter.

But as thoſe countries, which I have deſcribed, do not appear to have any deſire of being conquered, and enſlaved, murdered or driven out by colonies; nor abound either in gold, ſilver, ſugar, or tobacco; I did humbly conceive, they were by no means proper objects of our zeal, our valour, or our intereſt. However, if thoſe, whom it more concerns, think fit to be of another opinion, I am ready to depoſe, when I ſhall be lawfully called, that no European did ever viſit theſe countries before me. I mean, if the inhabitants ought to be believed, unleſs a diſpute may ariſe concerning the two *yahoos* ſaid to have been ſeen many ages ago upon a mountain in Houyhnhnm-land.

But, as to the formality of taking poſſeſſion in my ſovereign's name, it never came once into my thoughts; and if it had, yet, as my affairs then ſtood, I ſhould perhaps in point of prudence and ſelf-preſervation have put it off to a better opportunity.

Having thus anſwered the only objection, that can ever be raiſed againſt me as a traveller; I here take a final leave of all my courteous readers, and return to enjoy my own ſpeculations in my little garden at Reddriff; to apply thoſe excellent leſſons of virtue, which I learned among the Houyhnhnms; to inſtruct the *yahoos* of my own family, as far as I ſhall find them docible animals; to behold my figure often in a glaſs, and thus, if poſſible, habituate myſelf by time to tolerate the ſight of a human creature: to lament the brutality of Houyhnhnms in my own

own country, but always treat their perſons with reſpect for the ſake of my noble maſter, his family, his friends, and the whole Houyhnhnm race, whom theſe of ours have the honour to reſemble in all their lineaments, however their intellectuals came to degenerate.

I began laſt week to permit my wife to ſit at dinner with me at the fartheſt end of a long table; and to anſwer (but with the utmoſt brevity) the few queſtions I aſked her. Yet, the ſmell of a *yahoo* continuing very offenſive, I always keep my noſe well ſtopped with rue, lavender, or tobacco-leaves. And, altho' it be hard for a man late in life to remove old habits, I am not altogether out of hopes in ſome time to ſuffer a neighbour *yahoo* in my company, without the apprehenſions I am yet under of his teeth or his claws.

My reconcilement to the *yahoo* kind in general might not be ſo difficult, if they would be content with thoſe vices and follies only, which nature hath intitled them to. I am not in the leaſt provoked at the ſight of a lawyer, a pickpocket, a colonel, a fool, a lord, a gameſter, a politician, a whore-monger, a phyſician, an evidence, a ſuborner, an attorney, a traitor, or the like; this is all according to the due courſe of things: but when I behold a lump of deformity and diſeaſes both in body and mind ſmitten with *pride*, it immediately breaks all the meaſures of my patience; neither ſhall I be ever able to comprehend how ſuch an animal, and ſuch a vice, could tally together. The wiſe and virtuous Houyhnhnms, who abound in all excellencies that can adorn a rational creature, have no name for this vice in their language, which hath no terms to expreſs any thing that is evil, except thoſe whereby they deſcribe the deteſtable qualities of their *yahoos*, among which they were not able to diſtinguiſh this of pride for want of thoroughly underſtanding human nature, as it ſheweth itſelf in other countries, where that animal preſides. But I, who had more experience, could plainly obſerve ſome rudiments of it among the wild *yahoos*.

But the Houyhnhnms, who live under the government of reaſon, are no more proud of the good qualities they poſſeſs, than I ſhould be for not wanting a leg or an arm, which no man in his wits would boaſt of, altho' he

would

must be miſerable without them. I dwell the longer upon this ſubject, from the deſire I have to make the ſociety of an Engliſh *yahoo* by any means not inſupportable; and therefore I here entreat thoſe, who have any tincture of this abſurd vice, that they will not preſume to come in my ſight.

*** To mortify pride, which indeed was not made for man, and produces not only the moſt ridiculous follies, but the moſt extenſive calamity, appears to have been one general view of the author in every part of theſe travels. Perſonal ſtrength and beauty, the wiſdom and the virtue of mankind, become objects, not of pride, but of humility, in the diminutive ſtature and contemptible weakneſs of the Lilliputians; in the horrid deformity of the Brobdingnagians; in the learned folly of the Laputians; and in the parallel drawn between our manners and thoſe of the Houyhnhnms. *Hawkeſ.*

Swift's Gulliver is a direct, plain, and bitter ſatire againſt the innumerable follies and corruptions in law, politics, learning, morals, and religion. And, without diſpute, theſe manifold corruptions have, in a courſe of ages, by the refinements and gloſſes of iniquitous men, arrived at laſt to ſuch ſtrength and effrontery, as to render it impoſſible for all the wit and genius that ever warmed the imagination of a ſatiriſt, to laſh them with any degree of ſeverity proportioned to that exceſs of perturbation and miſchief which they ſeverally occaſion in the great circle of ſociety. All therefore which can be done by a wiſe man (ſeeing that by nature he is appointed to act for the ſpace of thirty, fifty, or ſeventy years, ſome ridiculous, ſilly part in this fantaſtic theatre of miſery, vice, and corruption), is either to lament, with Heraclitus, the iniquities of the world; or, which is the more chearful, and therefore I do preſume the more eligible courſe, to laugh, with Democritus, at all the knaves and fools upon earth. And accordingly we find, that Dr Swift has, in theſe travels, exerted a force of ridicule and ſatire, pointed ſo directly againſt the depravities of human kind, and ſupported with ſuch an abundance of wit and pleaſantry, as indeed more than perſuade us to believe, that his intention was either to laugh vice and immorality, if it were poſſible, quite out of the world; or at leaſt to avenge the cauſe of virtue on all the patrons and abettors of iniquity. *Swift.*

A

TRITICAL ESSAY

UPON THE

FACULTIES of the MIND*.

To——

SIR,

BEING so great a lover of antiquities, it was reasonable to suppose, you would be very much obliged with any thing, that was new. I have been of late offended with many writers of essays and moral discourses for running into stale topics and threadbare quotations, and not handling their subjects fully and closely: all which errors I have carefully avoided in the following essay, which I have proposed as a pattern for young writers to imitate. The thoughts and observations being entirely new, the quotations untouched by others, the subject of mighty importance, and treated with much order and perspicuity, it hath cost me a great deal of time; and I desire you will accept and consider it as the utmost effort of my genius.

PHilosophers say, that man is a microcosm, or little world, resembling in miniature every part of the great:

* This essay will make you smile. *Orrery.*

In this piece the spirit of ridicule is very highly displayed. The author gravely pretends, that this subject is of mighty importance; that his sentiments are entirely new; that his quo-

tations

great: and, in my opinion, the body natural may be compared to the body politic: and if this be ſo, how can the Epicurean's opinion be true, that the univerſe was formed by a fortuitous concourſe of atoms; which I will no more believe, than that the accidental jumbling of the letters of the alphabet could fall by chance into a moſt ingenious and learned treatiſe of philoſophy; *Riſum teneatis amici!* [HOR] This falſe opinion muſt needs create many more; it is like an error in the firſt concoction, which cannot be corrected in the ſecond; the foundation is weak, and whatever ſuperſtructure you raiſe upon it, muſt of neceſſity fall to the ground. Thus men are led from one error to another, until with Ixion they embrace a cloud inſtead of Juno; or, like the dog in the fable, loſe the ſubſtance in gaping at the ſhadow. For ſuch opinions cannot cohere; but like the iron and clay in the toes of Nebuchadnezzar's image, muſt ſeparate and break in pieces. I have read in a certain author, that Alexander wept, becauſe he had no more worlds to conquer; which he needed not have done, if the fortuitous concourſe of atoms could create one: but this is an opinion fitter for that many-headed beaſt the vulgar to entertain, than for ſo wiſe a man as Epicurus; the corrupt part of his ſect only borrowed his name, as the monkey did the cat's claw to draw the cheſnut out of the fire.

HOWEVER, the firſt ſtep to the cure is to know the diſeaſe; and tho' truth may be difficult to find, becauſe, as the philoſopher obſerves, ſhe lives in the bottom of a well, yet we need not, like blind men, grope in open day-light.

tations are untouched by others; and, above all, that he has treated his ſubject with much order, fulneſs, and perſpicuity; on which account he hath propoſed it as a pattern for young writers to imitate, and deſires it may be conſidered as the utmoſt effort of his genius. Whereas in fact the ſubject is of little importance, the ſentiments are old and ſtale, the quotations are threadbare; and, to complete his ridicule, he has treated his ſubject in a light, careleſs, rambling, ſuperficial manner, without order, fulneſs, meaning, or perſpicuity: and therefore it is only to be conſidered, like the *meditation on a broomſtick*, [vol. viii. p. 372.] in a farcical, ſatiric light, deſigned purely to *expoſe* the folly and temerity of thoſe brainleſs, illiterate *ſcribblers*, who are eternally plaguing their contemporaries with a parcel of wild, incoherent, nonſenſical trash. SWIFT.

day-light. I hope I may be allowed among ſo many far more learned men to offer my mite, ſince a ſtander-by may ſometimes perhaps ſee more of the game, than he that plays it. But I do not think a philoſopher obliged to account for every phænomenon in nature, or drown himſelf with Ariſtotle, for not being able to ſolve the ebbing and flowing of the tide, in that fatal ſentence he paſt upon himſelf, *Quia te non capio, tu capies me.* Wherein he was at once the judge and the criminal, the accuſer and executioner. Socrates, on the other hand, who ſaid he knew nothing, was pronounced by the oracle to be the wiſeſt man in the world.

But to return from this digreſſion, I think it as clear as any demonſtration in Euclid, that nature does nothing in vain; if we were able to dive into her ſecret receſſes, we ſhould find that the ſmalleſt blade of graſs, or moſt contemptible weed, has its particular uſe; but ſhe is chiefly admirable in her minuteſt compoſitions, the leaſt and moſt contemptible inſect moſt diſcovers the art of nature, if I may ſo call it, though nature, which delights in variety, will always triumph over art: and as the poet obſerves,

Naturam expellas furca licet, uſque recurret. Hor.

But the various opinions of philoſophers have ſcattered through the world as many plagues of the mind, as Pandora's box did thoſe of the body, only with this difference, that they have not left hope at the bottom. And if truth be not fled with Aſtrea, ſhe is certainly as hidden as the ſource of Nile, and can be found only in Utopia. Not that I would reflect on thoſe wiſe ſages, which would be a ſort of ingratitude; and he that calls a man ungrateful, ſums up all the evil that a man can be guilty of,

Ingratum ſi dixeris, omnia dicis.

But what I blame the philoſophers for (tho' ſome may think it a paradox) is chiefly their pride; nothing leſs than an *ipſe dixit*, and you muſt pin your faith on their ſleeve. And tho' Diogenes lived in a tub, there might be, for aught I know, as much pride under his

rags,

rags, as in the fine ſpun garment of the divine Plato. It is reported of this Diogenes, that when Alexander came to ſee him, and promiſed to give him whatever he would aſk, the *cynic* only anſwered, *Take not from me what thou canſt not give me, but ſtand from between me and the light:* which was almoſt as extravagant as the philoſopher, that flung his money into the ſea, with this remarkable ſaying ———

How different was this man from the uſurer, who being told his ſon would ſpend all he had got, replied, *He cannot take more pleaſure in ſpending, than I did in getting it.* Theſe men could ſee the faults of each other, but not their own; thoſe they flung into the bag behind; * *non videmus id manticae quod in tergo eſt.* I may perhaps be cenſured for my free opinions by thoſe carping momus's, whom authors worſhip as the Indians do the devil, for fear. They will endeavour to give my reputation as many wounds as the man in the almanack, but I value it not; and perhaps like flies, they may buz ſo often about the candle, till they burn their wings. They muſt pardon me, if I venture to give them this advice, not to rail at what they cannot underſtand: it does but diſcover that ſelf tormenting paſſion of envy, than which the greateſt tyrant never invented a more cruel torment.

Invidia Siculi non invenere tyranni
Tormentum majus ——— Juv.

I muſt be ſo bold to tell my critics and witlings, that they can no more judge of this, than a man that is born blind can have any true idea of colours. I have always obſerved that your empty veſſels ſound loudeſt: I value their laſhes as little as the ſea did thoſe of Xerxes, when he whipped it †. The utmoſt favour a man can expect from them is, that which Polyphemus promiſed Ulyſſes, that

* Alluding to the fable of Phaedrus, that Jupiter had hung over every man's ſhoulder two ſatchels, of which one hung before, and contained the faults of his neighbours; and the other behind, which contained his own.

† It is told of Xerxes, that when the ſea broke down the *bridge of* boats, which he had laid over the Helleſpont, he ordered *it* to be laſhed, and fetters to be thrown into it.

that he would devour him the laſt: they think to ſubdue a writer, as Cæſar did his enemy, with a *veni, vidi, vici.* I confeſs I value the opinion of the judicious few, a Rymer, a Dennis, or a W——k; but for the reſt, to give my judgment at once, I think the long diſpute among the philoſophers about a *vacuum* may be determined in the affirmative, that it is to be found in a critic's head. They are at beſt but the drones of the learned world, who devour the honey, and will not work themſelves; and a writer need no more regard them, than the moon does the barking of a little ſenſeleſs cur. For, in ſpight of their terrible roaring, you may with half an eye diſcover the *aſs* under the *lion*'s ſkin.

But to return to our diſcourſe: Demoſthenes being aſked what was the firſt part of an orator, replied, *action:* what was the ſecond, *action:* what was the third, *action:* and ſo on *ad infinitum.* This may be true in oratory; but contemplation in other things exceeds action. And therefore a wiſe man is never leſs alone, than when he is alone:

Nunquam minus ſolus, quam cum ſolus.

And Archimedes, the famous mathematician, was ſo intent upon his problems, that he never minded the ſoldier who came to kill him. Therefore not to detract from the juſt praiſe which belongs to orators, they ought to conſider that nature, which gave us two eyes to ſee, and two ears to hear, has given us but one tongue to ſpeak, wherein however ſome do ſo abound, that the virtuoſi, who have been ſo long in ſearch for the perpetual motion, may infallibly find it there.

Some men admire republics, becauſe orators flouriſh there moſt, and are the great enemies of tyranny: but my opinion is, that one tyrant is better than a hundred. Beſides, theſe orators inflame the people, whoſe anger is really but a ſhort fit of madneſs.

Ira furor brevis eſt.—— Hor.

After which, laws are like cobwebs, which may catch ſmall flies, but let waſps and hornets break thro'. But in oratory the greateſt art is to hide art.

Artis eſt celare artem.

BUT this muſt be the work of time, we muſt lay hold on all opportunities, and let ſlip no occaſion, elſe we ſhall be forced to weave Penelope's web, unravel in the night what we ſpun in the day. And therefore I have obſerved, that time is painted with a lock before, and bald behind, ſignifying thereby, that we muſt take time (as we ſay) by the forelock, for when it is once paſt, there is no recalling it.

THE mind of man is at firſt (if you will pardon the expreſſion) like a *tabula raſa*, or like wax, which, while it is ſoft, is capable of any impreſſion, till time has hardened it. And at length death, that grim tyrant, ſtops us in the midſt of our career. The greateſt conquerors have at laſt been conquered by death, which ſpares none, from the ſceptre to the ſpade.

Mors omnibus communis.

ALL rivers go to the ſea, but none return from it. Xerxes wept when he beheld his army, to conſider that in leſs than an hundred years they would be all dead. Anacreon was choaked with a grape-ſtone; and violent joy kills as well as violent grief. There is nothing in this world conſtant, but inconſtancy; yet Plato thought that if virtue would appear to the world in her own native dreſs, all men would be enamoured with her. But now, ſince intereſt governs the world, and men neglect the golden mean, Jupiter himſelf, if he came on the earth, would be deſpiſed, unleſs it were, as he did to Danae, in a golden ſhower: for men now-a-days worſhip the riſing ſun, and not the ſetting.

Donec eris felix multos numerabis amicos.

THUS have I, in obedience to your commands, ventured to expoſe myſelf to cenſure in this critical age. Whether I have done right to my ſubject, muſt be left to the judgment of the learned reader: however, I cannot but hope, that my attempting of it may be an encouragement for ſome able pen to perform it with more ſucceſs.

PREDICTIONS

PREDICTIONS

for the Year 1708 *.

Wherein the month, and day of the month, are ſet down, the perſons named, and the great actions and events of next year particularly related, as they will come to paſs.

[*Written to prevent the people of England from being farther impoſed on by vulgar almanack-makers.*]

By ISAAC BICKERSTAFF, Eſq:

I HAVE long conſidered the groſs abuſe of aſtrology in this kingdom, and upon debating the matter with myſelf, I could not poſſibly lay the fault upon the art, but

* It is ſaid, that the author, when he had writ this paper, and, being at a loſs what name to prefix to it, paſſing thro' Long-acre, obſerved a ſign over a houſe where a locksmith dwelt, and found the name *Bickerſtaff* written under it; which being a name ſomewhat uncommon, he choſe to call himſelf *Iſaac Bickerſtaff*. This name was ſome time afterward made uſe of by Sir Richard Steel, and Mr. Addiſon, in the Tatlers; in which papers, as well as many of the Spectators, it is well known, that the author had a conſiderable part. *Dub. edit.*

The papers which relate to Partridge the almanack-maker, are entirely humorous: and altho' they are not only temporary but local, yet by an art peculiar to Swift himſelf, they are rendered immortal, ſo as to be read with pleaſure, as long as the Engliſh language ſubſiſts. *Orrery.*

In the papers relating to Partridge the almanack-maker, thoſe who have a taſte for mirth and humour, will find abundance of entertainment. They are deſigned as a ridicule upon all that fooliſh tribe who ſet up for aſtrologers, and without one rag of learning, are great pretenders to ſcience. The elegy on Partridge [in vol. vi. p. 84.] can never be ſufficiently reliſhed by thoſe who are unacquainted with theſe whimſical tracts. However, it is a

but upon thoſe groſs impoſtors, who ſet up to be the artiſts. I know ſeveral learned men have contended, that the whole is a cheat; that it is abſurd and ridiculous to imagine, the ſtars can have any influence at all upon human actions, thoughts, or inclinations; and whoever hath not bent his ſtudies that way, may be excuſed for thinking ſo, when he ſees in how wretched a manner that noble art is treated by a few mean illiterate traders between us and the ſtars; who import a yearly ſtock of nonſenſe, lies, folly, and impertinence, which they offer to the world as genuine from the planets, tho' they deſcend from no greater a height than their own brains.

I intend in a ſhort time to publiſh a large and rational defence of this art, and therefore ſhall ſay no more in its juſtification at preſent, than that it hath been in all ages defended by many learned men, and among the reſt by Socrates himſelf, whom I look upon as undoubtedly the wiſeſt of uninſpired mortals; to which if we add, that thoſe who have condemned this art, tho' otherwiſe learned, having been ſuch as either did not apply their ſtudies this way, or at leaſt did not ſucceed in their applications; their teſtimony will not be of much weight to its diſadvantage, ſince they are liable to the common objection of condemning what they did not underſtand.

NOR am I at all offended, or do I think it an injury to the art, when I ſee the common dealers in it, the *ſtudents in aſtrology*, the *philomaths*, and the reſt of that tribe, treated by wiſe men with the utmoſt ſcorn and contempt; but I rather wonder when I obſerve gentlemen in the country rich enough to ſerve the nation in parliament, poring in Partridge's almanack to find out the events of the year at home and abroad; not daring to propoſe a hunting match, till Gadbury or he have fixed the weather.

I will allow either of the two I have mentioned, or any other of the fraternity, to be not only aſtrologers, but conjurers too, if I do not produce a hundred inſtances in all

point worth obſerving, that upon all occaſions Dr. Swift remembers the fanatical party; neither would he allow a poor cobler, ſtarmonger, and quack to go out of the world, until upon his *deathbed* he had declared himſelf a nonconformiſt, and had a *fanatic* preacher to be his ſpiritual guide. SWIFT.

all their almanacks to convince any reaſonable man, that they do not ſo much as underſtand common grammar and ſyntax; that they are not able to ſpell any word out of the uſual road, nor even in their prefaces to write common ſenſe or intelligible Engliſh. Then for their obſervations and predictions, they are ſuch as will equally ſuit any age or country in the world. *This month a certain great perſon will be threatened with death or ſickneſs.* This the news-papers will tell them; for there we find at the end of the year, that no month paſſes without the death of ſome perſon of note; and it would be hard, if it ſhould be otherwiſe, when there are at leaſt two thouſand perſons of note in this kingdom, many of them old, and the almanack-maker has the liberty of chuſing the ſickliеſt ſeaſon of the year, where he may fix his prediction. Again, *this month an eminent clergyman will be preferred*; of which there may be ſome hundreds, half of them with one foot in the grave. Then, *ſuch a planet in ſuch a houſe ſhews great machinations, plots and conſpiracies, that may in time be brought to light:* after which, if we hear of any diſcovery, the aſtrologer gets the honour; if not, his prediction ſtill ſtands good. And at laſt, *God preſerve King William from all his open and ſecret enemies, amen.* When, if the King ſhould happen to have died, the aſtrologer plainly foretold it; otherwiſe it paſſeth but for the pious ejaculation of a loyal ſubject; tho' it unluckily happened in ſome of their almanacks, that poor King William was prayed for many months after he was dead, becauſe it fell out, that he died about the beginning of the year.

To mention no more of their impertinent predictions, what have we to do with their advertiſements about *pills and drink for the venereal diſeaſe?* or their mutual quarrels in verſe and proſe of Whig and Tory, wherewith the ſtars have little to do?

HAVING long obſerved and lamented theſe, and a hundred other abuſes of this art too tedious to repeat, I reſolved to proceed in a new way, which I doubt not will be to the general ſatisfaction of the kingdom. I can this year produce but a ſpecimen of what I deſign for the future; having employed moſt part of my time in adjuſting and correcting the calculations I made ſome years paſt,

becauſe I would offer nothing to the world, of which I am not as fully ſatisfied, as that I am now alive. For theſe two laſt years I have not failed in above one or two particulars, and thoſe of no very great moment. I exactly foretold the miſcarriage at Toulon, with all its particulars; and the loſs of Admiral Shovel, tho' I was miſtaken as to the day, placing that accident about thirty ſix hours ſooner than it happened; but, upon reviewing my ſchemes, I quickly found the cauſe of that error. I likewiſe foretold the battle of Almanza to the very day and hour, with the loſs on both ſides, and the conſequences thereof. All which I ſhewed to ſome friends many months before they happened, that is, I gave them papers ſealed up, to open at ſuch a time, after which they were at liberty to read them; and there they found my predictions true in every article, except one or two very minute.

As for the few following predictions I now offer the world, I forebore to publiſh them, till I had peruſed the ſeveral almanacks for the year we are now entered upon. I found them all in the uſual ſtrain, and I beg the reader will compare their manner with mine: and here I make bold to tell the world, that I lay the whole credit of my art upon the truth of theſe predictions; and I will be content, that Partridge, and the reſt of his clan, may hoot me for a cheat and impoſtor, if I fail in any ſingle particular of moment. I believe, any man who reads this paper, will look upon me to be at leaſt a perſon of as much honeſty and underſtanding, as a common maker of almanacks. I do not lurk in the dark; I am not wholly unknown in the world; I have ſet my name at length, to be a mark of infamy to mankind, if they ſhall find I deceive them.

In one point I muſt deſire to be forgiven, that I talk more ſparingly of home affairs: as it would be imprudence to diſcover ſecrets of ſtate, ſo it might be dangerous to my perſon; but in ſmaller matters, and ſuch as are not of public conſequence, I ſhall be very free; and the truth of my conjectures will as much appear from theſe as the other. As for the moſt ſignal events abroad in France, Flanders, Italy and Spain, I ſhall make no ſcruple to predict them in plain terms: ſome of them are

of

of importance, and I hope I shall seldom mistake the day they will happen; therefore, I think good to inform the reader, that I all along make use of the *old style* observed in England, which I desire he will compare with that of the news papers, at the time they relate the actions I mention.

I must add one word more: I know it hath been the opinion of several learned persons, who think well enough of the true art of astrology, that the stars do only *incline*, and not *force* the actions or wills of men: and therefore, however I may proceed by right rules, yet I cannot in prudence so confidently assure the events will follow exactly as I predict them.

I hope I have maturely considered this objection, which in some cases is of no little weight. For example: a man may, by the influence of an over-ruling planet, be disposed or inclined to lust, rage, or avarice, and yet by the force of reason overcome that evil influence; and this was the case of Socrates*: but the great events of the world usually depending upon numbers of men, it cannot be expected they should all unite to cross their inclinations, for pursuing a general design, wherein they unanimously agree. Besides, the influence of the stars reaches to many actions and events, which are not any way in the power of reason; as sickness, death, and what we commonly call accidents, with many more needless to repeat.

But now it is time to proceed to my predictions, which I have begun to calculate from the time that the *sun* enters into Aries. And this I take to be properly the beginning of the natural year. I pursue them to the time that he enters Libra, or somewhat more, which is the busy period of the year. The remainder I have not yet

* A physiognomist being brought by Socrates's scholars to examine the features of their master, pronounced him, according to the rules of art, passionate, intemperate, and libidinous; and when he was reproached and derided by them for a judgment so remote from the truth, Socrates rescued him from their insult, by declaring, that his natural disposition was such as had been described, before it was corrected by the study of philosophy.

Hawkes.

yet adjuſted, upon account of ſeveral impediments needleſs here to mention: beſides, I muſt remind the reader again, that this is but a ſpecimen of what I deſign in ſucceeding years to treat more at large, if I may have liberty and encouragement.

My firſt prediction is but a trifle, yet I will mention it, to ſhew how ignorant thoſe ſottiſh pretenders to aſtrology are in their own concerns; it relates to Partridge the almanack-maker: I have conſulted the ſtar of his nativity by my own rules, and find he will infallibly die upon the 29th of March next, about eleven at night, of a raging fever; therefore I adviſe him to conſider of it, and ſettle his affairs in time.

The month of April will be obſervable for the death of many great perſons. On the 4th will die the Cardinal de Noailles, Archbiſhop of Paris: on the 11th the young Prince of Aſturias, ſon to the Duke of Anjou: on the 14th, a great *Peer* of this realm will die at his country-houſe: on the 19th an old *layman* of great fame for learning: and on the 23d an eminent goldſmith in Lombard-ſtreet. I could mention others, both at home and abroad, if I did not conſider ſuch events of very little uſe or inſtruction to the reader, or to the world.

As to public affairs: on the 7th of this month there will be an inſurrection in Dauphine, occaſioned by the oppreſſions of the people, which will not be quieted in ſome months.

On the 15th will be a violent ſtorm on the ſouth-eaſt coaſt of France, which will deſtroy many of their ſhips, and ſome in the very harbour.

The 19th will be famous for the revolt of a whole province or kingdom, excepting one city, by which the affairs of a certain prince in the alliance will take a better face.

May, againſt common conjectures, will be no very buſy month in Europe, but very ſignal for the death of the Dauphin, which will happen on the 7th, after a ſhort fit of ſickneſs, and grievous torments with the ſtrangury. He dies leſs lamented by the court than the kingdom.

On the 9th a *mareſchal* of France will break his leg by

by a fall from his horſe. I have not been able to diſcover whether he will then die or not.

On the 11th will begin a moſt important ſiege, which the eyes of all Europe will be upon: I cannot be more particular: for, in relating affairs that ſo nearly concern the *confederates*, and conſequently this kingdom, I am forced to confine myſelf, for ſeveral reaſons very obvious to the reader.

On the 15th news will arrive of a very *ſurpriſing event*, than which nothing could be more unexpected.

On the 19th three noble Ladies of this kingdom will, againſt all expectation, prove with child, to the great joy of their huſbands.

On the 23d a famous buffoon of the play-houſe will die a ridiculous death, ſuitable to his vocation.

June. This month will be diſtinguiſhed at home, by the utter diſperſing of thoſe ridiculous deluded enthuſiaſts, commonly called the prophets; occaſioned chiefly by ſeeing the time come, when many of their prophecies ſhould be fulfilled, and then finding themſelves deceived by contrary events. It is indeed to be admired, how any deceiver can be ſo weak to foretel things near at hand, when a very few months muſt of neceſſity diſcover the impoſture to all the world; in this point leſs prudent than common almanack-makers, who are ſo wiſe to wander in generals, and talk dubiouſly, and leave to the reader the buſineſs of interpreting.

On the 1ſt of this month, a French General will be killed by a random ſhot of a cannon-ball.

On the 6th a fire will break out in the ſuburbs of Paris, which will deſtroy above a thouſand houſes; and ſeems to be the foreboding of what will happen, to the ſurprize of all Europe, about the end of the following month.

On the 10th a great battle will be fought, which will begin at four of the clock in the afternoon, and laſt till nine at night with great obſtinacy, but no very deciſive event. I ſhall not name the place, for the reaſons aforeſaid; but the commanders on each left wing will be killed.—— I ſee bonefires, and hear the noiſe of guns for a victory.

On the 14th there will be a falſe report of the French King's death.

On

On the 20th Cardinal Portocarero will die of a dyſentery, with great ſuſpicion of poiſon; but the report of his intention to revolt to King Charles will prove falſe.

July. The 6th of this month a *certain general* will, by a glorious action, recover the reputation he loſt by former misfortunes.

On the 12th a *great commander* will die a priſoner in the hands of his enemies.

On the 14th a ſhameful diſcovery will be made of a French Jeſuit, giving poiſon to a great foreign general; and when he is put to the torture, he will make wonderful diſcoveries.

In ſhort this will prove a month of great action, if I might have liberty to relate the particulars.

At home, the death of an old famous ſenator will happen on the 15th at his country-houſe, worn with age and diſeaſes.

But that which will make this month memorable to all poſterity, is the death of the French King, Lewis the fourteenth, after a week's ſickneſs at Marli, which will happen on the 29th, about ſix o'clock in the evening. It ſeems to be an effect of the gout in his ſtomach, followed by a flux. And in three days after Monſieur Chamillard will follow his maſter, dying ſuddenly of an apoplexy.

In this month likewiſe an ambaſſador will die in London; but I cannot aſſign the day.

August. The affairs of France will ſeem to ſuffer no change for a while under the Duke of Burgundy's adminiſtration; but the genius that animated the whole machine being gone, will be the cauſe of mighty turns and revolutions in the following year. The new King makes yet little change either in the army or the miniſtry; but the libels againſt his grand-father, that fly about his very court, give him uneaſineſs.

I ſee an expreſs in mighty haſte, with joy and wonder in his looks, arriving by break of day on the 26th of this month, having travelled in three days a prodigious journey by land and ſea. In the evening I hear bells and guns, and ſee the blazing of a thouſand bonefires.

A young admiral of noble birth does likewiſe this month gain immortal honour by a great atchievement.

The affairs of Poland are this month entirely ſettled

Auguſtus

Auguſtus reſigns his pretenſions, which he had again taken up for ſome time: Staniſlaus is peaceably poſſeſſed of the throne; and the King of Sweden declares for the Emperor.

I cannot omit one particular accident here at home; that near the end of this month much miſchief will be done at Bartholomew fair by the fall of a booth.

SEPTEMBER. This month begins with a very ſurpriſing fit of froſty weather, which will laſt near twelve days.

THE Pope having long languiſhed laſt month, the ſwellings in his legs breaking, and the fleſh mortifying, will die on the 11th inſtant; and in three weeks time, after a mighty conteſt, be ſucceeded by a Cardinal of the *imperial* faction, but a native of Tuſcany, who is now about ſixty one years old.

THE French army acts now wholly on the defenſive, ſtrongly fortified in their trenches; and the young French King ſends overtures for a treaty of peace by the Duke of Mantua; which, becauſe it is a matter of ſtate, that concerns us here at home, I ſhall ſpeak no farther of.

I ſhall add but one prediction more, and that in myſtical terms, which ſhall be included in a verſe out of Virgil,

Alter erit jam Tethys, et altera quæ vehat Argo
Delectos heroas.

UPON the 25th day of this month, the fulfilling of this prediction will be manifeſt to every body.

THIS is the fartheſt I have proceeded in my calculations for the preſent year. I do not pretend, that theſe are all the great events which will happen in this period, but that thoſe I have ſet down will infallibly come to paſs. It will perhaps ſtill be objected, why I have not ſpoke more particularly of affairs at home, or of the ſucceſs of our armies abroad, which I might, and could very largely have done; but thoſe in power have wiſely diſcouraged men from meddling in public concerns, and I was reſolved by no means to give the leaſt offence. This I will venture to ſay, that it will be a glorious campaign for the allies, wherein the Engliſh forces both by ſea and land, will have their full ſhare of honour: that her Majeſty Queen Anne will continue in health and proſperity: and that no ill accident will arrive to any in the chief miniſtry.

As

On the 20th Cardinal Portocarero will die of a dyſentery, with great ſuſpicion of poiſon; but the report of his intention to revolt to King Charles will prove falſe.

July. The 6th of this month a *certain general* will, by a glorious action, recover the reputation he loſt by former misfortunes.

On the 12th a *great commander* will die a priſoner in the hands of his enemies.

On the 14th a ſhameful diſcovery will be made of a French Jeſuit, giving poiſon to a great foreign general; and when he is put to the torture, he will make wonderful diſcoveries.

In ſhort this will prove a month of great action, if I might have liberty to relate the particulars.

At home, the death of an old famous ſenator will happen on the 15th at his country-houſe, worn with age and diſeaſes.

But that which will make this month memorable to all poſterity, is the death of the French King, Lewis the fourteenth, after a week's ſickneſs at Marli, which will happen on the 29th, about ſix o'clock in the evening. It ſeems to be an effect of the gout in his ſtomach, followed by a flux. And in three days after Monſieur Chamillard will follow his maſter, dying ſuddenly of an apoplexy.

In this month likewiſe an ambaſſador will die in London; but I cannot aſſign the day.

August. The affairs of France will ſeem to ſuffer no change for a while under the Duke of Burgundy's adminiſtration; but the genius that animated the whole machine being gone, will be the cauſe of mighty turns and revolutions in the following year. The new King makes yet little change either in the army or the miniſtry; but the libels againſt his grand-father, that fly about his very court, give him uneaſineſs.

I ſee an expreſs in mighty haſte, with joy and wonder in his looks, arriving by break of day on the 26th of this month, having travelled in three days a prodigious journey by land and ſea. In the evening I hear bells and guns, and ſee the blazing of a thouſand bonefires.

A young admiral of noble birth does likewiſe this month gain immortal honour by a great atchievement.

The affairs of Poland are this month entirely ſettled

Auguſtus

Auguſtus reſigns his pretenſions, which he had again taken up for ſome time: Staniſlaus is peaceably poſſeſſed of the throne; and the King of Sweden declares for the Emperor.

I cannot omit one particular accident here at home; that near the end of this month much miſchief will be done at Bartholomew fair by the fall of a booth.

SEPTEMBER. This month begins with a very ſurpriſing fit of froſty weather, which will laſt near twelve days.

THE Pope having long languiſhed laſt month, the ſwellings in his legs breaking, and the fleſh mortifying, will die on the 11th inſtant; and in three weeks time, after a mighty conteſt, be ſucceeded by a Cardinal of the *imperial* faction, but a native of Tuſcany, who is now about ſixty one years old.

THE French army acts now wholly on the defenſive, ſtrongly fortified in their trenches; and the young French King ſends overtures for a treaty of peace by the Duke of Mantua; which, becauſe it is a matter of ſtate, that concerns us here at home, I ſhall ſpeak no farther of.

I ſhall add but one prediction more, and that in myſtical terms, which ſhall be included in a verſe out of Virgil,

Alter erit jam Tethys, et altera quæ vehat Argo
Delectos heroas.

UPON the 25th day of this month, the fulfilling of this prediction will be manifeſt to every body.

THIS is the fartheſt I have proceeded in my calculations for the preſent year. I do not pretend, that theſe are all the great events which will happen in this period, but that thoſe I have ſet down will infallibly come to paſs. It will perhaps ſtill be objected, why I have not ſpoke more particularly of affairs at home, or of the ſucceſs of our armies abroad, which I might, and could very largely have done; but thoſe in power have wiſely diſcouraged men from meddling in public concerns, and I was reſolved by no means to give the leaſt offence. This I will venture to ſay, that it will be a glorious campaign for the allies, wherein the Engliſh forces both by ſea and land, will have their full ſhare of honour: that her Majeſty Queen Anne will continue in health and proſperity: and that no ill accident will arrive to any in the chief miniſtry.

On the 20th Cardinal Portocarero will die of a dyſentery, with great ſuſpicion of poiſon; but the report of his intention to revolt to King Charles will prove falſe.

July. The 6th of this month a *certain general* will, by a glorious action, recover the reputation he loſt by former misfortunes.

On the 12th a *great commander* will die a priſoner in the hands of his enemies.

On the 14th a ſhameful diſcovery will be made of a French Jeſuit, giving poiſon to a great foreign general; and when he is put to the torture, he will make wonderful diſcoveries.

In ſhort this will prove a month of great action, if I might have liberty to relate the particulars.

At home, the death of an old famous ſenator will happen on the 15th at his country-houſe, worn with age and diſeaſes.

But that which will make this month memorable to all poſterity, is the death of the French King, Lewis the fourteenth, after a week's ſickneſs at Marli, which will happen on the 29th, about ſix o'clock in the evening. It ſeems to be an effect of the gout in his ſtomach, followed by a flux. And in three days after Monſieur Chamillard will follow his maſter, dying ſuddenly of an apoplexy.

In this month likewiſe an ambaſſador will die in London; but I cannot aſſign the day.

August. The affairs of France will ſeem to ſuffer no change for a while under the Duke of Burgundy's adminiſtration; but the genius that animated the whole machine being gone, will be the cauſe of mighty turns and revolutions in the following year. The new King makes yet little change either in the army or the miniſtry; but the libels againſt his grand-father, that fly about his very court, give him uneaſineſs.

I ſee an expreſs in mighty haſte, with joy and wonder in his looks, arriving by break of day on the 26th of this month, having travelled in three days a prodigious journey by land and ſea. In the evening I hear bells and guns, and ſee the blazing of a thouſand bonefires.

A young admiral of noble birth does likewiſe this month gain immortal honour by a great atchievement.

The affairs of Poland are this month entirely ſettled:

Auguſtus

Auguſtus reſigns his pretenſions, which he had again taken up for ſome time: Staniſlaus is peaceably poſſeſſed of the throne; and the King of Sweden declares for the Emperor.

I cannot omit one particular accident here at home; that near the end of this month much miſchief will be done at Bartholomew fair by the fall of a booth.

SEPTEMBER. This month begins with a very ſurpriſing fit of froſty weather, which will laſt near twelve days.

THE Pope having long languiſhed laſt month, the ſwellings in his legs breaking, and the fleſh mortifying, will die on the 11th inſtant; and in three weeks time, after a mighty conteſt, be ſucceeded by a Cardinal of the *imperial* faction, but a native of Tuſcany, who is now about ſixty one years old.

THE French army acts now wholly on the defenſive, ſtrongly fortified in their trenches; and the young French King ſends overtures for a treaty of peace by the Duke of Mantua; which, becauſe it is a matter of ſtate, that concerns us here at home, I ſhall ſpeak no farther of.

I ſhall add but one prediction more, and that in myſtical terms, which ſhall be included in a verſe out of Virgil,

Alter erit jam Tethys, et altera quæ vehat Argo
Delectos heroas.

UPON the 25th day of this month, the fulfilling of this prediction will be manifeſt to every body.

THIS is the furtheſt I have proceeded in my calculations for the preſent year. I do not pretend, that theſe are all the great events which will happen in this period, but that thoſe I have ſet down will infallibly come to paſs. It will perhaps ſtill be objected, why I have not ſpoke more particularly of affairs at home, or of the ſucceſs of our armies abroad, which I might, and could very largely have done; but thoſe in power have wiſely diſcouraged men from meddling in public concerns, and I was reſolved by no means to give the leaſt offence. This I will venture to ſay, that it will be a glorious campaign for the allies, wherein the Engliſh forces both by ſea and land, will have their full ſhare of honour: that her Majeſty Queen Anne will continue in health and proſperity: and that no ill accident will arrive to any in the chief miniſtry.

In

As to the particular events I have mentioned, the readers may judge by the fulfilling of them, whether I am on the level with common aſtrologers; who, with an old paultry cant, and a few pothooks for planets, to amuſe the vulgar, have, in my opinion, too long been ſuffered to abuſe the world; but an honeſt phyſician ought not to be deſpiſed, becauſe there are ſuch things as mountebanks. I hope I have ſome ſhare of reputation, which I would not willingly forfeit for a frolic or humour: and I believe no gentleman, who reads this paper, will look upon it to be of the ſame caſt or mould with the common ſcribbles that are every day hawked about. My fortune hath placed me above the little regard of writing for a few pence, which I neither value or want: therefore let not wiſe men too haſtily condemn this eſſay, intended for a good deſign, to cultivate and improve an ancient art, long in diſgrace by having fallen into mean unſkilful hands. A little time will determine whether I have deceived others or myſelf: and I think it is no very unreaſonable requeſt, that men would pleaſe to ſuſpend their judgments till then. I was once of the opinion with thoſe who deſpiſe all predictions from the ſtars, till in the year 1686, a man of quality ſhewed me, written in his Album *, that the moſt learned aſtronomer, Captain Halley, aſſured him, he would never believe any thing of the ſtars influence, if there were not a great revolution in England in the year 1688. Since that time I began to have other thoughts, and after eighteen years diligent ſtudy and application, I think I have no reaſon to repent of my pains. I ſhall detain the reader no longer, than to let him know, that the account I deſign to give of next year's events, ſhall take in the principal affairs that happen in Europe; and if I be denied the liberty of offering it to my own country, I ſhall appeal to the learned world, by publiſhing it in Latin, and giving order to have it printed in Holland.

THE

* Album, is the name of a paper book, in which it was uſual for a man's friends to write down a ſentence with their names to keep them in his remembrance. It is ſtill common in ſome of the foreign univerſities. *Hawkeſ.*

THE ACCOMPLISHMENT OF THE First of Mr BICKERSTAFF'S PREDICTIONS;

Being an Account of the DEATH of Mr PARTRIDGE, the ALMANACK-MAKER, upon the 29th inſtant †.

In a Letter to a Perſon of Honour.

[Written in the year 1708.]

MY LORD,

IN obedience to your Lordſhip's commands, as well as to ſatisfy my own curioſity, I have for ſome days paſt inquired conſtantly after Partridge the almanack-maker, of whom it was foretold in Mr Bickerſtaff's predictions, publiſhed about a month ago, that he ſhould die the 29th inſtant about eleven at night of a raging fever. I had ſome ſort of knowledge of him when I was employed in the revenue, becauſe he uſed every year to preſent me with his almanack, as he did other gentlemen, upon the ſcore of ſome little gratuity we gave him. I ſaw him accidentally once or twice about ten days before he died, and obſerved he began very much to droop and languiſh, tho' I hear his friends did not ſeem to apprehend him in any danger. About two or three days ago he grew ill, was confined firſt to his chamber, and in a few hours after to his bed, where Dr. Caſe and Mrs. Kirleus ‡ were ſent for to viſit and to preſcribe to him. Upon this intelligence I ſent thrice every day one ſervant or other to inquire after his health; and yeſterday, about four in the afternoon, word was brought me, that he was paſt hopes: upon which I prevailed with myſelf to go and ſee

† See an elegy on the ſuppoſed death of Partridge, [illegible] p. 84. and the epitaph, p. 87.

‡ Two famous quacks at that time.

him, partly out of commiſeration, and I confeſs, partly out of curioſity. He knew me very well, ſeemed ſurprized at my condeſcenſion, and made me compliments upon it, as well as he could in the condition he was. The people about him ſaid, he had been for ſome time delirious; but when I ſaw him, he had his underſtanding as well as ever I knew, and ſpoke ſtrong and hearty, without any ſeeming uneaſineſs or conſtraint. After I had told him how ſorry I was to ſee him in thoſe melancholy circumſtances, and ſaid ſome other civilities, ſuitable to the occaſion, I deſired him to tell me freely and ingenuouſly, whether the predictions Mr Bickerſtaff had publiſhed relating to his death, had not too much affected and worked on his imagination. He confeſſed he had often had it in his head, but never with much apprehenſion, till about a fortnight before; ſince which time it had the perpetual poſſeſſion of his mind and thoughts, and he did verily believe was the true natural cauſe of his preſent diſtemper: for, ſaid he, I am thoroughly perſuaded, and I think I have very good reaſons, that Mr Bickerſtaff ſpoke altogether by gueſs, and knew no more what will happen this year, than I did myſelf. I told him his diſcourſe ſurprized me; and I would be glad, he were in a ſtate of health to be able to tell me what reaſon he had to be convinced of Mr Bickerſtaff's ignorance. He replied, I am a poor ignorant fellow, bred to a mean trade, yet I have ſenſe enough to know, that all pretences of foretelling by aſtrology are deceits, for this manifeſt reaſon, becauſe the wiſe and the learned, who can only judge whether there be any truth in this ſcience, do all unanimouſly agree to laugh at and deſpiſe it, and none but the poor ignorant vulgar give it any credit, and that only upon the word of ſuch ſilly wretches as I and my fellows, who can hardly write or read. I then aſked him, why he had not calculated his own nativity, to ſee whether it agreed with Bickerſtaff's prediction? at which he ſhook his head, and ſaid, oh! Sir, this is no time for jeſting, but for repenting thoſe fooleries, as I do now from the very bottom of my heart. By what I can gather from you, ſaid I, the obſervations and predictions you printed with your almanacks, were *mere* impoſitions on the people. He replied, if it were otherwiſe,

otherwiſe, I ſhould have the leſs to anſwer for. We have a common form for all thoſe things: as to foretelling the weather, we never meddle with that, but leave it to the printer, who takes it out of any old almanack as he thinks fit: the reſt was my own invention to make my almanack ſell, having a wife to maintain, and no other way to get my bread; for mending old ſhoes is a poor livelihood; and (added he, ſighing) I wiſh I may not have done more miſchief by my phyſic than my aſtrology: tho' I had ſome good receipts from my grandmother, and my own compoſitions were ſuch, as I thought could at leaſt do no hurt.

I had ſome other diſcourſe with him, which now I cannot call to mind; and I fear I have already tired your Lordſhip. I ſhall only add one circumſtance, that on his death-bed he declared himſelf a nonconformiſt, and had a fanatic preacher to be his ſpiritual guide. After half an hour's converſation I took my leave, being almoſt ſtifled by the cloſeneſs of the room. I imagined he could not hold out long, and therefore withdrew to a little coffee-houſe hard by, leaving a ſervant at the houſe with orders to come immediately, and tell me, as near as he could, the minute when Partridge ſhould expire, which was not above two hours after; when looking upon my watch, I found it to be above five minutes after ſeven; by which it is clear that Mr Bickerſtaff was miſtaken almoſt four hours in his calculation. In the other circumſtances he was exact enough. But whether he hath not been the cauſe of this poor man's death, as well as the predictor, may be very reaſonably diſputed. However, it muſt be confeſſed, the matter is odd enough, whether we ſhould endeavour to account for it by chance, or the effect of imagination: for my own part, tho' I believe no man hath leſs faith in theſe matters, yet I ſhall wait with ſome impatience, and not without ſome expectation, the fulfilling of Mr Bickerſtaff's ſecond prediction, that the Cardinal de Noailles is to die upon the fourth of April; and if that ſhould be verified as exactly as this of poor Partridge, I muſt own I ſhould be wholly ſurprized, and at a loſs, and ſhould infallibly expect the accompliſhment of all the reſt.

Squire BICKERSTAFF detected;

OR

The ASTROLOGICAL IMPOSTOR convicted†.

By JOHN PARTRIDGE, Student in Phyſic and Aſtrology.

IT is hard, my dear countrymen of theſe united nations, it is very hard, that a Briton born, a proteſtant aſtrologer, a man of revolution principles, an aſſerter of the liberty and property of the people, ſhould cry out in vain for juſtice againſt a Frenchman, a papiſt, and an illiterate pretender to ſcience, that would blaſt my reputation, moſt inhumanly bury me alive, and defraud my native country of thoſe ſervices, which, in my double capacity, I daily offer the public.

WHAT great provocations I have received, let the impartial reader judge, and how unwillingly, even in my own defence, I now enter the liſts againſt falſehood, ignorance and envy: but I am exaſperated, at length, to drag out this Cacus ‡ from the den of obſcurity where he lurks, detect him by the light of thoſe ſtars he has ſo impudently traduced, and ſhew there is not a monſter in the ſkies ſo pernicious and malevolent to mankind, as an ignorant pretender to phyſic and aſtrology. I ſhall not directly fall on the many groſs errors, nor expoſe the notorious abſurdities of this proſtituted libeller, till I have

† This piece being on the ſame ſubject, and very rare, we have thought fit to add it, tho' not written by the ſame hand.

——*N. B.* In the Dublin edition it is ſaid to be written by the late Nicholas Rowe Eſq; which is a miſtake: for the Reverend Dr. Yalden preacher of Bridewell, Mr Partridge's near neighbour, drew it up for him. *Hawkeſ.*

‡ A thief ſeized in a cavern by Hercules.

have let the learned world fairly into the controverſy depending, and then leave the unprejudiced to judge of the merits and juſtice of my cauſe.

It was towards the concluſion of the year 1707, when an impudent pamphlet crept into the world, intitled, *predictions*, &c. *by* Iſaac Bickerſtaff, *Eſq*;——amongſt the many arrogant aſſertions laid down by that lying ſpirit of divination, he was pleaſed to pitch on the Cardinal de Noailles and myſelf, among many other eminent and illuſtrious perſons, that were to die within the compaſs of the enſuing year; and peremptorily fixes the month, day, and hour of our deaths: this, I think, is ſporting with great men, and public ſpirits, to the ſcandal of religion, and reproach of power; and if ſovereign princes and aſtrologers muſt make diverſion for the vulgar—— why then farewel, ſay I, to all governments, eccleſiaſtical and civil. But, I thank my better ſtars, I am alive to confront this falſe and audacious predictor, and to make him rue the hour he ever affronted a man of ſcience and reſentment. The Cardinal may take what meaſures he pleaſes with him; as his excellency is a foreigner, and a Papiſt, he has no reaſon to rely on me for his juſtification; I ſhall only aſſure the world he is alive——but as he was bred to letters, and is maſter of a pen, let him uſe it in his own defence In the mean time, I ſhall preſent the public with a faithful narrative of the ungenerous treatment and hard uſage I have received from the virulent papers and malicious practices of this pretended aſtrologer.

A true and impartial account of the proceedings of ISAAC BICKERSTAFF, Eſq; againſt me.

THE 28th of March, *anno Dom.* 1708, being the night this ſham-prophet had ſo impudently fixed for my laſt, which made little impreſſion on myſelf; but I cannot anſwer for my whole family; for my wife, with a concern more than uſual, prevailed on me to take ſomewhat to ſweat for a cold; and, between the hours of eight and nine, to go to bed: the maid, as ſhe was warming my bed, with a curioſity natural to young

wenches, runs to the window, and asks of one passing the street, who the bell tolled for? Dr Partridge, says he, the famous almanack-maker, who died suddenly this evening: the poor girl provoked told him, he lyed like a rascal; the other very sedately replied, the sexton had so informed him, and, if false, he was to blame for imposing upon a stranger. She asked a second, and a third, as they passed, and every one was in the same tone. Now, I do not say these are accomplices to a certain astrological 'squire, and that one Bickerstaff might be sauntring thereabouts; because I will assert nothing here, but what I dare attest, for plain matter of fact. My wife at this fell into a violent disorder; and I must own I was a little discomposed at the oddness of the accident. In the mean time one knocks at my door; Betty runs down, and opening, finds a sober grave person, who modestly inquires, if this was Dr Partridge's? she taking him for some cautious city patient, that came at that time for privacy, shews him into the dining-room. As soon as I could compose myself, I went to him, and was surprized to find my gentleman mounted on a table with a two foot rule in his hand, measuring my walls, and taking the dimensions of the room. Pray, Sir, says I, not to interrupt you, have you any business with me? only, Sir, replies he, order the girl to bring me a better light, for this is but a very dim one. Sir, says I, my name is Partridge: oh! the doctor's brother, belike, cries he; the stair case, I believe, and these two apartments hung in close mourning, will be sufficient, and only a strip of bays round the other rooms. The doctor must needs die rich, he had great dealings in his way for many years; if he had no family-coat, you had as good use the escutcheons of the company, they are as showish, and will look as magnificent as if he was descended from the blood royal. With that I assumed a greater air of authority, and demanded who employed him, or how he came there? Why, I was sent, Sir, by the company of undertakers, says he, and they were employed by the honest gentleman, who is executor to the good doctor departed; and our rascally porter, I believe, is fallen fast asleep with the black cloth and sconces, or he had been here, and we might have been tacking up by this time.

Sir,

Sir, says I, pray be advised by a friend, and make the best of your speed out of my doors, for I hear my wife's voice, (which by the by is pretty distinguishable) and in that corner of the room stands a good cudgel, which somebody has felt before now; if that light in her hands, and she know the business you come about, without consulting the stars, I can assure you it will be employed very much to the detriment of your person. Sir, cries he, bowing with great civility, I perceive extreme grief, for the loss of the doctor disorders you a little at present, but early in the morning I will wait on you with all necessary materials. Now I mention no Mr Bickerstaff; nor do I say, that a certain star-gazing 'squire has been playing my executor before his time; but I leave the world to judge, and he that puts things and things fairly together, will not be much wide of the mark.

Well, once more I got my doors closed, and prepared for bed, in hopes of a little repose after so many ruffling adventures; just as I was putting out my light in order to it, another bounces as hard as he can knock; I open the window, and ask who is there, and what he wants; I am Ned the Sexton, replies he, and come to know whether the doctor left any orders for a funeral sermon, and where he is to be laid, and whether his grave is to be plain or bricked? Why, sirrah, says I, you know me well enough; you know I am not dead, and how dare you affront me after this manner? Alack-a-day, Sir, replies the fellow, why it is in print, and the whole town knows you are dead; why, there is Mr White, the joiner is but fitting screws to your coffin, he will be here with it in an instant: he was afraid you would have wanted it before this time. Sirrah, sirrah, says I, you shall know to-morrow to your cost, that I am alive, and alive like to be. Why, it is strange, Sir, says he, you should make such a secret of your death to us that are your neighbours; it looks as if you had a design to defraud the church of its dues; and let me tell you, for one that has lived so long by the heavens, that is unhandsomely done. Hist, hist, says another rogue that stood by him, away, doctor, into your flannel gear as fast as you can, for here is a whole pack of dismals coming to you with their black equipage, and how indecent will it look for you to

stand

ſtand frightening folks at your window, when you ſhould have been in your coffin this three hours? in ſhort, what with undertakers, imbalmers, joiners, ſextons, and your damned elegy-hawkers upon a late practitioner in phyſic and aſtrology, I got not one wink of ſleep that night, nor ſcarce a moment's reſt ever ſince. Now I doubt not, but this villainous 'ſquire has the impudence to aſſert, that theſe are entirely ſtrangers to him; he, good man, knows nothing of the matter, and honeſt Iſaac Bickerſtaff, I warrant you, is more a man of honour, than to be an accomplice with a pack of raſcals, that walk the ſtreets on nights, and diſturb good people in their beds; but he is out, if he thinks the whole world is blind; for there is one John Partridge can ſmell a knave as far as Grubſtreet,—altho' he lies in the moſt exalted garret, and writes himſelf 'ſquire:—but I will keep my temper, and proceed in the narration.

I could not ſtir out of doors for the ſpace of three months after this, but preſently one comes up to me in the ſtreet; Mr Partridge, that coffin you was laſt buried in, I have not been yet paid for: doctor, cries another dog, how do you think people can live by making of graves for nothing? next time you die, you may even toll out the bell yourſelf for Ned. A third rogue tips me by the elbow, and wonders, how I have the conſcience to ſneak abroad without paying my funeral expences. Lord, ſays one, I durſt have ſwore that was honeſt Dr Partridge, my old friend; but, poor man, he is gone. I beg your pardon, ſays another, you look ſo like my old acquaintance, that I uſed to conſult on ſome private occaſions; but, alack, he is gone the way of all fleſh.—— Look, look, look, cries a third, after a competent ſpace of ſtaring at me, would not one think our neighbour the almanack-maker was crept out of his grave to take the other peep at the ſtars in this world, and ſhew how much he is improved in fortune-telling by having taken a journey to the other?

NAY, the very reader of our pariſh, a good, ſober, diſcreet perſon, has ſent two or three times for me to come and be buried decently, or ſend him ſufficient reaſons to the contrary, or, if I have been interred in any other pariſh,

parish, to produce my certificate, as the act* requires. My poor wife is almost run distracted with being called widow Partridge, when she knows it is false; and once a term she is cited into the court to take out letters of administration. But the greatest grievance is, a paultry quack, that takes up my calling just under my nose, and in his printed directions with *N. B.*—says, he lives in the house of the late ingenious Mr John Partridge, an eminent practitioner in leather, physic, and astrology.

But to shew how far the wicked spirit of envy, malice and resentment can hurry some men, my nameless old persecutor had provided me a monument at the stone-cutter's, and would have erected it in the parish-church; and this piece of notorious and expensive villany had actually succeeded, if I had not used my utmost interest with the vestry, where it was carried at last but by two voices, that I am alive. That stratagem failing, out comes a long sable elegy, bedecked with hour-glasses, mattocks, sculls, spades, and skeletons, with an epitaph as confidently written to abuse me, and my profession, as if I had been under ground these twenty years.

And, after such barbarous treatment as this, can the world blame me, when I ask, what is become of the freedom of an Englishman? and where is the liberty and property, that my *old glorious friend* came over to assert? we have drove Popery out of the nation, and sent slavery to foreign climes. The arts only remain in bondage, when a man of science and character shall be openly insulted in the midst of the many useful services he is daily paying the public. Was it ever heard, even in Turkey or Algiers, that a state-astrologer was bantered out of his life by an ignorant impostor, or bawled out of the world by a pack of villanous, deep-mouthed hawkers? tho' I print almanacks, and publish advertisements; tho' I produce certificates under the ministers and churchwardens hands I am alive, and attest the same on oath at quarter sessions, out comes a full and true relation of

* The statute of 30 Car. II. for burying in woollen requires, that oath shall be made of the compliance with this act, and a certificate thereof lodged with the minister of the parish within eight days after interment. *Hawkes.*

of the death and interment of John Partridge; truth is bore down, atteſtations neglected, the teſtimony of ſober perſons deſpiſed, and a man is looked upon by his neighbours as if he had been ſeven years dead, and is buried alive in the midſt of his friends and acquaintance.

Now can any man of common ſenſe think it conſiſtent with the honour of my profeſſion, and not much beneath the dignity of a philoſopher, to ſtand bawling before his own door?—alive! alive ho! the famous Dr Partridge! no counterfeit, but alive!—as if I had the twelve celeſtial monſters of the *zodiac* to ſhew within, or was forced for a livelihood to turn retailer to May and Bartholomew fairs. Therefore, if her Majeſty would but graciouſly be pleaſed to think a hardſhip of this nature worthy her royal conſideration, and the next parliament, in their great wiſdom, caſt but an eye towards the deplorable caſe of their old *philomath*, that annually beſtows his poetical good wiſhes on them, I am ſure there is one Iſaac Bickerſtaff, Eſq; would ſoon be truſſed up for his bloody predictions, and putting good ſubjects in terror of their lives: and that henceforward to murder a man by way of prophecy, and bury him in a printed letter, either to a Lord or Commoner, ſhall as legally intitle him to the preſent poſſeſſion of Tyburn, as if he robbed on the highway, or cut your throat in bed.

I ſhall demonſtrate to the judicious, that France and Rome are at the bottom of this horrid conſpiracy againſt me; and that Culprit aforeſaid is a Popiſh emiſſary, has paid his viſits to St Germains, and is now in the meaſures of Lewis XIV. That in attempting my reputation, there is a general maſſacre of learning deſigned in theſe realms; and thro' my ſides there is a wound given to all the Proteſtant almanack-makers in the univerſe.

Vivat Regina.

A VINDICATION of ISAAC BICKERSTAFF, Esq; against what is objected to him by Mr PARTRIDE in his almanack for the present year 1709.

By the said ISAAC BICKERSTAFF, Esq;

Written in the year 1709.

MR Partridge hath been lately pleased to treat me after a very rough manner, *in that which is called*, his almanack for the present year: such usage is very undecent from *one gentleman to another*, and doth not at all contribute to the discovery of truth, which ought to be the great end in all disputes of the *learned*. To call a man *fool* and *villain*, and *impudent fellow*, only for differing from him in a point merely speculative, is, in my humble opinion, a very improper style for a person of *his education*. I appeal to the *learned world*, whether in my last year's predictions I gave him the least provocation for such unworthy treatment. Philosophers have differed in all ages; but the discreetest among them have always differed as became philosophers. Scurrility and passion, in a controversy among *scholars*, is just so much of nothing to the purpose, and, at best, a tacit confession of a weak cause: my concern is not so much for my own reputation, as that of the *republic of letters*, which Mr Partridge hath endeavoured to wound thro' my sides. If men of public spirit must be superciliously treated for their ingenious attempts, how will true useful knowledge be ever advanced? I wish Mr Partridge knew the thoughts, which *foreign universities* have conceived of his ungenerous proceedings with me; but I am too tender of his reputation to publish them to the world. That spirit of envy and pride, which blasts so many rising genius's in our nation, is yet unknown among *professors* abroad: the necessity of justifying myself will excuse my vanity, when I tell the reader, that I have near a hundred

hundred *honorary* letters from ſeveral parts of Europe (ſome as far as Muſcovy) in praiſe of my performance; beſides ſeveral others, which, as I have been credibly informed, were opened in the poſt-office, and never ſent me. It is true the *inquiſition* in Portugal was * pleaſed to burn my predictions, and condemn the author and readers of them; but I hope at the ſame time, it will be conſidered, in how deplorable a ſtate *learning* lies at preſent in that kingdom; and with the profoundeſt veneration for *crowned heads*, I will preſume to add, that it a little concerned his Majeſty of Portugal to interpoſe his authority in behalf of a *ſcholar* and a *gentleman*, the ſubject of a nation, with which he is now in ſo ſtrict an alliance. But the other kingdoms and ſtates of Europe had treated me with more candor and generoſity. If I had leave to print the Latin letters tranſmitted to me from foreign parts, they would fill a volume, and be a full defence againſt all that Mr Partridge, or his accomplices of the Portugal *inquiſition*, will be ever able to object; who, by the way, are the only enemies my predictions have ever met with at home or abroad. But I hope, I know better what is due to the honour of a *learned correſpondence* in ſo tender a point. Yet ſome of thoſe illuſtrious perſons will perhaps excuſe me for tranſcribing a paſſage or two in my vindication†. The moſt learned Monſieur Leibnits thus addreſſes to me his third letter: *illuſtriſſimo Bickerſtaffio aſtrologiæ inſtauratori*, &c. Monſieur *le Clerc*, quoting my predictions in a treatiſe he publiſhed laſt year, is pleaſed to ſay, *ita ſuperrime Bickerſtaffius magnum illud Angliæ ſidus.* Another great profeſſor writing of me, has theſe words: *Bickerſtaffius, nobilis Anglus, aſtrologorum hujuſce ſæculi facile princeps.* Signior *Magliabecchi*, the *great Duke*'s famous library-keeper, ſpends almoſt his whole letter in compliments and praiſes. It is true, the renowned *profeſſor* of aſtronomy at Utrecht ſeems to differ from me

* This is fact, as the author was aſſured by Sir Paul Methuen, then ambaſſador to that crown.

† The quotations here inſerted, are [in imitation of Dr Bentley, in ſome part of the famous controverſy between him and Mr Boyle, afterwards Earl of Orrery.

me in one article; but it is after the modeſt manner, that becomes a philoſopher; as *pace tanti viri dixerim:* and *page* 55. he ſeems to lay the error upon the printer (as indeed it ought) and ſays, *vel forſan error typographi, cum alioquin Bickerſtaffius vir doctiſſimus*, &c.

If Mr Partridge had followed theſe examples in the controverſy between us, he might have ſpared me the trouble of juſtifying myſelf in ſo public a manner. I believe no man is readier to own his errors than I, or more thankful to thoſe, who will pleaſe to inform him of them. But it ſeems this gentleman, inſtead of encouraging the progreſs of his own art, is pleaſed to look upon all attempts of that kind as an invaſion of his province. He hath been indeed ſo wiſe to make no objection againſt the truth of my predictions, except in one ſingle point relating to himſelf: and to demonſtrate how much men are blinded by their own partiality, I do ſolemnly aſſure the reader, that he is the only perſon from whom I ever heard that objection offered; which conſideration alone, I think, will take off all its weight.

With my utmoſt endavours I have not been able to trace above two objections ever made againſt the truth of my laſt year's prophecies: the firſt was of a Frenchman, who was pleaſed to publiſh to the world, that *the Cardinal* de Noailles *was ſtill alive, notwithſtanding the pretended prophecy of monſieur* Biquerſtaffe: but how far a Frenchman, a *papiſt*, and an *enemy*, is to be believed in his own cauſe againſt an Engliſh *proteſtant*, who is *true to the government*, I ſhall leave to the candid and impartial reader.

The other objection is the unhappy occaſion of this diſcourſe, and relates to an article in my predictions, which foretold the death of Mr Partridge to happen on March 29. 1708. This he is pleaſed to contradict abſolutely in the almanack he hath publiſhed for the preſent year, and in that ungentlemanly manner (pardon the expreſſion) as I have above related. In that work he very roundly aſſerts, that he *is not only now alive, but was likewiſe alive upon that very* 29th *of* March, *when I had foretold he ſhould die.* This is the ſubject of the preſent controverſy between us; which I deſign to handle with all brevity, perſpicuity, and calmneſs; in this diſpute, I

am ſenſible the eyes not only of England, but of all Europe, will be upon us; and the *learned* in every country will, I doubt not, take part on that ſide, where they find moſt appearance of reaſon and truth.

WITHOUT entering into criticiſms of *chronology* about the hour of his death, I ſhall only prove that Mr Partridge is not alive. And my firſt argument is thus: above a thouſand gentlemen having bought his almanacks for this year, merely to find what he ſaid againſt me; at every line they read, they would lift up their eyes, and cry out, betwixt rage and laughter, *they were ſure no man alive ever writ ſuch damned ſtuff as this.* Neither did I ever hear that opinion diſputed: ſo that Mr Partridge lies under a *dilemma*, either of diſowning his almanack, or allowing himſelf to be *no man alive.* But now if an *uninformed* carcaſe walks ſtill about, and is pleaſed to call itſelf Partridge, Mr Bickerſtaff does not think himſelf any way anſwerable for that. Neither had the ſaid carcaſe any right to beat the poor boy, who happened to paſs by it in the ſtreet, crying, *A full and true account of* Dr Partridge's *death*, &c.

SECONDLY, Mr Partridge pretends to tell fortunes, and recover ſtolen goods; which all the pariſh ſays, he muſt do by converſing with the devil and other evil ſpirits: and no wiſe man will ever allow, he could converſe perſonally with either, till after he was dead.

THIRDLY, I will plainly prove him to be dead out of his own almanack for this year, and from the very paſſage which he produceth to make us think him alive. He there ſays, *He is not only now alive, but was alſo alive upon that very 29th of* March, *which I foretold he ſhould die on*: by this he declares his opinion, that a man may be alive now, who was not alive a twelvemonth ago. And indeed, there lies the ſophiſtry of his argument. He dares not aſſert, he was alive ever ſince that 29th of March, but that he *is now alive, and was ſo on that day:* I grant the latter; for he did not die till night, as appears by the printed account of his death, in a *letter to a lord:* and whether he be ſince revived, I leave the world to judge. This indeed is perfect cavilling, and I am aſhamed to dwell any longer upon it.

FOURTHLY, I will appeal to Mr Partridge himſelf, whether

whether it be probable I could have been so indiscreet, to begin my predictions with the *only* falshood, that ever was pretended to be in them; and this in an affair at home, where I had so many opportunities to be exact; and must have given such advantages against me to a person of Mr Partridge's wit and learning, who, if he could possibly have raised one single objection more against the truth of my prophecies, would hardly have spared me.

And here I must take occasion to reprove the above-mentioned writer of the relation of Mr Partridge's death, in a *letter to a lord*; who was pleased to tax me with a mistake of *four whole hours* in my calculation of that event. I must confess, this censure pronounced with an air of certainty, in a matter that so nearly concerned me, and by a *grave judicious author*, moved me not a little. But tho' I was at that time out of town, yet several of my friends, whose curiosity had led them to be exactly informed (for as to my own part, having no doubt at all in the matter, I never once thought of it) assured me, I computed to something under half an hour; which (I speak my private opinion) is an error of no very great magnitude, that men should raise a clamour about it. I shall only say, it would not be amiss, if that author would henceforth be more tender of other mens reputation as well as his own. It is well there were no more mistakes of that kind; if there had, I presume he would have told me of them with as little ceremony.

There is one objection against Mr Partridge's death, which I have sometimes met with, tho' indeed very slightly offered, that he still continues to write almanacks. But this is no more than what is common to all of that profession: Gadbury, poor Robin, Dove, Wing, and several others, do yearly publish their almanacks, tho' several of them have been dead since before the *revolution*. Now the natural reason of this I take to be, that whereas it is the privilege of other authors *to live after their deaths*; almanack-makers are alone excluded, because their dissertations treating only upon the minutes as they pass, become useless as those go off. In consideration of which, *time*, whose *registers* they are, gives them a lease in reversion, to continue their works after their death.

I ſhould not have given the public or myſelf the trouble of this vindication, if my name had not been made uſe of by ſeveral perſons, to whom I never lent it; one of which, a few days ago, was pleaſed to father on me a new ſet of predictions. But I think theſe are things too ſerious to be trifled with. It grieved me to the heart, when I ſaw my labours, which had coſt me ſo much thought and watching, bawled about by common hawkers, which I only intended for the weighty conſideration of the graveſt perſons. This prejudiced the world ſo much at firſt, that ſeveral of my friends had the aſſurance to aſk me, whether I were in jeſt? to which I only anſwered coldly, *that the event would ſhew*. But it is the talent of our age and nation, to turn things of the greateſt importance into ridicule. When the end of the year had *verified all my predictions*, out comes Mr Partridge's almanack, diſputing the point of his death; ſo that I am employed, like the general who was forced to kill his enemies twice over, whom a *necromancer* had raiſed to life. If Mr Partridge hath practiſed the ſame experiment upon himſelf, and be again alive, long may he continue ſo; that doth not in the leaſt contradict my veracity: but I think I have clearly proved, by *invincible demonſtration*, that he died at fartheſt within half an hour of the time I foretold, and not four hours ſooner, as the above mentioned author, in his letter to a lord, hath maliciouſly ſuggeſted, with deſign to blaſt my credit by charging me with ſo groſs a miſtake.

A

A famous PREDICTION of MERLIN, the Britiſh Wizard*,

Written above a thouſand years ago, and relating to the year 1709.

With explanatory notes, by T. N. Philomath.

Written in the year 1709.

LAST year was publiſhed a paper of predictions, pretended to be written by one Iſaac Bickerſtaff Eſq; but the true deſign of it was to ridicule the art of aſtrology, and expoſe its profeſſors as ignorant or impoſtors. Againſt this imputation, Dr Partridge hath learnedly vindicated himſelf in his almanack for that year.

* Dr. Swift in his preface to this piece would inſinuate, that what he publiſhes to the world is a tranſlation of Merlin's prophecy two hundred years old. The main deſign of the Doctor in this prediction, if he was really in earneſt (which I verily believe he was not, as I am perſuaded that he only writ this prophecy in order to vex the whigs, and to fret that ungrateful miniſtry which had forgotten the obligations he had conferred upon them) was, to encourage Q. Anne to a ſecond marriage, in order that her Majeſty might repair, if poſſible, that infinite loſs ſhe had ſuſtained by the death of the Duke of Glocester, who, by all accounts, was one of the fineſt princes that ever was born in England, and accordingly was univerſally regreted by the whole nation, the fanatical party and all their black adherents only excepted. This appears from the 11th, 12th, 13th, and 14th lines of the prophecy.

And, without diſpute, as in England there were many thouſands, who were deſirous to ſee a prince deſcended from a Queen whom they loved with ſuch ardour and affection; ſo, in the wildneſs of their imagination, they endeavoured to perſuade her Majeſty, at the age of about forty five, to marry a ſecond time.

For a farther vindication of this famous art, I have thought fit to preſent the world with the following prophecy. The original is ſaid to be of the famous Merlin, who lived about a thouſand years ago; and the following tranſlation is two hundred years old, for it ſeems to be written near the end of Henry VII.'s reign. I found it in an old edition of Merlin's prophecies, imprinted at London by John Hawkins in the year 1530, *page* 39. I ſet it down word for word in the old orthography, and ſhall take leave to ſubjoin a few explanatory notes.

Seven and ten addyd to nine,
Of Fraunce her woe this is the ſygne,
Tamys rivere twys y-frozen,
Walke ſans wetyng ſhoes ne hozen.
Then comyth foorthe, ich underſtonde,
From towne of Stoffe, to fattyn Londe,

An

time. But whether it was owing to that exceſſive regard which ſhe bore unto the memory of her beloved the Prince of Denmark; or whether it was becauſe ſhe never had a child after the age of five or ſix and twenty; or whether it was for ſome political reaſon or other, ſhe refuſed in this reſpect to gratify the inclinations of her people; which, however, as animoſities and factions were then riſing to an exceſſive height, ſhe had cauſe to repent of before the time of her deceaſe. For as the Queen was driven to ſuch inexpreſſible ſtraits by the fury and machinations of the contending parties, that, with all her experience in government, ſhe knew not whom to truſt; if ſhe had married ſome wiſe and thoughtful prince, entirely remote from all pretenſions to the crown (ſuppoſing that ſuch a one could have been found in Europe at that time) ſhe might have paſſed the remainder of her life with more eaſe and tranquillity. For, as a prince in that ſituation would have had nothing more to do, than to have made the Queen happy and her reign glorious, he might have acted as moderator between both parties, ſecured unto himſelf the eſteem of all the wiſe and virtuous, and perhaps, after the deceaſe of the Queen, might have been highly regarded by her ſucceſſor during the remainder of his life. But alas! party-rage carried all before it, and every ſcheme of accommodation was equally rejected by Whigs and Tories, *Swift*.

An herdie Chyſtan, woe the merna
To Fraunce, that ever he was born.
Then ſhall the ſyſoe beweyle his boſſe;
Nor ſhall grin berrys make up the loſſe.
Yonge Symnele ſhall again miſcarrye:
*And Norway's pryd * again ſhall marrye.*
And from the tree where bloſums ſeele,
Ripe fruit ſhall come, and all is wele,
Reaums ſhall dance honde in honde,
And it ſhall be merrye in old Inglonde,
Then old Inglonde ſhall be no more,
And no man ſhall be ſorie therefore.
Geryon ſhall have three hedes agayne,
Till Hapſburge makyth them but twayne.

Explanatory Notes.

Seven and ten. This line deſcribes the year when theſe events ſhall happen. Seven and ten makes ſeventeen, which I explain ſeventeen hundred, and this number added to nine, makes the year we are now in; for it muſt be underſtood of the natural year, which begins the firſt of January.

Tamys rivere twys, &c. The river Thames frozen twice in one year, ſo as men to walk on it, is a very ſignal accident, which perhaps hath not fallen out for ſeveral hundred years before, and is the reaſon why ſome aſtrologers have thought, that this prophecy could never be fulfilled, becauſe they imagined ſuch a thing would never happen in our climate.

From towne of Stoffe, &c. This is a plain deſignation of the Duke of Marlborough: one kind of ſtaff uſed to fatten land is called marle, and every body knows that borough is a name for a town; and this way of expreſſion is after the uſual dark manner of old aſtrological predictions.

Then

* Q. Anne is called *Norway's pryd*, becauſe ſhe had vouchſafed to marry the Prince of Denmark; and we all know, that Norway is part of the dominion belonging to that crown. *Swift.*

Then ſhall the fyſhe, &c. By the *fiſh*, is underſtood the *Dauphin* of France, as their kings eldeſt ſons are called: it is here ſaid, he ſhall lament the loſs of the Duke of Burgundy, called the *boſſe*, which is an old Engliſh word for *bump-ſhoulder*, or *crook-back*, as that Duke is known to be; and the prophecy ſeems to mean, that he ſhould be overcome or ſlain. By the *green berrys*, in the next line, is meant the young Duke of Berry, the *Dauphin*'s third ſon, who ſhall not have valour or fortune enough to ſupply the loſs of his eldeſt brother.

Yonge Symnele, &c. By Symnele is meant the pretended Prince of Wales, who, if he offers to attempt any thing againſt England, ſhall miſcarry as he did before. Lambert Symnele is the name of a young man, noted in our hiſtories for perſonating the ſon (as I remember) of Edward IV.

And Norway's pryd, &c. I cannot gueſs * who is meant by Norway's *pride*, perhaps the reader may, as well as the ſenſe of the two following lines.

Reaums ſhall, &c. Reaums, or, as the word is now, *realms*, is the old name for *kingdoms:* and this is a very plain prediction of our happy *union*, with the felicities that ſhall attend it. It is added, that old England ſhall be no more, and yet no man ſhall be ſorry for it. And indeed, properly ſpeaking, England is now no more, for the whole iſland is one kingdom under the name of Britain.

Geryon ſhall, &c. This prediction, tho' ſomewhat obſcure, is wonderfully adapt. Geryon is ſaid to have been a king of Spain, whom Hercules ſlew. It was a fiction of the poets, that he had three heads, which the author ſays he ſhall have again: that is, Spain ſhall have three kings; which is now wonderfully verified; for beſides the King of Portugal, which properly is part of Spain, there are now two rivals for Spain, Charles and Philip: but Charles being deſcended from the Count of Hapſburgh, founder of the Auſtrian family, ſhall ſoon make thoſe heads but two, by overturning Philip, and driving him out of Spain.

Some of theſe predictions are already fulfilled; and it is highly probable the reſt may be in due time; and I think,

* Queen Anne.

think, I have not forced the words by my explication into any other ſenſe, than what they will naturally bear. If this be granted, I am ſure it muſt be alſo allowed, that the author (whoever he were) was a perſon of extraordinary ſagacity; and that aſtrology brought to ſuch perfection as this is by no means an art to be deſpiſed, whatever Mr. Bickerſtaff, or other merry gentlemen are pleaſed to think. As to the tradition of theſe lines having been writ in the original by Merlin, I confeſs I lay not much weight upon it: but it is enough to juſtify their authority, that the book from whence I have tranſcribed them, was printed 170 years ago, as appears by the title-page. For the ſatisfaction of any gentleman, who may be either doubtful of the truth, or curious to be informed; I ſhall give order to have the very book ſent to the printer of this paper, with directions to let any body ſee it that pleaſes, becauſe I believe it is pretty ſcarce.

The WONDERFUL WONDER of WONDERS.

THERE is a certain perſon lately arrived at this city, whom it is very proper the world ſhould be informed of. His character may perhaps be thought very inconſiſtent, improbable, and unnatural; however I intend to draw it with the utmoſt regard to truth. This I am the better qualified to do, becauſe he is a ſort of *dependant* upon our family, and *almoſt* of the ſame *age*; though I cannot directly ſay, I have ever *ſeen* him. He is a native of this country, and hath lived long among us; but what appears wonderful, and hardly credible, was never ſeen *before*, by any mortal.

IT is true indeed, he always chuſes the *loweſt* place in company; and contrives it ſo, to keep *out of ſight*. It is reported however, that in his younger days he was frequently *expoſed* to *view*, but always againſt his will, and was ſure to *ſmart* for it.

As to his family, he came into the world a younger brother, being of *ſix* children the *fourth* in order of (1) birth; of which the eldeſt is now *head* of the houſe: the ſecond and third carry *arms*; but the two youngeſt are only *footmen*: ſome indeed add, that he hath likewiſe a twin-brother, who lives over-againſt him, and keeps a (2) *victualling-houſe*; he hath the reputation to be a *cloſe*, *griping*, *ſqueezing* fellow; and that when his bags are *full*, he is often *needy*; yet when the fit takes him, as faſt as he gets, he *lets it fly*.

WHEN in *office*, no one *diſchargeth* himſelf or *doth his buſineſs* better. He hath *ſometimes ſtrained hard* for an honeſt livelihood; and never got a *bit*, till every body elſe had *done*.

ONE practice appears very blameable in him; that every morning he privately frequents *unclean houſes*, where any modeſt perſon would bluſh to be ſeen. And although this be generally known, yet the world, as cenſorious as it is, hath been ſo kind to overlook this infirmity in him. To deal impartially; it muſt be granted, that he is too great a lover of himſelf, and very often

conſults

conſults his own *eaſe* at the expence of his beſt friends: but this is one of his *blind-ſides*; and the beſt of men I fear are not without *them*.

He hath been conſtituted by the *higher* powers in the ſtation of *receiver-general*, in which employment ſome have cenſured him for playing *faſt* and *looſe*. He is likewiſe *overſeer* of the *golden mines*, which he daily inſpecteth, when his health will permit him.

He was long bred under a (3) *maſter of arts*, who inſtilled good *principles* in him, but theſe were ſoon *corrupted*. I know not whether this deſerves mention: that he is ſo very capricious, as to take it for an equal affront to talk either of *kiſſing* or *kicking* him, which hath occaſioned a thouſand quarrels: however no body was ever ſo great a ſufferer for faults, which he neither was, nor poſſibly could be guilty of.

In his *religion* he hath thus much of the quaker, that he ſtands *always covered*, even in the preſence of the King; in moſt other points a perfect (4) *idolater*, altho' he endeavours to *conceal* it; for he is known to offer daily ſacrifices to certain *ſubterraneous nymphs*, whom he worſhips in an *humble poſture, prone on his face*, and *ſtript ſtark naked*; and ſo leaves his *offerings behind him*, which the (5) *prieſts* of thoſe goddeſſes are careful enough to remove upon certain ſeaſons with the utmoſt privacy at *midnight*, and from thence maintain themſelves and families. In all *urgent neceſſities* and *preſſures* he applies himſelf to theſe deities, and ſometimes even in the *ſtreets* and *high-ways*, from an opinion that thoſe powers have an influence in all places, altho' their peculiar reſidence be in caverns under ground. Upon theſe *occaſions* the faireſt ladies will not refuſe to *lend* their *hands* to aſſiſt him: for, altho' they are aſhamed to have him *ſeen* in their company, or even ſo much as to hear him *named*; yet it is well known, that he is one of their *conſtant followers*.

In *politics*, he always ſubmits to what is *uppermoſt*; but he peruſes pamphlets *on both ſides* with great impartiality, tho' ſeldom till *every body elſe hath done with them*.

His *learning* is of a mixed kind, and he may properly be called a *helluo librorum* or another *Jacobus de Voragine*;

gine; tho' his ſtudies are chiefly confined to *ſchoolmen*, *commentators*, and *German divines*, together with *modern poetry* and *critics*: and he is an *atomic* philoſopher, ſtrongly maintaining a *void* in *nature*, which he ſeems to have fairly proved by many *experiments*.

I ſhall now proceed to deſcribe ſome peculiar qualities, which in ſeveral inſtances ſeem to diſtinguiſh this perſon from the common race of other mortals.

His *grandfather* was a member of the *rump* parliament, as the *grandſon* is of the *preſent*, where he often *riſes*, ſometimes *grumbles*, but never *ſpeaks*. However he lets nothing paſs *willingly*, but what is *well digeſted*. His courage is indiſputable, for he will take the boldeſt man alive *by the noſe*.

He is generally the *firſt a-bed* in the family, and the *laſt up*; which is to be lamented; becauſe when he happens to *riſe before* the reſt, it hath been thought to forebode ſome *good fortune to his ſuperiors*.

As wiſdom is acquired by age, ſo by every new (6) *wrinkle in his face* he is reported to gain ſome *new knowledge*.

In him we may obſerve the true effects and conſequences of *tyranny* in a ſtate: for, as he is a great *oppreſſor* of all *below* him, ſo there is no body more *oppreſſed* by thoſe *above* him: yet in his time he hath been ſo highly in favour, that many *illuſtrious perſons* have been entirely indebted to *him* for their *preferments*.

He hath diſcovered from his own experience the true *point*, wherein all human actions, projects and deſigns do chiefly *terminate*; and how *mean* and *ſordid* they are *at the bottom*.

It behoves the public to keep him *quiet*; for his *frequent murmurs* are a certain ſign of *inteſtine* tumults.

No philoſopher ever lamented more the luxury, for which theſe nations are ſo juſtly taxed: it hath been known to coſt him (7) *tears of blood*: for in his own nature he is far from being *profuſe*; tho' indeed he never ſtays a night at a gentleman's houſe without *leaving ſomething behind him*.

He receives with great ſubmiſſion whatever his patrons think fit to give him; and when they lay *heavy burthens upon him*, which is frequently enough, he gets rid of them

them as ſoon as he can; but not without *ſome labour* and *much grumbling*.

He is a perpetual *hanger-on*; yet no-body knows how to be *without him*. He patiently ſuffers himſelf to be *kept under*, but loves to be well uſed, and in that caſe will ſacrifice his *vitals* to give you *eaſe*: and he has hardly one acquaintance, for whom he hath not been *bound*; yet, as far as we can find, was never known to *loſe* any thing by it.

He is obſerved to be very (8) *unquiet* in the company of a Frenchman in *new clothes*, or a young *coquette*.

He is, in ſhort, the ſubject of much *mirth* and *raillery*, which he ſeems to take well enough; tho' it hath not been obſerved, that ever any *good thing* came from himſelf.

There is ſo general an opinion of his juſtice, that ſometimes very *hard caſes* are left to his deciſion: and while he *ſits* upon them, he carries himſelf exactly *even between both ſides*, except where ſome *knotty point* ariſes; and then he is obſerved to *lean* a little to the *right* or *left*, as the matter inclines him; but his reaſons for it are ſo manifeſt and convincing, that every man approves them.

NOTES.

(1) He alludes to the manner of our birth, the *head* and arms appearing before the poſteriors and the two feet, which he calls the *footmen*.

(2) *Victualling-houſe*.] The *belly*, which receives and digeſts our nouriſhment.

(3) *Maſter of arts*.] Perſius: *magiſter artis, ingeniique largitor venter*.

(4) *Idolater*.] Alludes to the ſacrifices offered by the Romans to the goddeſs Cloacina.

(5) *Prieſts*.] Gold-finders, who perform their office in the night time: but our author further ſeems to have an eye to the cuſtom of the heathen prieſts ſtealing the offerings in the night; of which ſee more in the ſtory of Bell and the Dragon.

(6) *Wrinkle*.] This refers to a proverb—*you have one wrinkle in your a-ſe more than you had before*.

(7) *Tears of blood*.] *Haemorrhoids*, according to the phyſicians, are a frequent conſequence of intemperance.

(8) *Unquiet*.] Their tails being generally obſerved to be moſt reſtleſs.

POSTSCRIPT.

Gentle Reader,

THO' I am not inſenſible how many thouſand perſons have been, and ſtill are, with great dexterity *handling* this ſubject, and no leſs aware of what infinite reams of paper have been *laid out upon it:* however, in my opinion, no man living has *touched* it with greater nicety, and more delicate turns, than our author. But becauſe there is ſome intended obſcurity in this relation; and curioſity, inquiſitive of *ſecrets*, may poſſibly not enter into the *bottom* and *depth* of the ſubject, it was thought not improper to take off the veil, and gain the reader's favour by inlarging his *inſight*. *Ars enim non habet inimicum, niſi ignorantem.* It is well known, that it has been the policy of all times to deliver down *important* ſubjects by emblem and riddle, and not to ſuffer the knowledge of truth to be derived to us in plain and ſimple terms, which are generally as ſoon forgotten as conceived. For this reaſon the *heathen* religion is moſtly couched under *mythology*. For the like reaſon (this being a FUNDAMENTAL in its kind) the author has thought fit to wrap up his treaſure in *clean linen*, which it is our buſineſs to lay *open*, and ſet in a due light; for I have obſerved, upon any accidental diſcovery, the leaſt *glimpſe* has given a great diverſion to the eager ſpectator, as many ladies could teſtify, *were it proper*, or *the caſe would admit.*

THE politeſt companies have vouchſafed to ſmile at the *bare* name, and ſome people of faſhion have been ſo little ſcrupulous of *bringing it in play*, that it was the uſual ſaying of a knight and a man of good breeding, *that whenever he aroſe, his a-ſe roſe with him.*

The

The WONDER of all WONDERS, that ever the WORLD wondered at.

For all perſons of quality and others.

NEWLY arrived at this city of Dublin the famous artiſt John Emanuel Schoitz, who, to the great ſurprize and ſatisfaction of all ſpectators, is ready to do the following wonderful performances; the like before never ſeen in this kingdom.

He will heat a bar of iron red hot, and thruſt it into a barrel of gunpowder before all the company, and yet it ſhall not take fire.

He lets any gentleman charge a blunderbuſs with the ſame gunpowder, and twelve leaden bullets, which blunderbuſs the ſaid artiſt diſcharges full in the face of the ſaid company, without the leaſt hurt, the bullets ſticking in the wall behind them.

He takes any gentleman's own ſword, and runs it thro' the ſaid gentleman's body, ſo that the point appears bloody at the back to all the ſpectators: then he takes out the ſword, wipes it clean, and returns it to the owner, who receives no manner of hurt.

He takes a pot of ſcalding oil, and throws it by great ladles-full directly at the ladies, without ſpoiling their clothes or burning their ſkins.

He takes any perſon of quality's child from two years old to ſix, and lets the child's own father or mother take a pike in their hands; then the artiſt takes the child in his arms, and toſſes it upon the point of the pike, where it ſticks to the great ſatisfaction of all ſpectators; and is then taken off without ſo much as a hole in his coat.

He mounts upon a ſcaffold juſt over the ſpectators, and from thence throws down a great quantity of large tiles and ſtones, which fall like ſo many pillows, without ſo much as diſcompoſing either perukes or head-dreſſes.

He takes any perſon of quality up to the ſaid ſcaffold, which perſon pulls off his ſhoes, and leaps nine foot di-

rectly down on a board prepared on purpoſe, full of ſharp ſpikes ſix inches long, without hurting his feet or damaging his ſtockings.

HE places the ſaid board on a chair, upon which a lady ſits down with another lady in her lap, while the ſpikes inſtead of entering into the under lady's fleſh, will feel like a velvet cuſhion.

HE takes any perſon of quality's footman, ties a rope about his bare neck, and draws him up by pullies to the cieling, and there keeps him hanging as long as his maſter or the company pleaſes, the ſaid footman to the wonder and delight of all beholders having a pot of ale in one hand and a pipe in the other; and when he is let down, there will not appear the leaſt mark of the cord about his neck.

HE bids a lady's maid put her finger into a cup of clear liquor like water, upon which her face and both her hands are immediately withered like an old woman of fourſcore, her belly ſwells as if ſhe were within a week of her time, and her legs are as thick as mill-poſts; but upon putting her finger into another cup ſhe becomes as young and handſome, as ſhe was before.

HE gives any gentleman leave to drive forty twelvepenny nails up to the head in a porter's backſide, and then places the ſaid porter on a loadſtone chair, which draws out every nail, and the porter feels no pain.

HE likewiſe draws the teeth of half a dozen gentlemen, mixes and jumbles them in a hat, gives any perſon leave to blindfold him, and returns each their own, and fixes them as well as ever.

WITH his fore-finger and thumb he thruſts ſeveral gentlemens and ladies eyes out of their heads without the leaſt pain, at which time they ſee an unſpeakable number of beautiful colours; and after they are entertained to the full, he places them again in their proper ſockets, without any damage to the ſight.

HE lets any gentleman drink a quart of hot melted lead, and by a draught of prepared liquor, of which he takes part himſelf, he makes the ſaid lead paſs thro' the ſaid gentleman before all the ſpectators without any damage; after which it is produced in a cake to the company.

WITH

WITH many other wonderful performances of art, too tedious here to mention.

THE ſaid artiſt has performed before moſt Kings and Princes in Europe with great applauſe.

HE performs every day (except Sundays) from ten of the clock to one in the forenoon; and from four till ſeven in the evening, at the new inn in Smithfield.

THE firſt ſeat a Britiſh crown, the ſecond a Britiſh half-crown, and the loweſt a Britiſh ſhilling.

N. B. The beſt hands in town are to play at the ſaid ſhow.

PROPOSAL

For correcting, improving, and aſcertaining the ENGLISH TONGUE*.

In a LETTER to the Moſt Honourable ROBERT Earl of OXFORD and MORTIMER, Lord High Treaſurer of GREAT BRITAIN.

To the Moſt Honourable ROBERT Earl of OXFORD, &c.

MY LORD,

WHAT I had the honour of mentioning to your Lordſhip ſome time ago in converſation, was not a new thought, juſt then ſtarted by accident or occaſion, but

* It is well known, that if the Queen had lived a year or two longer, this propoſal would, in all probability, have taken effect. For the Lord Treaſurer had already nominated ſeveral perſons without diſtinction of quality or party, who were to compoſe a ſociety for the purpoſes mentioned by the author; and reſolved to uſe his credit with her Majeſty, that a fund ſhould be applied to ſupport the expence of a large room, where the ſociety ſhould meet, and for other incidents. But this ſcheme fell to the ground, partly by the diſſenſions among the great men at court; but chiefly by the lamented death of that glorious Princeſs. *Dub. edit.*

This piece might have been a very uſeful performance, if it had been longer, and leſs eclipſed by compliments to the Noble perſon to whom it is addreſſed. It ſeems to have been intended as a preface to ſome more enlarged deſign: at the head of which ſuch an introduction muſt have appeared with great propriety. A work of this kind is much wanted, as our language inſtead of being improved, is every day growing worſe, and more debaſed. We bewilder ourſelves in various orthography; we ſpeak and we write at random; and if a man's common converſation were to be committed to paper, he *would* be ſtartled *for to* find himſelf guilty in *a few* ſentences, *of ſo many* ſoleciſms, and ſuch falſe Engliſh. I believe we

but the result of long reflection, and I have been confirmed in my sentiments by the opinion of some very judicious persons,

are the only people in the Christian world, who repeat the Lord's prayer in an ungrammatical manner: and I remember to have heard, that when a motion was made in the convocation to alter the word *which* for the word *who*, the proposition was rejected by the majority. This instance may shew you of what sort of men the most learned, and even the most reverend assemblies are sometimes composed. But let us consider the conduct of a neighbouring nation. How industrious have the French been to improve their language? and to what a state of perfection have they brought it? Rome, by her conquests, made her dialect universal: France, by her policy, has done the same. By policy, I mean the encouragement of arts and sciences; which will often render a nation more powerful than arms. Nothing has contributed so much to the purity and excellence of the French tongue, as the noble academies established for that purpose: and, until some public work of the same kind is undertaken in England, we cannot flatter ourselves with any hopes of amending the errors, or ascertaining the limits of our style. I shall not presume even to whisper to you, that I think a design of this sort is sufficiently momentous to attract the consideration of our legislative powers. Their thoughts are otherwise employed, and their faculties otherwise applied. But I will venture to say, that if to our hospitals for lunatics, an hospital was added for the reception and support of men of sense and learning, it would be of the highest honour to the present age, and of no less advantage to posterity. I call it an hospital, because I suppose it to be erected for the benefit of such persons, whose infirm fortunes, or diseased revenues, may have rendered the strength and abilities of their minds weak and useless to the public: for I entirely agree with Aristotle, where he says, in the words of his scholiast, *Eam praeclara et magna vix posse exequi et praestare, cui facultates desunt: quoniam per amicos et civilem potentiam, velut per instrumenta, necesse est plerique effici.* The reflections that arise from this theme, I find, are driving me beyond due bounds: therefore I shall only add, that I heartily wish you may think an attention to your native language as useful and improving a study as can be pursued, in whatever station of life Providence may allot you. *Orrery.*

In

perſons, with whom I conſulted. They all agreed, that nothing would be of greater uſe towards the improvement of knowledge and politeneſs, than ſome effectual method for *correcting*, *enlarging* and *aſcertaining* our language; and they think it a work very poſſible to be compaſſed under the protection of a prince, the countenance and encouragement of a miniſtry, and the care of proper perſons choſen for ſuch an undertaking. I was glad to find your Lordſhip's anſwer in ſo different a ſtyle from what hath been commonly made uſe of on the like occaſions for ſome years paſt, *That all ſuch thoughts muſt be deferred to a time of peace*: a topic which ſome have carried ſo far, that they would not have us by any means think of preſerving our civil or religious conſtitution, becauſe we are engaged in a war abroad. It will be among the diſtinguiſhing marks of your miniſtry, my Lord, that you have a genius above all ſuch regards, and that no reaſonable propoſal for the honour, the advantage, or the ornament of your country, however foreign to your more immediate office, was ever neglected by you. I confeſs the merit of this candour and condeſcenſion is very much leſſened, becauſe your Lordſhip hardly leaves us room to offer our good wiſhes; removing all our difficulties, and ſupplying

In this epiſtle Dr Swift complains to the Earl of Oxford as firſt miniſter, in the name of all the learned and polite perſons of the nation, that our language is extremely imperfect, that its daily improvements are by no means equal to its daily corruptions, that the pretenders to poliſh and refine it have chiefly multiplied abuſes and abſurdities, and that in many inſtances it offends againſt every part of grammar. He proves with irreſiſtible force of reaſon, that our language ought to be refined to a certain ſtandard, and then fixed for ever: he remarks the ſeveral inconveniencies which ariſe perpetually from our ſtupid inattention to theſe matters. He doth not however preſcribe any methods for aſcertaining the language, but throws out ſome general obſervations, leaving the reſt to the inſpection of that ſociety, which he hoped would have been ſpeedily inſtituted by the Lord Treaſurer. But this ſcheme fell to the ground, partly by the diſſenſions among the great men at court, and chiefly by the lamented death of Queen Anne, that ever glorious Princeſs. *Swift.*

ſupplying our wants, faſter than the moſt viſionary projector can adjuſt his ſchemes. And therefore, my Lord, the deſign of this paper is not ſo much to offer you *ways* and *means*, as to complain of a *grievance*, the redreſſing of which is to be your own work as much as that of paying the *nation's debts*, or opening a trade into the ſouth-ſea; and tho' not of ſuch immediate benefit as either of theſe, or any other of your glorious actions, yet perhaps in future ages not leſs to your honour.

My Lord, I do here in the name of all the learned and polite perſons of the nation complain to your Lordſhip as *firſt miniſter*, that our language is extremely imperfect; that its daily improvements are by no means in proportion to its daily corruptions; that the pretenders to poliſh and refine it have chiefly multiplied abuſes and abſurdities; and that in many inſtances it offends againſt every part of grammar. But leſt your Lordſhip ſhould think my cenſure too ſevere, I ſhall take leave to be more particular.

I believe your Lordſhip will agree with me in the reaſon, why our language is more refined than thoſe of Italy, Spain or France. It is plain, that the Latin tongue in its purity was never in this iſland, towards the conqueſt of which few or no attempts were made till the time of Claudius; neither was that language ever ſo vulgar in Britain, as it is known to have been in Gaul and Spain. Further, we find that the Roman legions here were at length all recalled to help their country againſt the Goths and other barbarous invaders. Mean time the Britains left to ſhift for themſelves, and daily harraſſed by cruel inroads from the Picts, were forced to call in the Saxons for their defence; who conſequently reduced the greateſt part of the iſland to their own power, drove the Britains into the moſt remote and mountainous parts, and the reſt of the country, in cuſtoms, religion, and language, became wholly Saxon. This I take to be the reaſon why there are more Latin words remaining in the Britiſh tongue than in the old Saxon, which, excepting ſome few variations in the orthography, is the ſame in moſt original words with our preſent Engliſh, as well as with the German and other northern dialects.

EDWARD.

EDWARD the *confeſſor*, having lived long in France, appears to be the firſt who introduced any mixture of the French tongue with the Saxon; the court affecting what the prince was fond of, and others taking it up for a faſhion, as it is now with us. William *the conqueror* proceeded much farther; bringing over with him vaſt numbers of that nation, ſcattering them in every monaſtery, giving them great quantities of land, directing all pleadings to be in that language, and endeavouring to make it univerſal in the kingdom. This at leaſt is the opinion generally received: but your Lordſhip hath fully convinced me, that the French tongue made yet a greater progreſs here under Harry *the ſecond*, who had large territories on that continent, both from his father and his wife, made frequent journeys and expeditions thither, and was always attended with a number of his countrymen, retainers at his court. For ſome centuries after there was a conſtant intercourſe between France and England, by the dominions we poſſeſſed there, and the conqueſts we made; ſo that our language between two and three hundred years ago ſeems to have had a greater mixture with French, than at preſent; many words having been afterwards rejected, and ſome ſince the time of Spencer; altho' we have ſtill retained not a few, which have been long antiquated in France. I could produce ſeveral inſtances of both kinds, if it were of any uſe or entertainment.

To examine into the ſeveral circumſtances by which the language of a country may be altered, would force me to enter into a wide field: I ſhall only obſerve, that the Latin, the French, and the Engliſh, ſeem to have undergone the ſame fortune. The firſt, from the days of Romulus to thoſe of Julius Cæſar, ſuffered perpetual changes: and by what we meet in thoſe authors who occaſionally ſpeak on that ſubject, as well as from certain fragments of old laws, it is manifeſt that the Latin three hundred years before Tully was as unintelligible in his time, as the Engliſh and French of the ſame period are now; and theſe two have changed as much ſince William *the conqueror* (which is but little leſs than ſeven hundred years) as the Latin appears to have done in the like *term*. Whether our language or the French will decline

as

as fast as the Roman did, is a question, that would perhaps admit more debate than it is worth. There were many reasons for the corruptions of the last: as the change of their government to a tyranny, which ruined the study of eloquence, there being no further use or encouragement for popular orators: their giving not only the freedom of the city, but capacity for employments, to several towns in Gaul, Spain, and Germany, and other distant parts, as far as Asia; which brought a great number of foreign pretenders into Rome: the slavish disposition of the senate and people, by which the wit and eloquence of the age were wholly turned into panegyric, the most barren of all subjects: the great corruption of manners, and introduction of foreign luxury, with foreign terms to express it, with several others that might be assigned; not to mention those invasions from the Goths and Vandals, which are too obvious to insist on.

The Roman language arrived at great perfection, before it began to decay: and the French for these last fifty years hath been polishing as much as it will bear, and appears to be declining by the natural inconstancy of that people, and the affectation of some late authors to introduce and multiply cant words, which is the most ruinous corruption in any language. La Bruyere, a late celebrated writer among them, makes use of many new terms, which are not to be found in any of the common dictionaries before his time. But the English tongue is not arrived to such a degree of perfection, as to make us apprehend any thoughts of its decay; and if it were once refined to a certain standard, perhaps there might be ways found out to fix it for ever, or at least till we are invaded and made a conquest by some other state; and even then our best writings might probably be preserved with care, and grow into esteem, and the authors have a chance for immortality.

But without such great revolutions as these (to which we are, I think, less subject than kingdoms upon the continent) I see no absolute necessity why any language should be perpetually changing; for we find many examples to the contrary. From Homer to Plutarch are above a thousand years; so long at least the purity of the Greek tongue may be allowed to last, and we know not

how far before. The Grecians ſpread their colonies round all the coaſts of Aſia Minor, even to the northern parts lying towards the Euxine, in every iſland of the Ægean ſea, and ſeveral others in the Mediterranean; where the language was preſerved entire for many ages, after they themſelves became colonies to Rome, and till they were over-run by the barbarous nations upon the fall of that empire. The Chineſe have books in their language above two thouſand years old, neither have the frequent conqueſts of the Tartars been able to alter it. The German, Spaniſh, and Italian, have admitted few or no changes for ſome ages paſt. The other languages of Europe I know nothing of; neither is there any occaſion to conſider them.

HAVING taken this compaſs, I return to thoſe conſiderations upon our own language, which I would humbly offer your Lordſhip. The period, wherein the Engliſh tongue received moſt improvement, I take to commence with the beginning of Queen Elizabeth's reign, and to conclude with the great rebellion in forty two. 'Tis true, there was a very ill taſte both of ſtyle and wit, which prevailed under King James I.; but that ſeems to have been corrected in the firſt years of his ſucceſſor, who, among many other qualifications of an excellent prince, was a great patron of learning. From the civil war to this preſent time, I am apt to doubt whether the corruptions in our language have not at leaſt equalled the refinements of it; and theſe corruptions very few of the beſt authors in our age have wholly eſcaped. During the uſurpation, ſuch an infuſion of enthuſiaſtic jargon prevailed in every writing, as was not ſhaken off in many years after. To this ſucceeded that licentiouſneſs which entered with the reſtoration, and from infecting our religion and morals fell to corrupt our language; which laſt was not like to be much improved by thoſe, who at that time made up the court of King Charles II.; either ſuch who had followed him in his baniſhment, or who had been altogether converſant in the dialect of thoſe fanatic times; or young men, who had been educated in the ſame country; ſo that the court, which uſed to be the *ſtandard* of propriety and correctneſs of ſpeech, was *then*, and, I think, hath ever ſince continued the worſt

ſchool

ſchool in England for that accompliſhment; and ſo will remain, till better care be taken in the education of our young nobility, that they may ſet out into the world with ſome foundation of literature, in order to qualify them for patterns of politeneſs. The conſequence of this defect upon our language may appear from the plays, and other compoſitions written for entertainment within fifty years paſt; filled with a ſucceſſion of affected phraſes, and new conceited words, either borrowed from the current ſtyle of the court, or from thoſe, who under the character of men of wit and pleaſure pretended to give the law. Many of theſe refinements have already been long antiquated, and are now hardly intelligible; which is no wonder, when they were the product only of ignorance and caprice.

I have never known this great town without one or more *dictators* of figure, who had credit enough to give riſe to ſome new word, and propagate it in moſt converſations, tho' it had neither humour nor ſignificancy. If it ſtruck the preſent taſte, it was ſoon transferred into the plays and current ſcribbles of the week, and became an addition to our language; while the men of wit and learning, inſtead of early obviating ſuch corruptions, were too often ſeduced to imitate and comply with them.

THERE is another ſet of men, who have contributed very much to the ſpoiling of the Engliſh tongue; I mean the poets from the time of the reſtoration. Theſe gentlemen, altho' they could not be inſenſible how much our language was already overſtocked with monoſyllables, yet, to ſave time and pains, introduced that barbarous cuſtom of abbreviating words, to fit them to the meaſure of their verſes; and this they have frequently done ſo very injudiciouſly, as to form ſuch harſh unharmonious ſounds, that none but a northern ear could endure: they have joined the moſt obdurate conſonants without one interveening vowel, only to ſhorten a ſyllable: and their taſte in time became ſo depraved, that what was at firſt a poetical licence not to be juſtified, they made their choice, alledging, that the words pronounced at length ſounded faint and languid. This was a pretence to take up the ſame cuſtom in proſe: ſo that moſt of the books we ſee now-a-days, are full of thoſe manglings and abbreviations.

breviations. Inſtances of this abuſe are innumerable: what does your Lordſhip think of the words, *drudg'd*, *diſturb'd*, *rebuk'd*, *fledg'd*, and a thouſand others every where to be met with in proſe as well as verſe? Where by leaving out a vowel to ſave a ſyllable we form ſo jarring a ſound, and ſo difficult to utter, that I have often wondered how it could ever obtain.

ANOTHER cauſe (and perhaps borrowed from the former) which hath contributed not a little to the maiming of our language, is a fooliſh opinion, advanced of late years, that we ought to ſpell exactly as we ſpeak; which, beſide the obvious inconvenience of utterly deſtroying our etymology, would be a thing we ſhould never ſee an end of. Not only the ſeveral towns and counties of England have a different way of pronouncing, but even here in London they clip their words after one manner about the court, another in the city, and a third in the ſuburbs: and in a few years, it is probable, will all differ from themſelves, as fancy or faſhion ſhall direct: all which reduced to writing would entirely confound orthography. Yet many people are ſo fond of this conceit, that it is ſometimes a difficult matter to read modern books and pamphlets; where the words are ſo curtailed, and varied from their original ſpelling, that whoever hath been uſed to plain Engliſh, will hardly know them by ſight.

SEVERAL young men at the univerſities, terribly poſſeſſed with the fear of pedantry, run into a worſe extreme, and think all politeneſs to conſiſt in reading the daily traſh ſent down to them from hence: this they call *knowing the world*, and *reading men and manners*. Thus furniſhed, they come up to town, reckon all their errors for accompliſhments, borrow the neweſt ſet of phraſes; and if they take a pen into their hands, all the odd words they have picked up in a coffee-houſe, or a gaming ordinary, are produced as flowers of ſtyle; and the orthography refined to the utmoſt. To this we owe thoſe monſtrous productions, which, under the name of *trips*, *ſpies*, *amuſements*, and other conceited appellations, have over-run us for ſome years paſt. To this we owe that ſtrange race of wits, who tell us, they write to the *humour of the age*. And I wiſh I could ſay, theſe quaint *fopperies* were wholly abſent from graver ſubjects. In ſhort,

ſhort, I would undertake to ſhew your Lordſhip ſeveral pieces, where the beauties of this kind are ſo predominant, that with all your ſkill in languages you could never be able to read or underſtand them.

But I am very much miſtaken, if many of theſe falſe refinements among us do not ariſe from a principle, which would quite deſtroy their credit, if it were well underſtood and conſidered. For I am afraid, my Lord, that with all the real good qualities of our country we are naturally not very polite. This perpetual diſpoſition to ſhorten our words, by retrenching the vowels, is nothing elſe but a tendency to lapſe into the barbarity of thoſe northern nations, from whom we are deſcended, and whoſe languages labour all under the ſame defect. For it is worthy our obſervation, that the Spaniards, the French, and the Italians, altho' derived from the ſame northern anceſtors with ourſelves, are with the utmoſt difficulty taught to pronounce our words, which the Swedes and Danes, as well as the Germans and the Dutch, attain to with eaſe, becauſe our ſyllables reſemble theirs in the roughneſs and frequency of conſonants. Now, as we ſtruggle with an ill climate to improve the nobler kinds of fruits, are at the expence of walls to receive and reverberate the faint rays of the ſun, and fence againſt the northern blaſts, we ſometimes by the help of a good ſoil equal the production of warmer countries, who have no need to be at ſo much coſt and care. It is the ſame thing with reſpect to the politer arts among us; and the ſame defect of heat which gives a fierceneſs to our natures, may contribute to that roughneſs of our language, which bears ſome analogy to the harſh fruit of colder countries. For I do not reckon that we want a *genius* more than the reſt of our neighbours: but your Lordſhip will be of my opinion, that we ought to ſtruggle with theſe natural diſadvantages as much as we can, and be careful whom we employ, whenever we deſign to correct them, which is a work that has hitherto been aſſumed by the leaſt qualified hands. So that, if the choice had been left to me, I would rather have truſted the refinement of our language, as far as it relates to ſound, to the judgment of the women, than of illiterate court-fops, half-witted poets, and univerſity-boys. For it is plain,

that women in their manner of corrupting words do naturally diſcard the conſonants, as we do the vowels. What I am going to tell your Lordſhip appears very trifling: that more than once, where ſome of both ſexes were in company, I have perſuaded two or three of each to take a pen, and write down a number of letters joined together, juſt as it came into their heads; and upon reading this gibberiſh, we have found that which the men had wrote, by the frequent encountering of rough conſonants, to ſound like High-Dutch; and the other by the women, like Italian, abounding in vowels and liquids. Now, tho' I would by no means give ladies the trouble of adviſing us in the reformation of our language, yet I cannot help thinking, that ſince they have been left out of all meetings, except parties at play, or where worſe deſigns are carried on, our converſation hath very much degenerated.

In order to reform our language, I conceive, my Lord, that a free judicious choice ſhould be made of ſuch perſons, as are generally allowed to be beſt qualified for ſuch a work, without any regard to quality, party, or profeſſion. Theſe, to a certain number at leaſt, ſhould aſſemble at ſome appointed time and place, and fix on rules, by which they deſign to proceed. What methods they will take is not for me to preſcribe. Your Lordſhip, and other perſons in great employment, might pleaſe to be of the number: and I am afraid ſuch a ſociety would want your inſtruction and example as much as your protection; for I have, not without a little envy, obſerved of late the ſtyle of ſome great miniſters very much to exceed that of any other productions.

The perſons who are to undertake this work will have the example of the French before them to imitate, where theſe have proceeded right, and to avoid their miſtakes. Beſides the grammar-part, wherein we are allowed to be very defective, they will obſerve many groſs improprieties, which however authoriſed by practice, and grown familiar, ought to be diſcarded. They will find many words that deſerve to be utterly thrown out of our language, many more to be corrected, and perhaps not a few long ſince antiquated, which ought to be reſtored on account of their energy and ſound.

But

But what I have moſt at heart, is, that ſome method ſhould be thought on for *aſcertaining* and *fixing* our language for ever, after ſuch alterations are made in it as ſhall be thought requiſite. For I am of opinion, that it is better a language ſhould not be wholly perfect, than that it ſhould be perpetually changing; and we muſt give over at one time, or at length infallibly change for the worſe, as the Romans did, when they began to quit their *ſimplicity* of ſtyle for affected refinements, ſuch as we meet in Tacitus and other authors; which ended by degrees in many barbarities, even before the Goths had invaded Italy.

The fame of our writers is uſually confined to theſe two iſlands, and it is hard it ſhould be limited in *time* as much as *place* by the perpetual variations of our ſpeech. It is your Lordſhip's obſervation, that if it were not for the Bible and Common Prayer Book in the vulgar tongue, we ſhould hardly be able to underſtand any thing, that was written among us an hundred years ago; which is certainly true: for thoſe books being perpetually read in churches, have proved a kind of ſtandard for language, eſpecially to the common people. And I doubt, whether the alterations ſince introduced have added much to the beauty or ſtrength of the Engliſh tongue, tho' they have taken off a great deal from that *ſimplicity*, which is one of the greateſt perfections in any language. You, my Lord, who are ſo converſant in the ſacred writings, and ſo great a judge of them in their originals, will agree, that no tranſlation our country ever yet produced hath come up to that of the Old and New Teſtament: and by the many beautiful paſſages, which I have often had the honour to hear your Lordſhip cite from thence, I am perſuaded, that the tranſlators of the Bible were maſters of an Engliſh ſtyle much fitter for that work, than any we ſee in our preſent writings; which I take to be owing to the *ſimplicity* that runs thro' the whole. Then, as to the greateſt part of our *liturgy*, compiled long before the tranſlation of the Bible now in uſe, and little altered ſince; there ſeem to be in it as great ſtrains of true ſublime eloquence, as are any where to be found in our language; which every man of good taſte will ob-

ſerve in the *communion ſervice*, that of *burial*, and other parts.

But when I ſay, that I would have our language, after it is duly corrected, always to laſt, I do not mean that it ſhould never be enlarged. Provided that no word, which a ſociety ſhall give a ſanction to, be afterwards antiquated and exploded, they may have liberty to receive whatever new ones they ſhall find occaſion for; becauſe then the old books will yet be always valuable according to their intrinſic worth, and not thrown aſide on account of unintelligible words and phraſes, which appear harſh and uncouth, only becauſe they are out of faſhion. Had the Roman tongue continued vulgar in that city till this time, it would have been abſolutely neceſſary, from the mighty changes that have been made in law and religion, from the many terms of art required in trade and in war, from the new inventions that have happened in the world, from the vaſt ſpreading of navigation and commerce, with many other obvious circumſtances, to have made great additions to that language; yet the ancients would ſtill have been read and underſtood with pleaſure and eaſe. The Greek tongue received many enlargements between the time of Homer and that of Plutarch, yet the former author was probably as well underſtood in Trajan's time as the latter. What Horace ſays of *words going off and periſhing like leaves, and new ones coming in their place*, is a misfortune he laments, rather than a thing he approves; but I cannot ſee why this ſhould be abſolutely neceſſary, or if it were, what would have become of his *monumentum aere perennius*.

Writing by memory only, as I do at preſent, I would gladly keep within my depth; and therefore ſhall not enter into further particulars. Neither do I pretend more than to ſhew the uſefulneſs of this deſign, and to make ſome general obſervations, leaving the reſt to that ſociety, which I hope will owe its inſtitution and patronage to your Lordſhip. Beſides, I would willingly avoid repetition, having about a year ago communicated to the public much of what I had to offer upon this ſubject, by the hands of an ingenious gentleman, who for a long time did thrice a week divert or inſtruct the kingdom by his *papers*; and is ſuppoſed to purſue the ſame deſign at preſent

ſent under the title of Spectator. This author, who hath tried the force and compaſs of our language with ſo much ſucceſs, agrees entirely with me in moſt of my ſentiments relating to it; ſo do the greateſt part of the men of wit and learning, whom I have had the happineſs to converſe with; and therefore I imagine that ſuch a ſociety would be pretty unanimous in the main points.

YOUR Lordſhip muſt allow, that ſuch a work as this brought to perfection would very much contribute to the glory of her Majeſty's reign; which ought to be recorded in words more durable than braſs, and ſuch as our poſterity may read a thouſand years hence with pleaſure as well as admiration. I always diſapproved that falſe compliment to princes, that the moſt laſting monument they can have, is the hearts of their ſubjects. It is indeed their greateſt preſent felicity to reign in their ſubjects hearts; but theſe are too periſhable to preſerve their memories, which can only be done by the pens of able and faithful hiſtorians. And I take it to be your Lordſhip's duty, as *prime miniſter*, to give order for inſpecting our language, and rendering it fit to record the hiſtory of ſo great and good a princeſs. Beſides, my Lord, as diſintereſted as you appear to the world, I am convinced, that no man is more in the power of a prevailing favourite paſſion than yourſelf; I mean that deſire of true and laſting honour, which you have born along with you thro' every ſtage of your life. To this you have often ſacrificed your intereſt, your eaſe, and your health: for preſerving and increaſing this you have expoſed your perſon to ſecret treachery and open violence. There is not perhaps an example in hiſtory of any miniſter, who in ſo ſhort a time hath performed ſo many great things, and overcome ſo many difficulties. Now, tho' I am fully convinced, that you fear God, honour your Queen, and love your country, as much as any of your fellow-ſubjects, yet I muſt believe, that the deſire of fame hath been no inconſiderable motive to quicken you in the purſuit of thoſe actions, which will beſt deſerve it. But at the ſame time I muſt be ſo plain as to tell your Lordſhip, that if you will not take ſome care to ſettle our language, and put it into a ſtate of continuance, I cannot promiſe

that your memory shall be preserved above an hundred years, farther than by imperfect tradition.

As barbarous and ignorant as we were in former centuries, there was more effectual care taken by our ancestors to preserve the memory of times and persons, than we find in this age of learning and politeness, as we are pleased to call it. The rude Latin of the Monks is still very intelligible; whereas, had their records been delivered down only in the vulgar tongue, so barren and so barbarous, so subject to continual succeeding changes, they could not now be understood, unless by antiquaries, who make it their study to expound them. And we must at this day have been content with such poor abstracts of our English story, as laborious men of low genius would think fit to give us: and even these in the next age would be likewise swallowed up in succeeding collections. If things go on at this rate, all I can promise your Lordship, is, that about two hundred years hence some painful compiler, who will be at the trouble of studying old language, may inform the world, that in the reign of Queen Anne, Robert Earl of Oxford, a very wise and excellent man, was made *High Treasurer*, and saved his country, which in those days was almost ruined by a *foreign war*, and a *domestic faction*. Thus much he may be able to pick out, and willing to transfer into his new history; but the rest of your character, which I or any other writer may now value ourselves by drawing, and the particular account of the great things done under your ministry, for which you are already so celebrated in most parts of Europe, will probably be dropped on account of the antiquated style and manner they are delivered in. How then shall any man, who hath a genius for history equal to the best of the ancients, be able to undertake such a work with spirit and chearfulness, when he considers that he will be read with pleasure but a very few years, and in an age or two shall hardly be understood without an interpreter? This is like employing an excellent statuary to work upon mouldering stone. Those, who apply their studies to preserve the memory of others, will always have some concern for their own. And I believe it is for this reason, that so few writers among us of any distinction have turned their thoughts to such a discouraging

diſcouraging employment: for the beſt Engliſh hiſtorian muſt lie under this mortification, that when his ſtyle grows antiquated, he will be only conſidered as a tedious relater of facts; and perhaps conſulted in his turn among other neglected authors to furniſh materials for ſome future collector.

I doubt your Lordſhip is but ill entertained with a few ſcattered thoughts upon a ſubject, that deſerves to be treated with ability and care: however, I muſt beg leave to add a few words more, perhaps not altogether foreign to the ſame matter. I know not whether that which I am going to ſay may paſs for caution, advice, or reproach, any of which will be juſtly thought very improper from one in my ſtation to one in yours. However, I muſt venture to affirm, that if genius and learning be not encouraged under your Lordſhip's adminiſtration, you are the moſt inexcuſable perſon alive. All your other virtues, my Lord, will be defective without this; your affability, candor, and good nature; that perpetual agreeableneſs of converſation, ſo diſengaged in the midſt of ſuch a weight of buſineſs and oppoſition; even your juſtice, prudence, and magnanimity, will ſhine leſs bright without it. Your Lordſhip is univerſally allowed to poſſeſs a very large portion in moſt parts of literature; and to this you owe the cultivating thoſe many virtues which otherwiſe would have been leſs adorned, or in lower perfection. Neither can you acquit yourſelf of theſe obligations, without letting the arts in their turn ſhare your influence and protection: beſides, who knows but ſome *true genius* may happen to ariſe under your miniſtry, *exortus ut ætherius ſol.* Every age might perhaps produce one or two of theſe to adorn it, if they were not ſunk under the cenſure and obloquy of plodding, ſervile, imitating pedants: I do not mean by a true genius any bold writer, who breaks through the rules of decency to diſtinguiſh himſelf by the ſingularity of his opinions: but one, who upon a deſerving ſubject is able to open new ſcenes, and diſcover a vein of true and noble thinking, which never entered into any imagination before: every ſingle of whoſe pen is worth all the paper blotted by hundreds of others in the compaſs of their lives. I know, my Lord, your friends will offer in your defence,

that

that in your private capacity you never refuſed your purſe and credit to the ſervice and ſupport of learned or ingenious men; and that ever ſince you have been in public employment, you have conſtantly beſtowed your favours to the moſt deſerving perſons. But I deſire your Lordſhip not to be deceived: we never will admit of theſe excuſes, nor will allow your private liberality, as great as it is, to attone for your exceſſive public thrift. But here again I am afraid moſt good ſubjects will interpoſe in your defence, by alledging the deſperate condition you found the nation in, and the neceſſity there was for ſo able and faithful a ſteward to retrieve it, if poſſible, by the utmoſt frugality. We grant all this, my Lord; but then it ought likewiſe to be conſidered, that you have already ſaved ſeveral millions to the public, and that what we aſk is too inconſiderable to break into any rules of the ſtricteſt good huſbandry. The French King beſtows about half a dozen penſions to learned men in ſeveral parts of Europe, and perhaps a dozen in his own kingdom; which in the whole do probably not amount to half the income of many a private commoner in England, yet have more contributed to the glory of that Prince, than any million he hath otherwiſe employed. For learning, like all true merit, is eaſily ſatisfied; whilſt the falſe and counterfeit is perpetually craving, and never thinks it hath enough. The ſmalleſt favour given by a great prince, as a mark of eſteem, to reward the endowments of the mind, never fails to be returned with praiſe and gratitude, and loudly celebrated to the world. I have known ſome years ago ſeveral penſions given to particular perſons, (how deſervedly I ſhall not inquire) any one of which, if divided into ſmaller parcels, and diſtributed by the crown to thoſe, who might upon occaſion diſtinguiſh themſelves by ſome extraordinary production of wit or learning, would be amply ſufficient to anſwer the end. Or if any ſuch perſons were above money, (as every great *genius* certainly is with very moderate conveniencies of life) a medal, or ſome mark of diſtinction, would do full as well.

But I forget my province, and find myſelf turning *projector* before I am aware; altho' it be one of the laſt *characters* under which I ſhould deſire to appear before

your

your Lordſhip, eſpecially when I have the ambition of aſpiring to that of being with the greateſt reſpect and truth,

My Lord,

Your Lordſhip's

moſt obedient, moſt obliged,

and moſt humble ſervant

London, Feb. 22,
1711-12.

Some

SOME FREE THOUGHTS

UPON THE

PRESENT STATE OF AFFAIRS*.

Written in the year 1714.

WHATEVER may be thought or practiſed by profound politicians, they will hardly be able to convince the reaſonable part of mankind, that the moſt plain, ſhort,

* About a month before the demiſe of Queen Anne, the Dean having laboured to reconcile the miniſters to each other without ſucceſs, retired to the houſe of a friend in Berkſhire, and never ſaw them more. But, during this retreat, he wrote the following treatiſe, which he thought might be of ſome uſe even in that juncture, and ſent it up to London to be printed: but, upon ſome difference in opinion between the author and the late Lord Bolingbroke, the publication was delayed till the Queen's death; and then he recalled his copy. It was afterwards placed in the hands of the late Alderman Barber, from whom it was obtained to be printed. The ruin of the miniſtry by this animoſity among themſelves was long foreſeen and foretold by Swift; and it appears by Lord Bolingbroke's letter to Sir William Wyndham, that in his heart he renounced his friendſhip for Oxford long before the concluſion of the peace, tho' it did not appear till afterwards. "The peace", ſays he, "which had been judged to be the only ſolid foundation whereupon we could erect a Tory ſyſtem, and yet when it was made we found ourſelves at a ſtand; nay, the very work, which ought to have been the baſis of our ſtrength, was in part demoliſhed before our eyes, and we were ſtoned with "the ruins of it." This event probably rendered the diſunion of the miniſtry viſible; ſome principally endeavouring to ſecure themſelves, ſome ſtill labouring to eſtabliſh at all events the party they had eſpouſed, which ſaw nothing but "encreaſe "of mortification, and nearer approaches to ruin". And it is not to be wondered, that when this treatiſe was written, the Dean's

ſhort, eaſy, ſafe, and lawful way to any good end is not more eligible, than one directly contrary in ſome or all of theſe qualities. I have been frequently aſſured by great miniſters, that politics were nothing but common ſenſe; which, as it was the only true thing they ſpoke, ſo it was the only thing they could have wiſhed I ſhould not believe. God hath given the bulk of mankind a capacity to underſtand reaſon when it is fairly offered; and by reaſon they would eaſily be governed, if it were left to their choice. Thoſe princes in all ages, who were moſt diſtinguiſhed for their myſterious ſkill in government, found by the event, that they had ill conſulted their own quiet, or the eaſe and happineſs of their people; nor hath poſterity remembered them with honour: ſuch as Lyſander and Philip among the Greeks, Tiberius in Rome, Pope Alexander the ſixth and his ſon Cæſar Borgia, Queen Catherine de Medicis, Philip the ſecond of Spain, with many others. Nor are examples leſs frequent of miniſters, famed for men of deep intrigue, whoſe politics have produced little more than murmurings, factions, and diſcontents, which uſually terminated in the diſgrace and ruin of the authors.

I can recollect but three occaſions in a ſtate, where the talents of ſuch men may be thought neceſſary: I mean in a ſtate where the prince is obeyed and loved by his ſubjects: firſt, in the negociation of a peace; ſecondly, in adjuſting the intereſts of our own country with thoſe of the nations round us, watching the ſeveral motions of our neighbours and allies, and preſerving a due balance among them: laſtly, in the management of parties and factions at home. In the firſt of theſe caſes I have often heard it obſerved, that plain good ſenſe and a firm adherence to the point have proved more effectual than all thoſe arts, which I remember a great foreign miniſter

Dean's attempts to reconcile his friends, were unſucceſsful; for Bolingbroke declares, that he abhorred Oxford to ſuch a degree, that he would rather have ſuffered baniſhment or death, than have taken meaſures in concert with him to have avoided either. *Hawkeſ.*

When you have read this pamphlet, *digito compeſce labellum.* Query.

uſed in contempt to call the *ſpirit of negociating*. In the ſecond caſe much wiſdom and a thorough knowledge in affairs both foreign and domeſtic are certainly required; after which I know no talents neceſſary beſides method and ſkill in the common forms of buſineſs. In the laſt caſe, which is that of managing parties, there ſeems indeed to be more occaſion for employing this gift of the lower politics, whenever the tide runs high againſt the court and miniſtry, which ſeldom happens under any tolerable adminiſtration, while the true intereſt of the nation is purſued. But here in England (for I do not pretend to eſtabliſh maxims of government in general) while the prince and miniſtry, the clergy, the majority of landed men, and bulk of the people appear to have the ſame views and the ſame principles, it is not obvious to me, how thoſe at the helm can have many opportunities of ſhewing their ſkill in myſtery and refinement, beſides what themſelves think fit to create.

I have been aſſured by men long practiſed in buſineſs, that the ſecrets of court are much fewer than we generally ſuppoſe; and I hold it for the greateſt ſecret of court, that they are ſo: becauſe the firſt ſprings of great events, like thoſe of great rivers, are often ſo mean and ſo little, that in decency they ought to be hid: and therefore miniſters are ſo wiſe to leave their proceedings to be accounted for by reaſoners at a diſtance, who often mould them into ſyſtems, that do not only go down very well in the coffee-houſe, but are ſupplies for pamphlets in the preſent age, and may probably furniſh materials for memoirs and hiſtories in the next.

IT is true indeed, that even thoſe who are very near the court, and are ſuppoſed to have a large ſhare in the management of public matters, are apt to deduct wrong conſequences by reaſoning upon the cauſes and motives of thoſe actions wherein themſelves are employed. A great miniſter puts you a caſe, and aſks your opinion, but conceals an eſſential circumſtance, upon which the whole weight of the matter turns; then he deſpiſeth your underſtanding for counſelling him no better, and concludes, he ought to truſt entirely to his own wiſdom. Thus he *grows* to abound in ſecrets and reſerves even towards *thoſe*, with whom he ought to act in the greateſt confi-

dence

dence and concert: and thus the world is brought to judge, that whatever be the iſſue and event, it was all foreſeen, contrived, and brought to paſs by ſome maſter-ſtroke of his politics.

I could produce innumerable inſtances, from my own memory and obſervation, of events imputed to the profound ſkill and addreſs of a miniſter, which in reality were either the mere effects of negligence, weakneſs, humour, paſſion, or pride; or at beſt, but the natural courſe of things left to themſelves.

DURING this very ſeſſion of parliament, a moſt ingenious gentleman, who hath much credit with thoſe in power, would needs have it, that in the late diſſenſions at court, which grew too high to be any longer a ſecret, the whole matter was carried with the utmoſt dexterity on one ſide, and with manifeſt ill conduct on the other. To prove this he made uſe of the moſt plauſible topics, drawn from the nature and diſpoſition of the ſeveral perſons concerned, as well as of her Majeſty; all which he knows as much of as any man; and gave me a detail of the whole with ſuch an appearance of probability, as committed to writing would paſs for an admirable piece of ſecret hiſtory. Yet I am at the ſame time convinced by the ſtrongeſt reaſons, that the iſſue of thoſe diſſenſions, as to the part they had in the court and houſe of lords, was partly owing to very different cauſes, and partly to the ſituation of affairs, from whence in that conjuncture they could not eaſily terminate otherwiſe than they did, whatever unhappy conſequences they may have for the future.

IN like manner I have heard a phyſician pronounce with great gravity, that he had cured ſo many patients of malignant fevers, and as many more of the ſmall-pox; whereas in truth nine parts in ten of thoſe who recovered owed their lives to the ſtrength of nature, and a good conſtitution, while ſuch a one happened to be their doctor.

BUT, while it is ſo difficult to learn the ſprings and motives of ſome facts, and ſo eaſy to forget the circumſtances of others, it is no wonder they ſhould be ſo groſsly miſrepreſented to the public by curious inquiſitive heads, who proceed altogether upon conjectures, and in reaſoning upon affairs of ſtate are ſure to be miſtaken by

ſearching too deep. And as I have known this to be the frequent error of many others, ſo I am ſure it hath been perpetually mine, whenever I have attempted to diſcover the cauſes of political events by refinement and conjecture; which I muſt acknowledge hath very much abated my veneration for what they call *arcana imperii*; whereof I dare pronounce, that the fewer there are in any adminiſtration, it is juſt ſo much the better.

WHAT I have hitherto ſaid, hath by no means been intended to detract from the qualities requiſite in thoſe, who are truſted with the adminiſtration of public affairs; on the contrary, I know no ſtation of life, where great abilities and virtues of all kinds are ſo highly neceſſary, and where the want of any is ſo quickly or univerſally felt. A great miniſter hath no virtue for which the public may not be the better, nor any defect by which the public is not certainly a ſufferer. I have known more than once or twice within four years paſt, an omiſſion, in appearance very ſmall, prove almoſt fatal to a whole ſcheme, and very hardly retrieved. It is not always ſufficient for the perſon at the helm, that he is intrepid in his nature, free from any tincture of avarice or corruption, and that he hath great natural and acquired abilities.

I never thought the reputation of much ſecrecy was a character of any advantage to a miniſter, becauſe it put all other men upon their guard to be as ſecret as he, and was conſequently the occaſion that perſons and things were always miſrepreſented to him: becauſe likewiſe too great an affectation of ſecrecy is uſually thought to be attended with thoſe little intrigues and refinements, which among the vulgar denominate a man a great politician; but among others is apt, whether deſervedly or no, to acquire the opinion of cunning; a talent, which differs as much from the true knowledge of government, as that of an attorney from an able lawyer. Neither indeed am I altogether convinced, that this habit of multiplying ſecrets may not be carried on ſo far as to ſtop that communication, which is neceſſary in ſome degree among all who have any conſiderable part in the management of *public* affairs: becauſe I have obſerved the inconveniencies ariſing from a want of love between thoſe who were

to

to give directions, to *have* been of as ill consequence, as any that could happen from the discovery of secrets. I suppose, when a building is to be erected, the model may be the contrivance only of one head; and it is sufficient that the under workmen be ordered to cut stones into certain shapes, and place them in certain positions: but the several master-builders must have some general knowledge of the design, without which they can give no orders at all. And, indeed, I do not know a greater mark of an able minister, than that of rightly adapting the several faculties of men; nor is any thing more to be lamented than the impracticableness of doing this in any great degree under our present circumstances, while so many shut themselves out by adhering to a faction, and while the court is enslaved to the impatience of others, who desire to sell their vote, or their interest, as dear as they can. But whether this hath not been submitted to more than was necessary, whether it hath not been dangerous in the example, and pernicious in the practice, I will leave to the inquiry of those who can better determine.

It may be matter of no little admiration to consider in some lights the state of affairs among us for four years past. The Queen finding herself and the majority of her kingdom grown weary of the avarice and insolence, the mistaken politics, and destructive principles of her former ministers; calls to the service of the public another set of men, who by confession of their enemies had equal abilities at least with their predecessors; whose interest made it necessary for them (altho' their inclinations had been otherwise) to act upon those maxims which were most agreeable to the constitution in church and state; whose birth and patrimonies gave them weight in the nation; and who (I speak of those who were to have the chief part in affairs) had long lived under the strictest bonds in friendship: with all these advantages supported by a vast majority of the landed interest, and the inferior clergy almost to a man, we have several times seen the present administration in the greatest distress, and very near the brink of ruin, together with the cause of the church and monarchy committed to their charge; neither doth it appear to me at the minute I am now writing

ting, that their power or duration are upon any tolerable foot of ſecurity; which I do not ſo much impute to the addreſs and induſtry of their enemies, as to ſome failures among themſelves, which I think have been full as viſible in their cauſes as their effects.

NOTHING hath given me greater indignation than to behold a miniſtry, who came with the advantages I have repreſented, acting ever ſince upon the defenſive in the houſe of Lords with a majority on their ſide; and inſtead of calling others to account, as it was reaſonably expected, miſpending their time, and loſing many opportunities of doing good, becauſe a ſtruggling faction kept them continually in play. This courage among the adverſaries of the court was inſpired into them by various incidents, for every one of which I think the *miniſters*, or (if that was the caſe) the *miniſter* alone is to anſwer.

FOR, firſt, that race of politicians, who in the cant phraſe are called the *whimſicals**, was never ſo numerous, or at leaſt ſo active, as it hath been ſince the great change at court; many of thoſe who pretended wholly to be in with the principles upon which her Majeſty and her new ſervants proceeded, either abſenting themſelves with the utmoſt indifference, in thoſe conjunctures whereon the whole cauſe depended, or ſiding directly with the enemy.

I very well remember, when this miniſtry was not above a year old, there was a little murmuring among ſuch as are called the higher Tories or Churchmen, that quicker progreſs was not made in removing thoſe of the diſcontented party out of employments. I remember likewiſe, the reaſonings upon this matter were various, even among many who were allowed to know a good deal of the inſide of the court; ſome ſuppoſed the Queen was at firſt prevailed on to make that great change with no

* Whimſicals were Tories who had been eager for the concluſion of the peace till the treaties were perfected, then they could come up to no direct approbation. In the clamour raiſed about the danger of the ſucceſſion they joined the Whigs, and declared directly againſt their party, and affected in moſt other points a moſt glorious neutrality. See Bolingbroke's letter to *Wyndham*, p. 48, 49.

no other view than that of acting for the future upon a *moderating ſcheme* in order to reconcile both parties; and I believe there might poſſibly have been ſome grounds for this ſuppoſition. Others conceived the employments were left undiſpoſed of, in order to keep alive the hopes of many more impatient candidates than ever could be gratified. This hath ſince been looked on as a very high ſtrain of politics, and to have ſucceeded accordingly; becauſe it is the opinion of many, that the numerous pretenders to places would never have been kept in order, if all expectation had been cut off. Others were yet more refined; and thought it neither wiſe nor ſafe wholly to extinguiſh all oppoſition from the other ſide; becauſe in the nature of things it was abſolutely neceſſary that there ſhould be parties in an Engliſh parliament: and a faction already odious to the people might be ſuffered to continue with leſs danger, than any new one that could ariſe. To confirm this it was ſaid, that the majority in the houſe of Commons was too great on the ſide of the High-church, and began to form themſelves into a body (by the name of the October club) in order to put the miniſtry under ſubjection. Laſtly, the danger of introducing too great a number of unexperienced men at once into office, was urged as an irrefragable reaſon for making changes by ſlow degrees. To diſcard an able officer from an employment, or part of a commiſſion, where the revenue or trade were concerned, for no other reaſon but differing in ſome principles of government, might be of terrible conſequence.

HOWEVER, it is certain, that none of theſe excuſes were able to paſs among men, who argued only from the principles of general reaſon. For firſt, they looked upon all ſchemes of comprehenſion to be as viſionary and impoſſible in the ſtate, as in the church. Secondly, while the ſpirit raiſed by the trial of Dr Sacheverell continued in motion, men were not ſo keen upon coming *in* themſelves, as to ſee their enemies *out*, and deprived of all aſſiſtance to do miſchief: and it is urged further, that this general ambition of hunting after places grew chiefly from ſeeing them ſo long undiſpoſed of, and from too general an encouragement by promiſes to all, who were thought capable of doing either good or hurt. Two

the fear of creating another party in caſe the preſent faction were wholly ſubdued, was in the opinion of plain men, and in regard to the ſituation of our affairs, too great a ſacrifice of the nation's ſafety to the *genius* of politics; conſidering how much was to be done, and how little time might probably be allowed. Beſides, the diviſion of a houſe of Commons into *court* and *country*-parties, which was the evil they ſeemed to apprehend, could never be dangerous to a good miniſtry, who had the true intereſt and conſtitution of their country at heart: as for the apprehenſion of too great a majority in the houſe of Commons, it appeared to be ſo vain, that upon ſome points of importance the court was hardly able to procure one. And the October-club, which appeared ſo formidable at firſt to ſome politicians, proved in the ſequel to be the chief ſupport of thoſe who ſuſpected them. It was likewiſe very well known that the greateſt part of thoſe men, whom the former miniſtry left in poſſeſſion of employments, were loudly charged with inſufficiency or corruption, over and above their obnoxious tenets in religion and government; ſo that it would have been a matter of ſome difficulty to make a worſe choice: beſides, that plea for keeping men of factious principles in employment upon the ſcore of their abilities, was thought to be extended a little too far, and conſtrued to take in all employments whatſoever, altho' many of them required no more abilities than would ſerve to qualify a gentleman-uſher at court: ſo that this laſt excuſe for the very ſlow ſteps made in diſarming the adverſaries of the crown, was allowed indeed to have more plauſibility, but leſs truth, than any of the former.

I do not here pretend to condemn the counſels or actions of the preſent miniſtry: their ſafety and intereſt are viſibly united with thoſe of the public, they are perſons of unqueſtionable abilities, altogether unſuſpected of avarice or corruption, and have the advantage to be further recommended by the dread and hatred of the oppoſite faction. However, it is manifeſt that the zeal of their friends hath been cooling towards them for above *two* years paſt: they have been frequently deſerted or *diſtreſſed* upon the moſt preſſing occaſions, and very near *giving up* in deſpair: their characters have been often

treated

treated with the utmoſt barbarity and injuſtice in both houſes by ſtrolling and enraged orators; while their neareſt friends, and even thoſe who muſt have a ſhare in their diſgrace, never offered a word in their vindication.

When I examine with myſelf what occaſions the miſery may have given for this coldneſs, inconſtancy and diſcontent among their friends, I at the ſame time recollect the various conjectures, ruminings and ſuſpicions, which have run ſo freely for theſe years paſt, concerning the deſigns of the court: I do not only mean ſuch conjectures as are born in a coffee-houſe, or invented by the malice of a party; but alſo the concluſions (however miſtaken) of wiſe and good men, whoſe quality and ſtation fitted them to underſtand the ſyſtem of public proceedings, and in whoſe power it lay to recommend or diſgrace an adminiſtration to the people. I muſt therefore take the boldneſs to aſſert, that all theſe diſcontents, how ruinous ſoever they may prove in the conſequences, have moſt unneceſſarily ariſen from the want of a due communication and concert. Every man muſt have a light ſufficient for the length of the way he is appointed to go: there is a degree of confidence due to all ſtations; and a petty trouble will neither act chearfully or wiſely without that ſhare of it which properly belongs to him: altho' the main ſpring in a watch be out of ſight, there is an intermediate communication between it and the ſmalleſt wheel, or elſe no uſeful motion could be performed. This reſerved myſterious way of acting upon points, where there appeared not the leaſt occaſion for it, and towards perſons, who at leaſt, in right of their poſts, expected a more open treatment, was imputed to ſome hidden deſign, which every man conjectured to be the very thing he was moſt afraid of. Thoſe who profeſſed the height of what is called the church-principle, ſuſpected, that a *comprehenſion* was intended, wherein the *moderate* men on both ſides might be equally employed. Others went farther, and dreaded ſuch a comprehenſion, as directly tended to bring the old exploded principles and perſons once more into play. Again, ſome affected to be uneaſy about the ſucceſſion, and ſeemed to think there was a view of introducing that perſon, whatever he is, who pretends to claim the crown by inheritance.

Others,

Others, especially of late, surmised on the contrary, that the demands of the house of Hanover were industriously fomented by some in power, without the privity of the ——or——. Now, altho' these accusations were too inconsistent to be all of them true, yet they were maliciously suffered to pass, and thereby took off much of that popularity, which those at the helm stood in need of to support them under the difficulties of a long perplexing negociation, a daily addition of public debts, and an exhausted treasury.

BUT the effects of this mystical manner of proceeding did not end here: for the late dissensions between the great men at court (which have been, for some time past, the public entertainment of every coffee-house) are said to have arisen from the same fountain; while on one side very great reserve, and certainly very great resentment on the other*, if we may believe general report (for I pretend to know no farther) have inflamed animosities to such a height, as to make all reconcilement impracticable. Supposing this to be true, it may serve for a great lesson of humiliation to mankind, to behold the habits and passions of men, otherwise highly accomplished, triumphing over interest, friendship, honour, and their own personal safety, as well as that of their country, and probably of a most gracious princess who hath entrusted it to them. A ship's crew quarrelling in a storm, or while their enemies are within gun-shot, is but a faint idea of this fatal infatuation: of which, altho' it be hard to say enough, some people may think perhaps I have already said too much.

SINCE this unhappy incident, the desertion of friends and loss of reputation have been so great, that I do not see how the ministers could have continued many weeks in their stations, if their opposers of all kinds had agreed about the methods by which they should be ruined: and their preservation hitherto seems to resemble his, who had two poisons given him together of contrary operations.

IT may seem very impertinent in one of my level to point

* Lord Oxford's reserve was the cause of Bolingbroke's resentment. *Hawkes.*

point out to those, who sit at the helm, what course they ought to steer. I know enough of courts to be sensible, how mean an opinion great ministers have of most mens understanding; to a degree, that in any other science would be called the grossest pedantry. However, unless I offer my sentiments in this point, all I have hitherto said, will be to no purpose.

The general wishes and desires of a people are perhaps more obvious to other men, than to ministers of state. There are two points of the highest importance, wherein a very great majority of the kingdom appear perfectly hearty and unanimous. First, that the church of England should be preserved entire in all her rights, powers and privileges; all doctrines relating to government discouraged, which she condemns; all schisms, sects and heresies discountenanced and kept under due subjection, as far as consists with the lenity of our constitution; her open enemies (among whom I include at least dissenters of all denominations) not trusted with the smallest degree of civil or military power; and her secret adversaries under the names of Whigs, Low-church, Republicans, Moderation-men and the like, receive no marks of favour from the crown, but what they should deserve by a sincere reformation.

Had this point been steadily pursued in all its parts, for three years past, and asserted as the avowed resolution of the court, there must probably have been an end of faction, which hath been able ever since with so much vigour to disturb and insult the administration. I know very well, that some refiners pretend to argue for the usefulness of parties in such a government as ours: I have said something of this already, and have heard a great many idle wise topics upon the subject. But I shall not argue that matter at present: I suppose, if a man thinks it necessary to *play* with a *serpent*, he will chuse one of a kind that is least mischievous; otherwise, altho' it appears to be crushed, it may have life enough to sting him to death. So, I think it is not safe tampering with the present faction, at least in this juncture: first, because their principles and practices have been already very dangerous to the constitution in church and state: secondly, because they are highly irritated with the loss

of

of their power, full of venom and vengeance, and prepared to execute every thing that rage or malice can ſuggeſt: but principally, becauſe they have prevailed by miſrepreſentations and other artifices to make the ſucceſſor look upon them as the only perſons he can truſt: upon which account they cannot be too ſoon, or too much diſabled: neither will England ever be ſafe from the attempts of this wicked confederacy, until their ſtrength and intereſt ſhall be ſo far reduced, that for the future it ſhall not be in the power of the crown, altho' in conjunction with any rich and factious body of men, to chuſe an ill majority in the houſe of Commons.

ONE ſtep very neceſſary to this great work will be to regulate the army, and chiefly thoſe troops which in their turns have the care of her Majeſty's perſon; who are moſt of them fitter to guard a Prince under an *high court of juſtice*, than ſeated on the throne. The peculiar hand of providence hath hitherto preſerved her Majeſty, encompaſſed, whether ſleeping or travelling, by her enemies: but ſince religion teacheth us, that providence ought not to be tempted, it is ill venturing to truſt that precious life any longer to thoſe, who by their public behaviour and diſcourſe diſcover their impatience to ſee it at an end; that they may have liberty to be the inſtruments of glutting at once the revenge of their patrons and their own. It ſhould be well remembered, what a ſatisfaction theſe gentlemen (after the example of their betters) were ſo ſanguine to expreſs upon the Queen's laſt illneſs at Windſor, and what threatnings they uſed of refuſing to obey their general, in caſe that illneſs had proved fatal. Nor do I think it a want of charity to ſuſpect, that in ſuch an evil day an enraged faction would be highly pleaſed with the power of the ſword, and with great connivance leave it ſo long unſheathed, until they were got rid of their moſt formidable adverſaries. In the mean time it muſt be a very melancholy proſpect, that whenever it ſhall pleaſe God to viſit us with this calamity, thoſe who are paid to be defenders of the civil power, will ſtand ready for any acts of violence, that a Junta compoſed of the greateſt *enemies* to the conſtitution ſhall think fit to enjoin them.

THE other point of great importance is the ſecurity of

the

the Proteſtant ſucceſſion in the houſe of Hanover: not from any partiality to that illuſtrious houſe, further than as it hath had the honour to mingle with the blood royal of England, and is the neareſt branch of our regal line reformed from popery. This point hath one advantage over the former, that both parties profeſs to deſire the ſame bleſſing for poſterity, but differ about the means of ſecuring it. From whence it hath come to paſs, that the Proteſtant ſucceſſion, in appearance the deſire of the whole nation, hath proved the greateſt topic of ſlander, jealouſy, ſuſpicion and diſcontent.

I have been ſo curious to aſk ſeveral acquaintance among the oppoſite party, whether they, or their leaders, did really ſuſpect there had been ever any deſign in the miniſtry to weaken the ſucceſſion in favour of the *Pretender*, or of any other perſon whatſoever. Some of them freely anſwered in the negative: others were of the ſame opinion, but added, they did not know what might be done in time, and upon farther provocations: others again ſeemed to believe the affirmative, but could never produce any plauſible grounds for their belief. I have likewiſe been aſſured by a perſon of ſome conſequence, that during a very near and conſtant familiarity with the great men at court for four years paſt, he never could obſerve, even in thoſe hours of converſation where there is uſually leaſt reſtraint, that one word ever paſſed among them to ſhew a diſlike to the preſent ſettlement; altho' they would ſometimes lament, that the falſe repreſentations of their's and the kingdom's enemies had made ſome impreſſions in the mind of the ſucceſſor. As to my own circle of acquaintance I can ſafely affirm, that excepting thoſe who are *nonjurors* by profeſſion, I have not met with above two perſons who appeared to have any ſcruples concerning the preſent limitation of the crown. I therefore think it may very impartially be pronounced, that the number of thoſe, who wiſh to ſee the ſon of the abdicated prince upon the throne, is altogether inconſiderable. And further, I believe it will be found, that there are none who ſo much dread any attempt he ſhall make for the recovery of his imagined rights, as the Roman Catholics of England; who love their freedom and properties too well to deſire his entrance by a French

army, and a field of blood; who muſt continue upon the ſame foot if he changeth his religion, and muſt expect to be the firſt and greateſt ſufferers if he ſhould happen to fail.

As to the perſon of this nominal prince, he lies under all manner of diſadvantages: the vulgar imagine him to have been a child impoſed upon the nation by the fraudulent zeal of his parents and their bigotted counſellors; who took ſpecial care, againſt all the rules of common policy, to educate him in their hateful ſuperſtition, ſucked in with his milk, and confirmed in his manhood, too ſtrong to be now ſhaken by Mr Leſley *; and a counterfeit converſion will be too groſs to paſs upon the kingdom, after what we have ſeen and ſuffered from the like practice in his father. He is likewiſe ſaid to be of weak intellectuals, and an unſound conſtitution; he was treated contemptibly enough by the young princes of France, even during the war; is now wholly neglected by that crown, and driven to live in exile upon a ſmall exhibition: he is utterly unknown in England, which he left in the cradle: his father's friends are moſt of them dead, the reſt antiquated or poor. Six and twenty years have almoſt paſt ſince the *revolution*, and the bulk of thoſe who are now moſt in action either at court, in parliament, or public offices, were then boys at ſchool or the univerſities, and look upon that great change to have happened during a period of time for which they are not accountable. The logic of the higheſt tories is now, that this was the eſtabliſhment they found, as ſoon as they arrived to a capacity of judging; that they had no hand in turning out the late king, and therefore have no crime to anſwer for, if it were any: that the inheritance to the crown is fixed in purſuance of laws made ever ſince their remembrance, by which all Papiſts are excluded, and they have no other rule to go by: that they will no more diſpute King William the *third*'s title, than King William the

* Leſley was a nonjuring clergyman, who wrote a letter from Barleduc in Lorrain, the place of the Pretender's reſidence, addreſſed to a member of Parliament in London, in praiſe and on behalf of his prince. The letter was printed, and publicly handed about in London. *Hawkeſ.*

the *firſt*'s; ſince they muſt have recourſe to hiſtory for both: that they have been inſtructed in the doctrines of paſſive obedience, non-reſiſtance, and hereditary right, and find them all neceſſary for preſerving the preſent eſtabliſhment in church and ſtate, and for continuing the ſucceſſion in the houſe of Hanover, and muſt in their own opinion renounce all thoſe doctrines by ſetting up any other title to the crown. This, I ſay, ſeems to be the political creed of all the high-principled men I have for ſome time met with of forty years old and under; which altho' I do not pretend to juſtify in every part, yet I am ſure it ſets the Proteſtant ſucceſſion upon a much firmer foundation, than all the indigeſted ſchemes of thoſe who profeſs to act upon what they call *revolution-principles*.

NEITHER ſhould it perhaps be ſoon forgotten, that during the greateſt licentiouſneſs of the preſs, while the ſacred character of the Queen was every day inſulted in factious papers and ballads, not the leaſt reflecting inſinuation ever appeared againſt the Hanoverian family, whatever occaſion was offered to intemperate pens by the raſhneſs or indiſcretion of one or two miniſters from thence.

FROM all theſe conſiderations, I muſt therefore lay it down as an inconteſtable truth, that the ſucceſſion to theſe kingdoms in the illuſtrious houſe of Hanover is as firmly ſecured as the nature of the thing can poſſibly admit; by the oaths of all thoſe who are entruſted with any office, by the very principles of thoſe who are termed the *high-church*, by the general inclinations of the people, by the inſignificancy of that perſon who claims it from inheritance, and the little aſſiſtance he can expect either from princes abroad or adherents at home.

HOWEVER, ſince the virulent oppoſers of the Queen and her adminiſtration have ſo far prevailed by their emiſſaries at the court of Hanover, and by their practices upon one or two ignorant, unmannerly *meſſengers* from thence, as to make the *elector* deſire ſome farther ſecurity, and ſend over a *memorial* here to that end: the great queſtion is how to give reaſonable ſatisfaction to his Highneſs, and (what is infinitely of greater conſequence) at the ſame time conſult the honour and ſafety of the Queen, whoſe quiet *poſſeſſion* is of much more conſequence

to us of the preſent age, than his *reverſion*. The ſubſtance of his *memorial*, if I retain it right, is to deſire that ſome one of his family might live in England, with ſuch a maintenance as is uſual to thoſe of the royal blood, and that certain *titles* ſhould be conferred upon the reſt according to antient cuſtom. The *memorial* doth not ſpecify which of the family ſhould be invited to reſide here; and if it had, I believe however, her Majeſty would have looked upon it as a circumſtance left to her own choice.

BUT, as all this is moſt manifeſtly unneceſſary in itſelf, and only in compliance with the miſtaken doubts of a preſumptive heir; ſo the nation would (to ſpeak in the language of Mr Steel) EXPECT, that her Majeſty ſhould be made perfectly eaſy from that ſide for the future; no more to be alarmed with apprehenſions of *viſits*, or *demands of writs*, where * ſhe hath not thought fit to give any *invitation*. The nation would likewiſe *expect*, that there ſhould be an end of all private commerce between that court and the leaders of a party here; and, that his Electoral *Highneſs* ſhould *declare* himſelf entirely ſatisfied with all her Majeſty's proceedings, her treaties of peace and commerce, her alliances abroad, her choice of miniſters at home, and particularly in her moſt gracious condeſcenſions to his requeſt; that he would upon all proper occaſions, and in the moſt public manner, diſcover his utter diſlike of factious perſons and principles, but eſpecially of that party, which under the pretence or ſhelter of his protection hath ſo long diſquieted the kingdom: and laſtly, that he would acknowledge the goodneſs of the Queen, and juſtice of the nation, in ſo fully ſecuring the ſucceſſion to his family.

IT is indeed a problem which I could never comprehend, why the court of Hanover, who have all along thought themſelves ſo perfectly ſecure in the affections, the

* Baron Schutz, Envoy Extraordinary from the Elector of Hanover, demanded a *writ* for the Electoral Prince to ſit in the Houſe of Peers as Duke of Cambridge; and it was expected, that his Highneſs would have made a viſit to the Court of London. *Hawkeſ.*

the principles and the profeſſions of the *low-church* party, ſhould not have endeavoured, according to the uſual politics of princes, to gain over thoſe who were repreſented as their enemies; ſince theſe ſuppoſed enemies had made ſo many advances, were in poſſeſſion of all the power, had framed the very ſettlement to which that illuſtrious family owes its claim; had all of them abjured the Pretender; were now employed in the great offices of ſtate, and compoſed a majority in both houſes of parliament. Not to mention, that the Queen herſelf, with the bulk of the landed gentry and commonalty throughout the kingdom, were of the number. This one would think might be a ſtrength ſufficient not only to *abſtruct* but to *beſtow* a ſucceſſion: and ſince the preſumed heir could not but be perfectly ſecure of the other party, whoſe greateſt avowed grievance was the pretended danger of his future rights; it might therefore ſurely have been worth his while to have made at leaſt one ſtep towards cultivating a fair correſpondence with the power in poſſeſſion. Neither could thoſe, who are called his friends, have blamed him, or with the leaſt decency enter into any engagements for defeating his title.

BUT why may not the reaſons of this proceeding in the *elector* be directly contrary to what is commonly imagined? Methinks I could endeavour to believe, that his Highneſs is thoroughly acquainted with both parties; is convinced, that no true member of the church of England can eaſily be ſhaken in his principles of loyalty, or forget the obligation of an oath, by any provocation. That *theſe* are therefore the people he intends to rely upon, and keeps only fair with the *others* from a *true* notion he hath of their doctrines, which prompt them to forget their duty upon every motive of intereſt or ambition. If this conjecture be right, his Highneſs cannot ſure but entertain a very high eſteem of ſuch miniſters, who continue to act under the dread and appearance of a ſucceſſor's utmoſt diſpleaſure, and the threats of an enraged faction, whom he is ſuppoſed alone to favour, and to be guided entirely in his judgment of Britiſh affairs and perſons by their opinions.

BUT to return from this digreſſion: the preſence of that

infant prince* among us could not, I think, in any ſort be inconſiſtent with the ſafety of the Queen; he would be in no danger of being corrupted in his principles, or expoſed in his perſon by vicious companions; he could be at the head of no factious clubs and cabals, nor be attended by a hired rabble, which his flatterers might repreſent as popularity; he would have none of that impatience which the frailty of human nature gives to expecting heirs: there would be no pretence for men to make their court by affecting German modes and *refinements* in dreſs or behaviour; nor would there be an occaſion of inſinuating to him, how much more his levee was frequented than the anti-chambers of St. James's. Add to all this, the advantages of being educated in our religion, laws, language, manners, nature of the government, each ſo very different from thoſe he would leave behind. By which likewiſe he might be highly uſeful to his father, if that prince ſhould happen to ſurvive her Majeſty.

THE late King William, who after his marriage with the Lady Mary of England, could have no probable expectation of the crown, and very little even of being a Queen's huſband (the Duke of York having a young wife) was no ſtranger to our language or manners, and went often to the chapel of his Princeſs; which I obſerve the rather, becauſe I could heartily wiſh the like diſpoſition were in another court, and becauſe it may be diſagreeable to a Prince to take up new doctrines on a ſudden, or ſpeak to his ſubjects by an interpreter.

AN ill-natured or inquiſitive man may ſtill, perhaps, deſire to preſs the queſtion farther, by aſking, what is to be done, in caſe it ſhould ſo happen, that this malevolent working party at home hath credit enough with the court of Hanover to continue the ſuſpicion, jealouſy, and uneaſineſs there againſt the Queen and her miniſtry; to make ſuch demands be ſtill inſiſted on, as are by no means thought proper to be complied with; and in the mean time

* *The* infant prince was the ſon of the Electoral Prince of *Hanover*, who might be choſen to reſide here in conſequence of *the memorial*. See p. 378. Hawkeſ.

time to ſtand at arm's length with her Majeſty, and in cloſe conjunction with thoſe who oppoſe her.

I take the anſwer to be eaſy: in all conteſts the ſafeſt way is to put thoſe we diſpute with, as much *in the wrong* as we can. When her Majeſty ſhall have offered ſuch or the like conceſſions as I have above mentioned, in order to remove thoſe ſcruples artificially raiſed in the mind of the expectant heir, and to divide him from that faction by which he is ſuppoſed to have been miſled; ſhe hath done as much as any Prince can do, and more than any other would probably do in her caſe; and will be juſtified before God and man, whatever be the event. The equitable part of thoſe, who now ſide againſt the court, will probably be more temperate; and if a due diſpatch be made in placing the civil and military power in the hands of ſuch as wiſh well to the conſtitution, it cannot be any way for the quiet or intereſt of a ſucceſſor to gratify ſo ſmall a faction, as will probably then remain, at the expence of a much more numerous and conſiderable part of his ſubjects. Neither do I ſee how the principles of ſuch a party, either in religion or government, will prove very agreeable, becauſe I think Luther and Calvin ſeem to have differed as much as any two among the reformers: and, becauſe a German Prince will probably be ſuſpicious of thoſe, who think they can never depreſs the prerogative enough.

But ſuppoſing once for all, as far as poſſible, that the *elector* ſhould utterly refuſe to be upon any terms of confidence with the preſent miniſtry, and all others of their principles, as enemies to him and the ſucceſſion; nor eaſy with the Queen herſelf: but upon ſuch conditions as will not be thought *conſiſtent with her ſafety and honour*; and continue to place all his hopes and truſt in the diſcontented party. I think it were humbly to be wiſhed, that whenever the ſucceſſion ſhall take place, the alterations intended by the new Prince ſhould be made by *himſelf*, and not by his *deputies*: becauſe I am of opinion, that the clauſe empowering the ſucceſſor to appoint a *latent, unlimited* number, additional to the ſeven *regents* named in the *act*, went upon a ſuppoſition, that the *ſecret committee* would be of ſuch, whoſe enmity and contrary principles diſpoſed them to confound the reſt. King William,

William, whoſe title was much more controverted than that of her Majeſty's ſucceſſor can ever probably be, did for ſeveral years leave the adminiſtration of the kingdom in the hands of Lords Juſtices, during the height of a war, and while the abdicated Prince himſelf was frequently attempting an invaſion: from whence one might imagine, that the regents appointed by parliament upon the demiſe of the crown, would be able to keep the peace during an abſence of a *few* weeks without any *colleagues*. However, I am pretty confident that the only reaſon, why a power was given of chuſing *dormant* viceroys, was to take away all pretence of a neceſſity to invite over *any* of the family here, during her Majeſty's life. So that I do not well apprehend what arguments the *elector* can uſe to inſiſt upon *both*.

To conclude; the only way of ſecuring the conſtitution in church and ſtate, and conſequently this very Proteſtant ſucceſſion itſelf, will be, by leſſening the power of our domeſtic adverſaries as much as can poſſibly conſiſt with the lenity of our government; and, if this be not ſpeedily done, it will be eaſy to point where the nation is to fix the blame: for we are well aſſured, that ſince the account her Majeſty received of the cabals, the triumphs, the inſolent behaviour of the whole faction during her late illneſs at Windſor, ſhe hath been as willing to ſee them deprived of all power to do miſchief, as any of her moſt zealous and loyal ſubjects can deſire.

THOUGHTS

THOUGHTS

ON

VARIOUS SUBJECTS.

WE have just enough religion to make us hate, but not enough to make us love one another.

REFLECT on things past, as wars, negotiations, factions, &c. we enter so little into these interests, that we wonder how men could possibly be so busy and concerned for things so transitory; look on the present times, we find the same humour, yet wonder not at all.

A wise man endeavours, by considering all circumstances, to make conjectures, and form conclusions; but the smallest accident interveening (and in the course of affairs it is impossible to foresee all) does often produce such turns and changes, that at last he is just as much in doubt of events as the most ignorant and unexperienced person.

POSITIVENESS is a good quality for preachers and orators, because he that would obtrude his thoughts and reasons upon a multitude, will convince others the more, as he appears convinced himself.

How is it possible to expect that mankind will take advice, when they will not so much as take warning?

I forget whether advice be among the lost things, which Ariosto says are to be found in the moon; that and time ought to have been there.

No preacher is listened to but time, which gives us the same train and turn of thought, that elder people have tried in vain to put into our heads before.

WHEN we desire or sollicit any thing, our minds run wholly on the good side or circumstances of it; when it is obtained, our minds run wholly on the bad ones.

IN a *glass-house* the workmen often fling in a small quantity of fresh coals, which seems to disturb the fire, but very much enlivens it. This seems to allude to a gentle stirring of the passions, that the mind may not languish.

RELIGION seems to have grown an infant with age, *and requires* miracles to nurse it, as it had in its infancy.

ALL

ALL fits of pleaſure are balanced by an equal degree of pain or languor; it is like ſpending this year part of the next year's revenue.

THE latter part of a wiſe man's life is taken up in curing the follies, prejudices, and falſe opinions he had contracted in the former.

WOULD a writer know how to behave himſelf with relation to poſterity, let him conſider in old books what he finds that he is glad to know, and what omiſſions he moſt laments.

WHATEVER the poets pretend, it is plain they give immortality to none but themſelves: it is Homer and Virgil we reverence and admire, not Achilles or Æneas. With hiſtorians it is quite the contrary; our thoughts are taken up with the actions, perſons, and events we read, and we little regard the authors.

WHEN a true genius appears in the world, you may know him by this ſign, that the dunces are all in confederacy againſt him.

MEN who poſſeſs all the advantages of life, are in a ſtate where there are many accidents to diſorder and diſcompoſe, but few to pleaſe them.

IT is unwiſe to puniſh cowards with ignominy; for if they had regarded that, they would not have been cowards: death is their proper puniſhment, becauſe they fear it moſt.

THE greateſt inventions were produced in the times of ignorance; as the uſe of the *compaſs*, *gunpowder*, and *printing*; and by the dulleſt nation, as the Germans.

ONE argument to prove that the common relations of *ghoſts* and *ſpectres* are generally falſe, may be drawn from the opinion held, that ſpirits are never ſeen by more than one perſon at a time; that is to ſay, it ſeldom happens to above one perſon in a company to be poſſeſſed with any high degree of ſpleen or melancholy.

I am apt to think, that in the day of judgment there will be ſmall allowance given to the wiſe for their want of morals, and to the ignorant for their want of faith, becauſe both are without excuſe. This renders the advantages equal of ignorance and knowledge. But ſome ſcruples in the wiſe, and ſome vices in the ignorant, will perhaps be forgiven upon the ſtrength of temptation to each.

THE

THE value of ſeveral circumſtances in ſtory leſſens very much by diſtance of time, tho' ſome minute circumſtances are very valuable; and it requires great judgment in a writer to diſtinguiſh.

IT is grown a word of courſe for writers to ſay, This critical age; as divines ſay, This ſinful age.

IT is pleaſant to obſerve how free the preſent age is in laying taxes on the next: *Future ages ſhall talk of this; this ſhall be famous to all poſterity:* whereas their time and thoughts will be taken up about preſent things, as ours are now.

THE *camelion*, who is ſaid to feed upon nothing but air, hath of all animals the nimbleſt tongue.

WHEN a man is made a ſpiritual peer he loſes his ſirname; when a temporal, his Chriſtian name.

IT is in diſputes as in armies, where the weaker ſide ſets up falſe lights, and makes a great noiſe, to make the enemy believe them more numerous and ſtrong than they really are.

SOME men, under the notions of weeding out prejudices, eradicate virtue, honeſty, and religion.

IN all well-inſtituted commonwealths, care has been taken to limit mens poſſeſſions; which is done for many reaſons, and among the reſt, for one which perhaps is not often conſidered, that when bounds are ſet to mens deſires, after they have acquired as much as the laws will permit them, their private intereſt is at an end, and they have nothing to do but to take care of the public.

THERE are but three ways for a man to revenge himſelf of the cenſure of the world; to deſpiſe it, to return the like, or to endeavour to live ſo as to avoid it: the firſt of theſe is uſually pretended, the laſt is almoſt impoſſible, the univerſal practice is for the ſecond.

HERODOTUS tells us, that in cold countries beaſts very ſeldom have horns, but in hot they have very large ones. This might bear a pleaſant application.

I never heard a finer piece of ſatire againſt *lawyers*, than that of *aſtrologers*, when they pretend by rules of art to tell when a ſuit will end, and whether to the advantage of the plaintiff or defendant; thus making the matter depend entirely upon the influence of the ſtars, *without the leaſt* regard to the merits of the cauſe.

THE

THE expreſſion in Apocrypha about Tobit and his dog following him I have often heard ridiculed, yet Homer has the ſame words of Telemachus more than once; and Virgil ſays ſomething like it of Evander. And I take the book of Tobit to be partly poetical.

I have known ſome men poſſeſſed of good qualities, which were very ſerviceable to others, but uſeleſs to themſelves; like a ſun-dial on the front of a houſe, to inform the neighbours and paſſengers, but not the owner within.

IF a man would regiſter all his opinions upon love, politics, religion, learning, &c. beginning from his youth and ſo go on to old age, what a bundle of inconſiſtencies and contradictions would appear at laſt?

WHAT they do in heaven we are ignorant of; what they do not we are told expreſsly, that they neither marry, nor are given in marriage.

WHEN a man obſerves the choice of ladies now-a-days in the diſpenſing of their favours, can he forbear paying ſome veneration to the memory of thoſe mares mentioned by Xenophon*, who, while their manes were on, that is, while they were in their beauty, would never admit the embraces of an aſs.

IT is a miſerable thing to live in ſuſpence: it is the life of a ſpider.

Vive quidem, pende tamen, improba, dixit.
Ovid Metam.

THE Stoical ſcheme of ſupplying our wants by lopping off our deſires, is like cutting off our feet when we want ſhoes.

PHYSICIANS ought not to give their judgment of religion, for the ſame reaſon that butchers are not admitted to be jurors upon life and death.

THE reaſon why ſo few marriages are happy, is becauſe young ladies ſpend their time in making nets, not in making cages.

IF a man will obſerve as he walks the ſtreets, I believe he will find the merrieſt countenances in mourning-coaches.

NOTHING more unqualifies a man to act with prudence, than a misfortune that is attended with ſhame and guilt.

THE

* De Re Equeſtri.

THE power of fortune is confeſſed only by the miſerable; for the happy impute all their ſucceſs to prudence or merit.

AMBITION often puts men upon doing the meaneſt offices; ſo climbing is performed in the ſame poſture with creeping.

ILL company is like a dog, who dirts thoſe moſt whom he loves beſt.

CENSURE is the tax a man pays to the public for being eminent.

ALTHO' men are accuſed for not knowing their own weakneſs, yet perhaps as few know their own ſtrength. It is in men as in ſoils, where ſometimes there is a vein of gold which the owner knows not of.

SATIRE is reckoned the eaſieſt of all wit; but I take it to be otherwiſe in very bad times: for it is as hard to ſatirize well a man of diſtinguiſhed vices, as to praiſe well a man of diſtinguiſhed virtues. It is eaſy enough to do either to people of moderate characters.

INVENTION is the talent of youth, and judgment of age; ſo that our judgment grows harder to pleaſe, when we have fewer things to offer it: this goes thro' the whole commerce of life. When we are old, our friends find it difficult to pleaſe us, and are leſs concerned whether we be pleaſed or no.

No wiſe man ever wiſhed to be younger.

AN idle reaſon leſſens the weight of the good ones you gave before.

THE motives of the beſt actions will not bear too ſtrict an inquiry. It is allowed, that the cauſe of moſt actions, good or bad, may be reſolved into the love of ourſelves; but the ſelf-love of ſome men inclines them to pleaſe others; and the ſelf-love of others is wholly employed in pleaſing themſelves. This makes the great diſtinction between virtue and vice. Religion is the beſt motive of all actions, yet religion is allowed to be the higheſt inſtance of ſelf-love.

WHEN the world has once begun to uſe us ill, it afterwards continues the ſame treatment with leſs ſcruple or ceremony, as men do to a whore.

William, whoſe title was much more controverted than that of her Majeſty's ſucceſſor can ever probably be, did for ſeveral years leave the adminiſtration of the kingdom in the hands of Lords Juſtices, during the height of a war, and while the abdicated Prince himſelf was frequently attempting an invaſion: from whence one might imagine, that the regents appointed by parliament upon the demiſe of the crown, would be able to keep the peace during an abſence of a *few* weeks without any *colleagues*. However, I am pretty confident that the only reaſon, why a power was given of chuſing *dormant* viceroys, was to take away all pretence of a neceſſity to invite over *any* of the family here, during her Majeſty's life. So that I do not well apprehend what arguments the *elector* can uſe to inſiſt upon *both*.

To conclude; the only way of ſecuring the conſtitution in church and ſtate, and conſequently this very Proteſtant ſucceſſion itſelf, will be, by leſſening the power of our domeſtic adverſaries as much as can poſſibly conſiſt with the lenity of our government; and, if this be not ſpeedily done, it will be eaſy to point where the nation is to fix the blame: for we are well aſſured, that ſince the account her Majeſty received of the cabals, the triumphs, the inſolent behaviour of the whole faction during her late illneſs at Windſor, ſhe hath been as willing to ſee them deprived of all power to do miſchief, as any of her moſt zealous and loyal ſubjects can deſire.

THOUGHTS

THOUGHTS

ON

VARIOUS SUBJECTS.

WE have just enough religion to make us hate, but not enough to make us love one another.

REFLECT on things past, as wars, negotiations, factions, &c. we enter so little into these interests, that we wonder how men could possibly be so busy and concerned for things so transitory; look on the present times, we find the same humour, yet wonder not at all.

A wise man endeavours, by considering all circumstances, to make conjectures, and form conclusions; but the smallest accident interveening (and in the course of affairs it is impossible to foresee all) does often produce such turns and changes, that at last he is just as much in doubt of events as the most ignorant and unexperienced person.

POSITIVENESS is a good quality for preachers and orators, because he that would obtrude his thoughts and reasons upon a multitude, will convince others the more, as he appears convinced himself.

How is it possible to expect that mankind will take advice, when they will not so much as take warning?

I forget whether advice be among the lost things, which Ariosto says are to be found in the moon; that and time ought to have been there.

No preacher is listened to but time, which gives us the same train and turn of thought, that elder people have tried in vain to put into our heads before.

WHEN we desire or solicit any thing, our minds run wholly on the good side or circumstances of it; when it is obtained, our minds run wholly on the bad ones.

IN a *glass-house* the workmen often fling in a small quantity of fresh coals, which seems to disturb the fire, but very much enlivens it. This seems to allude to a gentle stirring of the passions, that the mind may not languish.

RELIGION seems to have grown an infant with age, and requires miracles to nurse it, as it had in its infancy.

&c.

ALL fits of pleaſure are balanced by an equal degree of pain or languor; it is like ſpending this year part of the next year's revenue.

THE latter part of a wiſe man's life is taken up in curing the follies, prejudices, and falſe opinions he had contracted in the former.

WOULD a writer know how to behave himſelf with relation to poſterity, let him conſider in old books what he finds that he is glad to know, and what omiſſions he moſt laments.

WHATEVER the poets pretend, it is plain they give immortality to none but themſelves: it is Homer and Virgil we reverence and admire, not Achilles or Æneas. With hiſtorians it is quite the contrary; our thoughts are taken up with the actions, perſons, and events we read, and we little regard the authors.

WHEN a true genius appears in the world, you may know him by this ſign, that the dunces are all in confederacy againſt him.

MEN who poſſeſs all the advantages of life, are in a ſtate where there are many accidents to diſorder and diſcompoſe, but few to pleaſe them.

IT is unwiſe to puniſh cowards with ignominy; for if they had regarded that, they would not have been cowards: death is their proper puniſhment, becauſe they fear it moſt.

THE greateſt inventions were produced in the times of ignorance; as the uſe of the *compaſs*, *gunpowder*, and *printing*; and by the dulleſt nation, as the Germans.

ONE argument to prove that the common relations of *ghoſts* and *ſpectres* are generally falſe, may be drawn from the opinion held, that ſpirits are never ſeen by more than one perſon at a time; that is to ſay, it ſeldom happens to above one perſon in a company to be poſſeſſed with any high degree of ſpleen or melancholy.

I am apt to think, that in the day of judgment there will be ſmall allowance given to the wiſe for their want of morals, and to the ignorant for their want of faith, becauſe both are without excuſe. This renders the advantages equal of ignorance and knowledge. But ſome *ſcruples* in the wiſe, and ſome vices in the ignorant, will *perhaps* be forgiven upon the ſtrength of temptation to each.

THE

THE value of ſeveral circumſtances in ſtory leſſens very much by diſtance of time, tho' ſome minute circumſtances are very valuable; and it requires great judgment in a writer to diſtinguiſh.

IT is grown a word of courſe for writers to ſay, This critical age; as divines ſay, This ſinful age.

IT is pleaſant to obſerve how free the preſent age is in laying taxes on the next: *Future ages ſhall talk of this; this ſhall be famous to all poſterity:* whereas their time and thoughts will be taken up about preſent things, as ours are now.

THE *camelion*, who is ſaid to feed upon nothing but air, hath of all animals the nimbleſt tongue.

WHEN a man is made a ſpiritual peer he loſes his ſirname; when a temporal, his Chriſtian name.

IT is in diſputes as in armies, where the weaker ſide ſets up falſe lights, and makes a great noiſe, to make the enemy believe them more numerous and ſtrong than they really are.

SOME men, under the notions of weeding out prejudices, eradicate virtue, honeſty, and religion.

IN all well-inſtituted commonwealths, care has been taken to limit mens poſſeſſions; which is done for many reaſons, and among the reſt, for one which perhaps is not often conſidered, that when bounds are ſet to mens deſires, after they have acquired as much as the laws will permit them, their private intereſt is at an end, and they have nothing to do but to take care of the public.

THERE are but three ways for a man to revenge himſelf of the cenſure of the world; to deſpiſe it, to return the like, or to endeavour to live ſo as to avoid it: the firſt of theſe is uſually pretended, the laſt is almoſt impoſſible, the univerſal practice is for the ſecond.

HERODOTUS tells us, that in cold countries beaſts very ſeldom have horns, but in hot they have very large ones. This might bear a pleaſant application.

I never heard a finer piece of ſatire againſt *lawyers*, than that of *aſtrologers*, when they pretend by rules of art to tell when a ſuit will end, and whether to the advantage of the plaintiff or defendant; thus making the matter depend entirely upon the influence of the ſtars, without the leaſt regard to the merits of the cauſe.

THE

THE expreſſion in Apocrypha about Tobit and his dog following him I have often heard ridiculed, yet Homer has the ſame words of Telemachus more than once; and Virgil ſays ſomething like it of Evander. And I take the book of Tobit to be partly poetical.

I have known ſome men poſſeſſed of good qualities, which were very ſerviceable to others, but uſeleſs to themſelves; like a ſun-dial on the front of a houſe, to inform the neighbours and paſſengers, but not the owner within.

IF a man would regiſter all his opinions upon love, politics, religion, learning, &c. beginning from his youth and ſo go on to old age, what a bundle of inconſiſtencies and contradictions would appear at laſt?

WHAT they do in heaven we are ignorant of; what they do not we are told expreſsly, that they neither marry, nor are given in marriage.

WHEN a man obſerves the choice of ladies now-a-days in the diſpenſing of their favours, can he forbear paying ſome veneration to the memory of thoſe mares mentioned by Xenophon*, who, while their manes were on, that is, while they were in their beauty, would never admit the embraces of an aſs.

IT is a miſerable thing to live in ſuſpence: it is the life of a ſpider.

Vive quidem, pende tamen, improba, dixit.

Ovid Metam.

THE Stoical ſcheme of ſupplying our wants by lopping off our deſires, is like cutting off our feet when we want ſhoes.

PHYSICIANS ought not to give their judgment of religion, for the ſame reaſon that butchers are not admitted to be jurors upon life and death.

THE reaſon why ſo few marriages are happy, is becauſe young ladies ſpend their time in making nets, not in making cages.

IF a man will obſerve as he walks the ſtreets, I believe he will find the merrieſt countenances in mourning-coaches.

NOTHING more unqualifies a man to act with prudence, than a misfortune that is attended with ſhame and guilt.

THE

* De Re Equeſtri.

THE power of fortune is confeſſed only by the miſerable; for the happy impute all their ſucceſs to prudence or merit.

AMBITION often puts men upon doing the meaneſt offices; ſo climbing is performed in the ſame poſture with creeping.

ILL company is like a dog, who dirts thoſe moſt whom he loves beſt.

CENSURE is the tax a man pays to the public for being eminent.

ALTHO' men are accuſed for not knowing their own weakneſs, yet perhaps as few know their own ſtrength. It is in men as in ſoils, where ſometimes there is a vein of gold which the owner knows not of.

SATIRE is reckoned the eaſieſt of all wit; but I take it to be otherwiſe in very bad times: for it is as hard to ſatirize well a man of diſtinguiſhed vices, as to praiſe well a man of diſtinguiſhed virtues. It is eaſy enough to do either to people of moderate characters.

INVENTION is the talent of youth, and judgment of age; ſo that our judgment grows harder to pleaſe, when we have fewer things to offer it: this goes thro' the whole commerce of life. When we are old, our friends find it difficult to pleaſe us, and are leſs concerned whether we be pleaſed or no.

No wiſe man ever wiſhed to be younger.

AN idle reaſon leſſens the weight of the good ones you gave before.

THE motives of the beſt actions will not bear too ſtrict an inquiry. It is allowed, that the cauſe of moſt actions, good or bad, may be reſolved into the love of ourſelves; but the ſelf love of ſome men inclines them to pleaſe others; and the ſelf love of others is wholly employed in pleaſing themſelves. This makes the great diſtinction between virtue and vice. Religion is the beſt motive of all actions, yet religion is allowed to be the higheſt inſtance of ſelf-love.

WHEN the world has once begun to uſe us ill, it afterwards continues the ſame treatment with leſs ſcruple or ceremony, as men do to a whore.

OLD men view beſt at a diſtance with the eyes of their underſtanding as well as with thoſe of nature.

SOME people take more care to hide their wiſdom than their folly.

ARBITRARY power is the natural object of temptation to a prince, as wine or women to a young fellow, or a bribe to a judge, or avarice to old age, or vanity to a woman.

ANTHONY Henly's farmer dying of an *aſthma*, ſaid, Well, if I can get this breath once *out*, I'll take care it ſhall never get *in* again.

THE humour of exploding many things under the name of trifles, fopperies, and only imaginary goods, is a very falſe proof either of wiſdom or magnanimity, and a great check to virtuous actions. For inſtance, with regard to fame: there is in moſt people a reluctance and unwillingneſs to be forgotten. We obſerve even among the vulgar, how fond they are to have an inſcription over their grave. It requires but little philoſophy to diſcover and obſerve that there is no intrinſic value in all this; however, if it be founded in our nature, as an incitement to virtue, it ought not to be ridiculed.

COMPLAINT is the largeſt tribute heaven receives, and the ſincereſt part of our devotion.

THE common fluency of ſpeech in many men, and moſt women, is owing to a ſcarcity of matter, and a ſcarcity of words; for whoever is a maſter of language, and hath a mind full of ideas, will be apt in ſpeaking to heſitate upon the choice of both; whereas common ſpeakers have only one ſet of ideas, and one ſet of words to clothe them in; and theſe are always ready at the mouth: ſo people come faſter out of a church when it is almoſt empty, than when a croud is at the door.

FEW are qualified to *ſhine* in company; but it is in moſt mens power to be agreeable. The reaſon therefore, why converſation runs ſo low at preſent, is not the defect of underſtanding, but pride, vanity, ill-nature, affectation, ſingularity, poſitiveneſs, or ſome other vice, the effect of a wrong education.

To

To be vain is rather a mark of humility than pride. Vain men delight in telling what honours have been done them, what great company they have kept, and the like, by which they plainly confeſs that theſe honours were more than their due, and ſuch as their friends would not believe if they had not been told: whereas a man truly proud thinks the greateſt honours below his merit, and conſequently ſcorns to boaſt. I therefore deliver it as a maxim, that whoever deſires the character of a proud man ought to conceal his vanity.

Law, in a free country, is, or ought to be the determination of the majority of thoſe who have property in land.

One argument uſed to the diſadvantage of providence, I take to be a very ſtrong one in its defence. It is objected, that ſtorms and tempeſts, unfruitful ſeaſons, ſerpents, ſpiders, flies, and other noxious or troubleſome animals, with many more inſtances of the like kind, diſcover an imperfection in nature, becauſe human life would be much eaſier without them: but the deſign of providence may clearly be perceived in this proceeding. The motions of the ſun and moon, in ſhort, the whole ſyſtem of the univerſe, as far as philoſophers have been able to diſcover and obſerve, are in the utmoſt degree of regularity and perfection; but where-ever God hath left to man the power of interpoſing a remedy by thought or labour, there he hath placed things in a ſtate of imperfection, on purpoſe to ſtir up human induſtry, without which life would ſtagnate, or indeed rather could not ſubſiſt at all: *curis acuunt mortalia corda.*

Praise is the daughter of preſent power.

How inconſiſtent is man with himſelf?

I have known ſeveral perſons of great fame for wiſdom in public affairs and councils, governed by fooliſh ſervants.

I have known great miniſters diſtinguiſhed for wit and learning, who preferred none but dunces.

I have known men of great valour cowards to their wives.

I have known men of the greateſt cunning perpetually cheated.

I knew three great miniſters, who could exactly compute and ſettle the accounts of a kingdom, but were wholly ignorant of their own œconomy.

THE preaching of divines helps to preſerve well inclined men in the courſe of virtue, but ſeldom or never reclaims the vicious.

PRINCES uſually make wiſer choices than the ſervants whom they truſt for the diſpoſal of places: I have known a prince, more than once, chuſe an able miniſter: but I never obſerved that miniſter to uſe his credit in the diſpoſal of an employment to a perſon whom he thought the fitteſt for it. One of the greateſt in this age owned and excuſed the matter from the violence of parties, and the unreaſonableneſs of friends.

SMALL cauſes are ſufficient to make a man uneaſy, when great ones are not in the way: for want of a *block* he will ſtumble at a *ſtraw*.

DIGNITY, high ſtation, or great riches, are in ſome ſort neceſſary to old men, in order to keep the younger at a diſtance, who are otherwiſe too apt to inſult them upon the ſcore of their age.

EVERY man deſires to live long; but no man would be old. Love of flattery in moſt men proceeds from the mean opinion they have of themſelves; in women from the contrary.

IF books and laws continue to increaſe as they have done for fifty years paſt, I am in ſome concern for future ages, how any man will be learned, or any man a lawyer.

KINGS are commonly ſaid to have *long hands*; I wiſh they had as *long ears*.

PRINCES in their infancy, childhood, and youth, are ſaid to diſcover prodigious parts and wit, to ſpeak things that ſurprize and aſtoniſh: ſtrange, ſo many hopeful princes, and ſo many ſhameful kings! if they happen to die young, they would have been prodigies of wiſdom and virtue: if they live, they are often prodigies indeed, but of another ſort.

POLITICS, as the word is commonly underſtood, are nothing but corruptions, and conſequently of no uſe to a good king, or a good miniſtry; for which reaſon courts are ſo over-run with politics.

SILENUS.

SILENUS, the foſter-father of Bacchus, is always carried by an *aſs*, and has horns on his head. The moral is, that drunkards are led by fools, and have a great chance to be cuckolds.

VENUS, a beautiful good-natured Lady, was the goddeſs of love; Juno, a terrible ſhrew, the goddeſs of marriage: and they were always mortal enemies.

THOSE who are againſt religion, muſt needs be fools, and therefore we read that, of all animals, God refuſed the *firſt-born* of an aſs.

A very little wit is valued in a woman, as we are pleaſed with a few words ſpoken plain by a parrot.

A nice man is a man of naſty ideas.

APOLLO was held the god of phyſic, and fender of diſeaſes. Both were originally the ſame trade, and ſtill continue.

OLD men and comets have been reverenced for the ſame reaſon; their long beards, and pretences to foretel events.

A perſon was aſked at court, what he thought of an ambaſſador, and his train, who were all embroidery and lace, full of bows, cringes, and geſtures; he ſaid, it was Solomon's importation, *gold and apes*.

THERE is a ſtory in Pauſanias of a plot for betraying of a city diſcovered by the braying of an *aſs*: the cackling of *geeſe* ſaved the *capitol*, and Catiline's conſpiracy was diſcovered by a *whore*. Theſe are the only three animals, as far as I remember, famous in hiſtory as *evidences* and *informers*.

MOST ſorts of diverſion in men, children, and other animals, are an imitation of fighting.

AUGUSTUS meeting an *aſs* with a *lucky name*, foretold himſelf good fortune. I meet many aſſes, but none of them have lucky names.

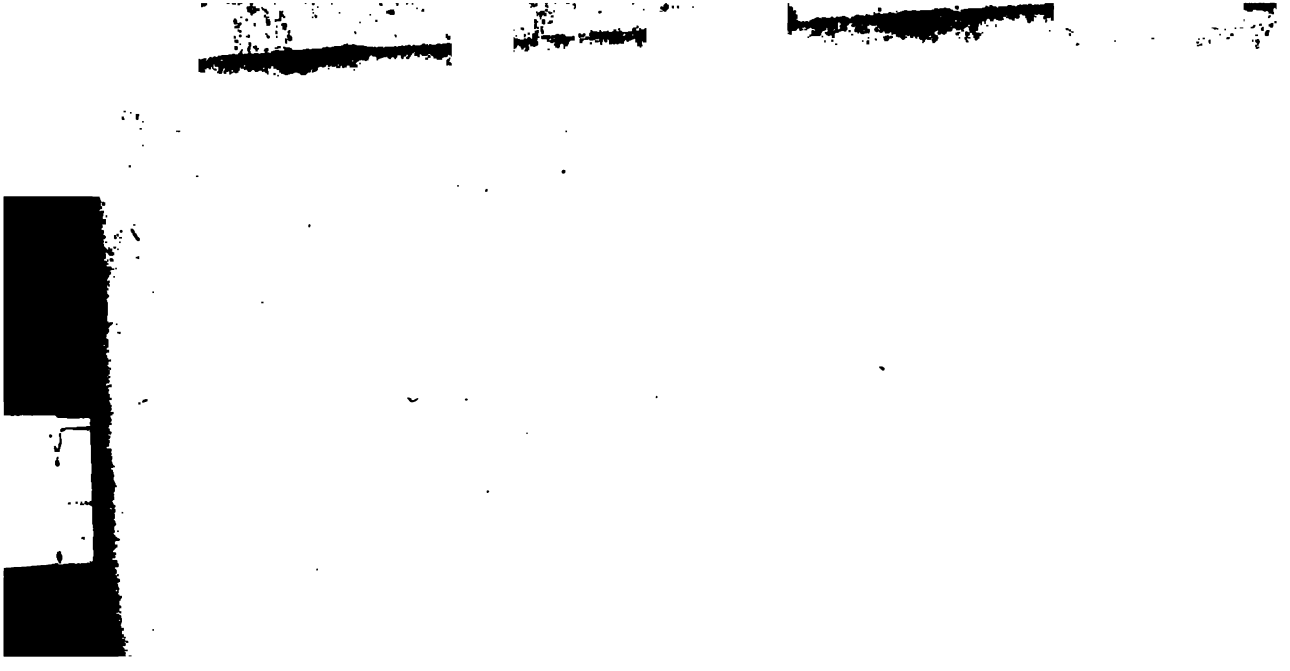
IF a man makes me keep my diſtance, the comfort is, he keeps his at the ſame time.

WHO can deny that all men are violent lovers of truth, when we ſee them ſo poſitive in their errors, which they will maintain out of their zeal to truth, altho' they contradict themſelves every day of their lives?

That

That was excellently observed, ſay I, when I rea paſſage in an author, where his opinion agrees with m When we differ, there I pronounce him to be *miſta*

VERY few men, properly ſpeaking, live at preſ but are providing to live another time.

As univerſal a practice as lying is, and as eaſy a on it ſeems, I do not remember to have heard three g lies in all my converſation, even from thoſe who w moſt celebrated in that faculty.

The End of the SECOND VOLUME.